# PICTORIAL HISTORY OF THE WORLD WAR

S. J. DUNCAN-CLARK

STORY OF AMERICA'S ACHIEVEMENTS

GENERAL JOHN J. PERSHING

Geneva, the Seat of the League of Nations. The illustration Shows the Power Stations on the River Rhone.. This is One of Switzerland's Most Beautiful Cities.

GENERAL JOHN J. PERSHING, COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE UNITED STATES FORCES ABROAD.

PEACE EDITION

# PICTORIAL HISTORY

OF THE

# WORLD WAR

*BY*

S. J. DUNCAN-CLARK
War Analyst and Special Correspondent

*ALSO*

## America's Great Feat of Arms

(The Story of the United States in the War,
Including the Official Summary of the Treaty of Peace,
With the Covenant of the League of Nations)

Official Report of the Chief of Staff and
Chronology of American Operations in France

*BY*

GENERAL PEYTON C. MARCH, U. S. A.

HON. JOSEPHUS DANIELS
Secretary of the Navy, in a Special Article on "The Marines."

*AND*

GENERAL JOHN J. PERSHING
on "The American Expeditionary Forces."

Illustrated with Colorgravures
American, British, Canadian and French Official Photographs and Maps.

Copyright, 1919,
By
WM. M. CLARK

Copyright, 1919,
By
L. W. WALTER

All Photographs Copyrighted by
Underwood & Underwood
and others.

# DEDICATION

To Righteousness,
The Foundation of Peace;
To Freedom,
The Spirit of Peace;
To Democracy,
The Dwelling of Peace;
and to all Brave Men of whatever Clime or Creed,
Who for these things fought and suffered even unto death.

Panorama of Paris.

# FOREWORD

This volume attempts to encompass the causes of the great conflict, the chief happenings of military and political importance during the bloodiest four years of the world history, and their results and their effects upon the nations involved. An earnest endeavor has been made to take the reader through the most important phases. The limitation of this work to one volume makes the giving of exhaustive details of every incident, every battle, every siege, every advance or retreat, an impossibility. But in this very limitation lies the book's greatest value.

To please a tactician, chapters might be devoted to the battles along the Marne, the Somme, the Yser, or to the struggle before Verdun or to the Russian campaigns. But for the reader who seeks a straightforward, circumstantial narrative of the great war, without its chief events being clouded and obscured by a multiplicity of subsidiary details, this book has been written.

Devotion of time to research has been given that its facts may be accurate. It contains no statements based on rumors, no accounts taken from unauthoritative sources.

The United States undoubtedly was the great determining factor in the overthrow and crushing of junkerism, and for that reason this volume should be of the greatest interest to Americans. Two million sons of America were in France. Their concentration and transportation was the greatest military feat in history. America's active share in the war, though it covered only a little over a year and a half, is the nation's most glorious achievement. With this in mind, painstaking effort has been made to do the fullest justice to recounting the events of the last eighteen months of the crusade to crush autocracy and militarism.

Entertaining visualization of the war is best attained through photographs. For this reason this book has been profusely illustrated and the hundreds of scenes photographed during the four years of campaigning on all the great fronts, in themselves tell the narrative in a convincing manner. These pictures were taken by the most skilled men attached to the fighting forces. Many of them are the official output of the bureau of public information in Washington. Others were taken by men who risked death for a "close-up."

The events of the war have been brought down to the present day. No vital episode of the struggle has been overlooked. The narrative is complete from the demolition of Liege to the signing of the terms of the armistice and the Peace Conference at Versailles. It is hoped that it will do full justice to the sacrifice, courage, steadfastness in the face of apparent defeat, of the tireless fighting men of Great Britain, France, Italy, Belgium, Serbia and the United States.

D-C.

Victorious Allied Troops Crossing the Rhine at Bonn to Take Possession of One of the Four Important Bridgeheads Held Under the Terms of the Armistice. The Bridgehead at Coblenz Was Held by the American Army of Occupation

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

## Pictorial History
of
# The Great War


PAGE

CHAPTER I.—THE RED TRAIL OF PRUSSIA ..... 11

CHAPTER II.—THE SPARK IN EUROPE'S POWDER MAGAZINE ..... 25

CHAPTER III.—THE ARMIES ARE UNLEASHED ..... 53

CHAPTER IV.—PRUSSIAN PLANS GO ASTRAY ..... 63

CHAPTER V.—THE ERA OF GIGANTIC BATTLES ..... 75

CHAPTER VI.—HINDENBURG RETREATS ..... 85

CHAPTER VII.—RUSSIA'S TRAGIC STORY ..... 107

CHAPTER VIII.—ITALY AND THE LITTLE NATIONS ..... 119

CHAPTER IX.—THE WAR ON THE SEA ..... 145

CHAPTER X.—AMERICA'S LONG PATIENCE ..... 159

CHAPTER XI.—THE UNITED STATES DRAWS THE SWORD ..... 175

CHAPTER XII.—THE DECISIVE CAMPAIGN IN THE YEAR 1918 ..... 183

CHAPTER XIII.—THE AFTERMATH OF THE ARMISTICE ..... 235

CHAPTER XIV.—THE PRICE OF VICTORY ..... 255

CHAPTER XV.—HOW THE CENTRAL POWERS FELL ..... 261

CHAPTER XVI.—MARVELS OF THE WAR ON LAND, SEA AND AIR ..... 289

PAGE

CHAPTER XVII.—THE DEBATE ON PEACE TERMS ..... 293

CHAPTER XVIII.—GERMANY HEARS THE TERMS ..... 301

"AMERICAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCES," BY GENERAL JOHN J. PERSHING..... 307

"NAVAL BATTLES OF THE WAR," BY ADMIRAL WM. S. SIMS..... 314

---

## BOOK II.

## AMERICA'S GREAT FEAT OF ARMS.

CHAPTER I.—THE NEW UNITED STATES ARMY ..... 323

CHAPTER II.—EARLY OPERATIONS IN FRANCE..... 331

CHAPTER III.—FROM CANTIGNY TO SEDAN ..... 337

CHAPTER IV.—CHATEAU THIERRY AND BELLEAU WOOD..... 341

CHAPTER V.—SMASHING THE HINDENBURG LINE ..... 347

CHAPTER VI.—IN THE ARGONNE—THE LOST BATTALION ..... 353

CHAPTER VII.—WHEN THE ARMISTICE CAME ..... 359

CHAPTER VIII.—OFFICIAL REPORT OF THE CHIEF OF STAFF..... 365

CHAPTER IX.—CHRONOLOGY OF AMERICAN OPERATIONS ..... 381

CHAPTER X.—GETTING THE ARMY OVERSEAS ..... 385

CHAPTER XI.—"THE MARINES," BY SECRETARY JOSEPHUS DANIELS.... 389

CHAPTER XII.—THE TREATY OF PEACE, WITH LEAGUE OF NATIONS COVENANT..... 403-416

# Pictorial History of The Great War

## The Red Trail of Prussia

### CHAPTER I

PRUSSIA UNSCRUPULOUS IN EARLY HISTORY—BISMARCK THE EMPIRE BUILDER—GERMANY VICTORIOUS OVER FRANCE IN 1870—HARSHEST TERMS IN HISTORY—PRUSSIA PREPARED CAREFULLY FOR ALL WARS—MIDDLE EUROPE EMPIRE PRUSSIAN AMBITION

About two centuries and a half ago the Mark of Brandenburg, formerly known as the Nordmark, came under the sway of Frederick William the Great Elector.

That was the beginning of Prussia as an ambitious, aggressive and unscrupulous state.

The first act of Frederick William was the abolition of the constitution. He made himself absolute monarch. His second act was to create a professional army to sustain him in absolutism.

He trained his army, disciplined it rigorously and equipped it as well as was possible in those seventeenth century days. Then he set forth to conquer his neighbors.

In this he was measurably successful. Other little marks and duchies were added to the territory of Brandenburg, and Berlin became the center of a considerable domain.

So Frederick William the Great Elector set the style for all Prussian rulers who should come after him.

The three fundamental principles of Prussianism were absolutism, military power and conquest. They remained the fundamental principles of Prussianism thru two centuries and a half, and until the allied democracies of the world undertook to destroy them in the World War.

The domain of the Great Elector was joined with East Prussia by his successor, and in 1701 Frederick III assumed the title of King of Prussia, placing the crown on his own head with his own hands—that being the nearest approach to actual coronation by the Almighty that he could devise.

Meantime the sway of the Prussian dynasty extended in all directions. Swedish Pomerania, Silesia and the Posen and West Prussian provinces of Poland were added in the period from 1720 to 1795. The fortunes of war fluctuated, it is true; Prussian arms were not always successful. Napoleon played havoc with Prussian dominions for a time, and the Hohenzollerns were stripped of territories and power; but the Napoleonic success was meteoric. At the Congress of Vienna, in 1814, Prussia recovered practically all that she had lost, and came into possession of several additional states that had hitherto escaped her rapacity.

However, before the yoke of autocracy was finally fastened upon the necks of the subject peoples of Prussia; before they were made the helpless and unthinking tools of a madly ambitious imperialism, there was a revolt against absolutism. The fires of democracy that had swept thru the American colonies, France and England in the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries were slow in kindling their torches in central Europe. But in 1848 and '49 Prussia heard the cry of popular defiance in the streets of Berlin, and saw the flag of insurrection raised in Baden and Saxony.

With brutal power she crushed the revolutionaries of her own domain. Those of Baden and Saxony might have fared better—the king of Saxony, indeed, was forced to hide himself—but Prussia sent her armies into her neighbor states and trampled ruthlessly under foot the brave men who sought to win freedom.

That is typical of Prussia. Always and everywhere she has been the enemy of

Archduke Franz Ferdinand, his wife and children. The Archduke and wife were assassinated

freedom, the implacable foe of democracy. She has denied it to all people who came under her sway, and she has done her best to destroy it in the lands that she could not, or did not choose, to conquer.

The yoke securely fastened upon the necks of the people within her own realm and those of her neighbors; the revolutionary leaders exiled, imprisoned or slain, Prussia turned her thought and energy again toward the plans of aggression that were the chief concern of her rulers and statesmen.

Bismarck had come upon the scene—Bismarck the empire builder. His vision of Prussia dominant was challenged by the presence of a powerful rival in central Europe. The House of Hapsburg, rul-

Serbian civilians hung by Austrians along the roadways.

ing Austria, had been often the ally of the House of Hohenzollern in expeditions of conquest and plunder. But Bismarck wanted no ally of co-equal strength, no possible competitor in imperialism. The Prussian conception of an ally is a vassal, compelled to play the game as Prussia pleases.

Hence it was necessary to eliminate Austria as a potential rival in order to assure for Prussia the place she desired.

Bismarck had no difficulty in finding a cause for friction. There was a dispute over Schleswig-Holstein that he carefully fostered. He encouraged the belief that all difficulties could be settled amicably and, in the meantime, made every necessary preparation for war. When things were in readiness to strike a sharp, hard blow, he aggravated the dispute to the point of ruptured relations. The war he wanted followed. Prussia's armies, ready for action, were hurled into Bavaria and Austria, the former state having elected to take Austria's side in the quarrel.

The struggle was of short duration. In seven weeks Austria capitulated at the battle of Konnigsgratz, or Sadowa. From that day Hapsburg never ventured to challenge Hohenzollern, or in any way to interfere with Prussian plans.

Bismarck, having cleared the field, went on with his work of building an empire. He welded the German states into a confederation under a constitution that was designed to fasten the Hohenzollern dynasty upon it forever, and to give to its successive monarchs autocratic control, supported by military power. It was provided in the constitution that it might not be amended without the consent of Prussia. This was the ultimate and absolute safeguard. Only Prussia could undo Prussia; only Hohenzollern could relax the grip of Hohenzollern upon the lives of the German people.

Bavaria, having suffered defeat with Austria in the Seven Weeks' war, came reluctantly into the confederation. She did not love Prussia and the Hohenzollerns. For years it was against the law to display the German flag in Bavaria.

Funeral of Archduke Franz Ferdinand and his wife.

She never became fully reconciled to her new status as the subordinate of Prussia in the family of Teutonic tribes.

Hohenzollern ambitions were not satisfied to rest with the consolidation of territory under the German empire. The King of Prussia had become German Emperor, and the new title merely quickened the inherent appetite for further conquest. Envious eyes turned toward France. The rich provinces of Alsace-Lorraine invited plunder and acquisition.

A comparatively short struggle resulted in a complete victory for Germany. It was another instance where preparedness prevailed over courage and devotion. Alsace-Lorraine was added to the German empire, and France was compelled to pay an indemnity of five billion francs in order to get the German army out of her territory.

This sketch of Prussian history is necessary in order that we may understand how wholly in keeping with the character

Serbian officers watching experiments with liquid fire.

Moreover France was a possible rival whose humbling was advisable in order to assure the dominant position of Europe.

Bismarck deliberately laid the foundation for war with France by provoking a quarrel thru the publication of a garbled telegram from the King of Prussia to the King of France. The wording of the telegram was made to carry an insult to the French monarch—and in those days there was only one way of dealing with insults.

and aspirations of the rulers and people of Prussia was the world war in which their ambitions culminated.

Prussia never blundered into wars unwittingly. She made them with deliberate purpose; prepared for them long in advance, and carried them thru to victory with only one intent—to increase her own power and territorial sovereignty.

The forty odd years of peace that followed gave the world time to forget Prussia's history. Moreover, Prussia, herself,

The ex-Kaiser, Crown Prince, Eitel Frederick, Prince Adelburt, Prince Oscar, Prince Augustus and Prince Joachim perfectly comfortable behind the line reveling in debauchery and having others do their bidding.

was camouflaged in the German empire, and people who had known the German tribes before they became subject to Prussian rule and guidance found it difficult to believe that the industrious, home-loving folk of Germany could have in their hearts ambitions that menaced the peace and happiness of neighbor nations. It is probable, indeed, that such ambitions were foreign to these tribes or states in their earlier history as a confederation, but they were never absent from the minds of their Prussian over-lords.

During those forty years Prussia did two things—she Prussianized the rest of the German people, and she built up a great army and a great navy for enterprises of conquest conceived on a vaster scale than ever before.

The story of these four decades of miseducation for the German people is one that merits a volume to itself. The secular and religious instruction given the youth of the land was definitely directed toward inculcating a vaunting pride of race and nation and a contempt for all other peoples. They were taught to believe that the Germans were the chosen of God, with a destiny to subdue the world to their own peculiar "kultur." The state, embodied in the kaiser and the general staff of the German army, became for them the voice of God. What the state decreed was right, no matter how it might violate individual conceptions of ethics. To live and die for the state, unquestioningly obedient to its commands—this was the supreme morality.

This education was part of the process by which the German people were made the docile tools of the Prussian dynasty, serviceable for the later execution of its maturing plans.

Such is the general background of the World War.

As we draw nearer the fateful year in which Germany launched her long preparing thunderbolts against the world, one incident after another shows that the hour of action was no chance hour.

Wilhelm II dreamed thru the earlier years of his reign of the day when the resting German sword would be again unsheathed to continue the traditions of his dynasty and to carve from Europe and the continents beyond a domain greater in extent and incomparably richer in resources than any autocrat of history had ever ruled.

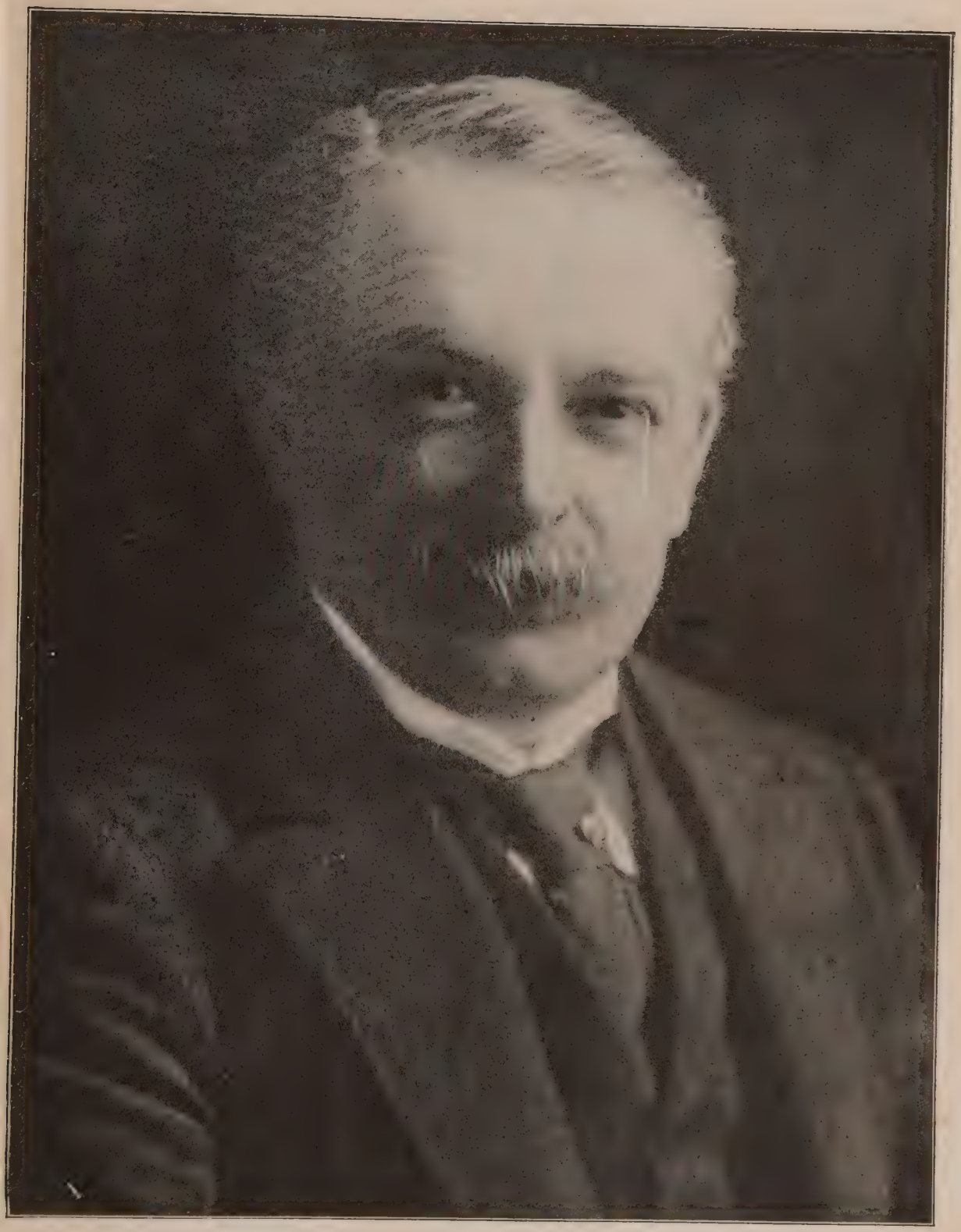
In accordance with his ambitions there developed in Germany an organization devoted to the creation of a great middle Europe state, including Austria-Hungary in its scope, and extending its frontiers thru the Balkans to Asia Minor and Mesopotamia. Maps that were printed and distributed in Germany twenty years before the World War began showed the greater empire, and swept within its boundaries Belgium and Holland on the west, and the Baltic States of Russia, Poland, and the Balkan countries on the east and southeast, as well as the dual monarchy. Leaders in this movement spoke of acquiring territory in South America, notably in the southern Argentine. It was boldly predicted that the whole civilized world would become either part of the empire, or subject to it in the relation of vassal to master.

In order to promote the project for a middle-Europe empire with an Asiatic annex, the Kaiser visited Constantinople, Damascus and Jerusalem. He addressed

Wm. Hohenzollern, ex-Kaiser of Germany, in the uniform of a Turkish officer. The shriveled left arm is most noticeable.

WOODROW WILSON, PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES.

These Huns were photographed using their flame projector in a trench, and while advancing over "No Man's Land."



David Lloyd George, Great Britain's foremost Statesman and War Premier

SIR DOUGLAS HAIG, COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE BRITISH FORCES IN FRANCE AND BELGIUM.

a great audience of Turks in Damascus, and declared himself the friend of the Ottoman empire and the Mohammedhan faith. His immediate reward was a concession from Turkey allowing Germany to construct the Bagdad railroad, and giving it a right of way in European Turkey, thru what was known as the Sanjat of Novibazar, thus creating the link thru the Balkans that has been often referred to as the Bagdad corridor.

Austria-Hungary played her part in these plans, doubtless with the knowledge and approval of Germany. She seized Bosnia and Herzegovina, border Balkan states. When her act aroused the anger of Europe, the Kaiser appeared as her champion, and declared that he supported the policy of his Austrian ally.

The Prussian plans were moving smoothly and swiftly toward the achievement of Prussian ambitions, when the Balkan war broke out. The utter defeat of Turkey deprived Germany of her right of way thru the Sanjat of Novibazar, which became Serbian territory, and closed the Bagdad corridor.

Bulgaria was prompted to renew the struggle in a second war by the intrigues of the central empires. They hoped by this means to recover the advantage they had lost in the Balkans—the necessary link of empire by which Hamburg would be joined to Bagdad. The plan failed. Bulgaria was defeated by her erstwhile allies.

And thus it was that in 1913 Germany found her ambitions checked. Serbia, enlarged in territory, lay squarely across her path to the east. Serbia was antagonistic to Vienna and Berlin. She looked to Petrograd—then St. Petersburg—for friendship and support. Germany realized that diplomatic efforts to open a way thru the Balkans could not succeed.

The Ex-Crown Prince of Germany whose flight showed his weak character.

She knew only one way in which to realize her ambitions—and that was force. Force, for Prussia, was the normal and most desirable method of obtaining anything she desired.

Such is the trail of intrigue and bloodshed that leads up to the critical day in June 1914, when a deed of assassination furnished the pretext that Prussia needed for the execution of her designs.

The German Ex-Emperor's Palace in Berlin.

# The Spark in Europe's Powder Magazine

## CHAPTER II

ASSASSINATION OF AUSTRIAN ARCHDUKE—AUSTRIA CHARGED ANTI-DYNASTIC PLOTS—ASSASSINATION IN FACT PLOTTED BY GERMANY—ULTIMATUM TO SERBIA—SERBIA MAKES CONCESSIONS TO KEEP PEACE—GERMANY AND AUSTRIA REFUSE TERMS—AUSTRIA DECLARES WAR ON SERBIA, GERMANY DECLARES WAR ON RUSSIA, BELGIUM AND FRANCE—AUSTRIA DRIVES ON SERBIA AND GERMANY INVADES BELGIUM—GREAT BRITAIN SENDS ULTIMATUM TO GERMANY—STATE OF WAR DECLARED BETWEEN GREAT BRITAIN AND GERMANY.

The Balkan wars were over, and with their settlement Europe heaved a sigh of relief. For a time a general conflagration had threatened the nations of the old world. The European war cloud, familiar in the headlines of the newspapers, had hung upon the horizon with low mutterings of thunder. But the crisis was passed safely, and men again began to talk as tho a great war were a thing impossible.

They pointed to the growing intercourse among nations; the spread of democratic institutions; the rising intelligence of the masses of the people; the multiplying of international peace treaties and agreements for arbitration. Had not the Hague peace tribunal been established, and were not many of the great powers of the world signatory to its conventions, in which they pledged themselves to regard international law, and to live with one another on a basis of reasonableness and humanity?

These things were all true.

And yet from all of these things men derived a false sense of security.

Nations ruled by responsible governments, controlled by the enlightened sentiment of their peoples, could not understand the peril that remained latent in the world's autocracies.

Prussia was rapidly completing her plans. We have learned from the disclosures made by Dr. Muehlon, a former Krupp director, and others who were in a position to know what was transpiring within the councils of the empire, that conspiracy against the world's peace was on foot in Germany. There were conferences of the business men and the imperial chancellor, and the men of finance and industry were warned to set their affairs in order and to prepare for a great war.

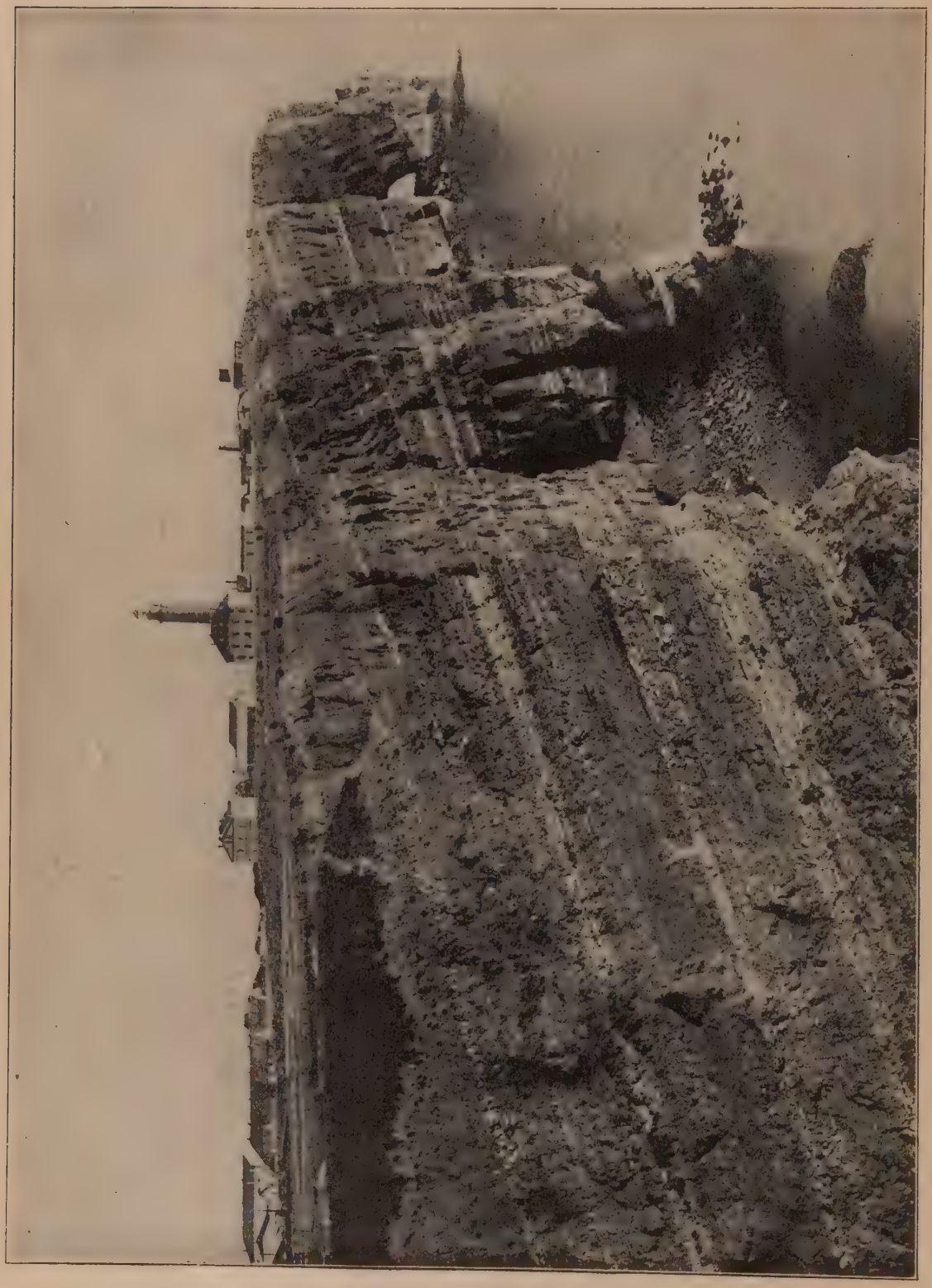
Then came the spark that exploded the powder magazine of Europe.

The Archduke Francis Ferdinand, heir to the throne of Austria-Hungary, went with his wife, the Duchess of Hohenberg, on a visit of state to Serajevo, the capital of Bosnia.

Bosnia had been annexed by Austria-Hungary in 1908. There were many Bosnians who bitterly resented the Hapsburg interference with their national life. The state had its secret political organizations, its intrigues and plots, all concerned with frustrating Austrian rule and promoting Slav interests.

Serajevo was not a safe city for the heir to the Austrian throne to visit, and this fact must have been well known to the authorities. Yet, in spite of the perils that always beset royalty in Europe, and that were peculiarly acute in southeastern Europe; in spite of the known existence of enmities and conspiracies in Bosnia, practically no precautions were taken by the municipal officials of Serajevo to protect the lives of the imperial heir and his wife.

It was on Sunday, June 28, 1914, that the Archduke arrived at the Bosnian capital. He and his wife at once got into an automobile and were driven toward the town hall, where they were to be welcomed officially. The crowd that watched them pass thru the city streets showed little enthusiasm. Their automobile had not gone far before a man dashed from the throng on the pavement, and hurled a



Helgoland, the German Naval Stronghold.

bomb at the car. He missed the archduke. The bomb fell on the road, and exploded just as a second car passed over it, containing members of the archduke's staff.

The would-be assassin attempted to escape in the crowd, but was caught and put under arrest. He was a youth—21 years of age—named Gabrinovics.

Archduke Ferdinand was livid with fear and indignation when he reached the town hall, and, when the burgomaster tried to read to him an address of welcome he interrupted with the angry exclamation:

"Herr Burgomaster, it is perfectly scandalous. We have come to Serajevo, and a bomb is thrown at us."

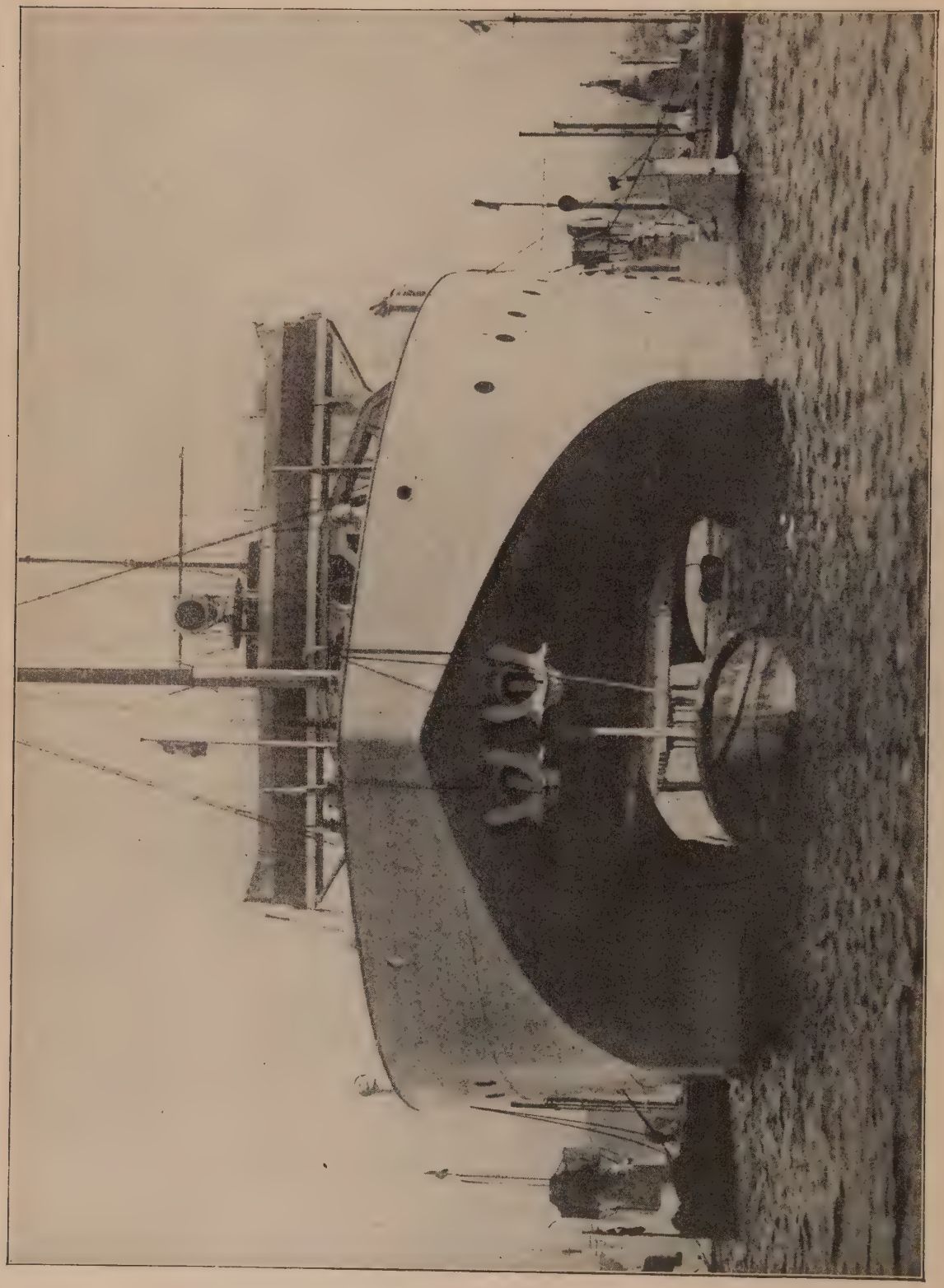
The burgomaster stammered an incoherent apology and went on with his address. But the archduke's sharp rebuke had no practical effect. Nothing was done to remedy the neglect that had exposed the royal visitor to attack. On the way back from the town hall the imperial car passed a youth named Gavrilo Prinzip, standing on the curb, who calmly drew a revolver and fired twice. The first shot fatally wounded the duchess, the second pierced the neck of the archduke, severing the jugular vein. Both died without uttering a word.

Prinzip was arrested. He denied any knowledge of Gabrinovics, and declared that the first attempt at assassination was a surprise to him. He said he was a Serbian student, and had for long entertained the idea of killing some eminent person.

The Austrian authorities immediately promulgated the story that they had discovered an anti-dynastic plot, the source of which was in Serbia.

The circumstances of the assassination have led many people to believe that it was deliberately planned, not by Bosnians or Serbians, but by Austrians and

German soldiers decorated for exceptional bravery during the Battle of Verdun. These soldiers are being rewarded for making one of the many furious attacks on the Verdun front.



Picture of the German submarine mothership, Vulcan, taken in the Kiel Canal. On either side are seven German submarines and in front is a craft entering the "dock" ship.

Germans who desired a pretext for attacking Serbia as the initial step toward recovering the Bagdad corridor and opening the road to world conquest. It is assuredly true that the taking off of the archduke coincided exactly with the culmination of Prussia's preparations for war. It is, too, rather extraordinary that Prinzip, the youth who killed him, was sentenced to twenty years imprisonment instead of to death. In a country where the death penalty was common, twenty years imprisonment for the murderer of the heir to the throne seems strangely lenient.

The world was slow to realize the significance of the Serajevo tragedy. People were horrified at the deed, and editorials were written denouncing anarchy; but no one seemed to see—at first—the figures of war and famine and pestilence walking in the funeral procession of the dead archduke.

In the chancelleries of Europe, however, there was much anxiety. In London, Paris, Rome and Petrograd men conversant with European affairs realized that a serious situation had developed involving grave possibilities.

Early in July it was rumored in diplomatic circles that Austria-Hungary was planning drastic reprisals for what she alleged was a Serbian crime, committed, if not with the authority, at least with the sympathy of the Serbian government.

Then Count Tisza, at that time premier of Austria, reassured the capitals of Europe by a speech in the Austrian parliament in which he held out strong hope that there would be an amicable settlement of the whole matter. Apprehensions were allayed, and the world thought it saw the war cloud passing.

The Arch Conspirators—The Ex-Kaiser, Ferdinand of Bulgaria, the Ex-Sultan of Turkey, and the late Franz Josef of Austria.

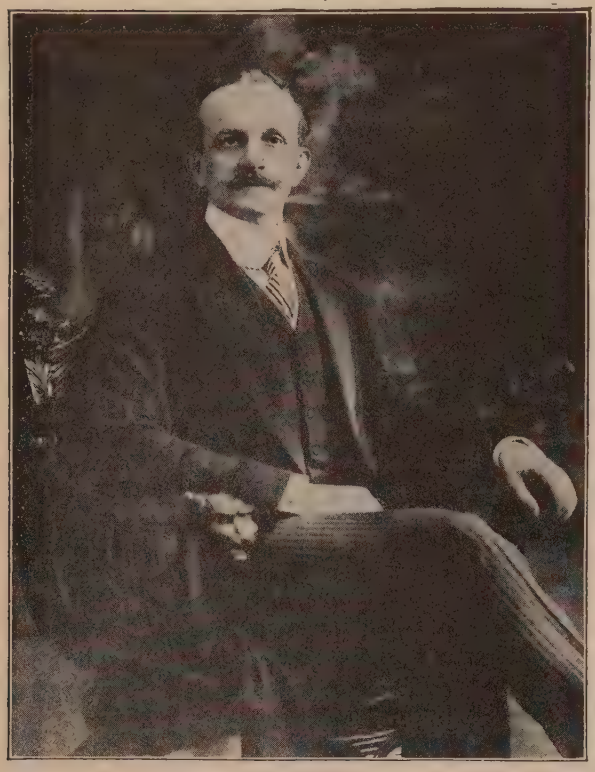
One week later Austria sent an ultimatum to Serbia, demanding a reply in 48 hours.

The ultimatum recited the facts of the assassination and alleged that the crime was due to Serbia's tolerance of propaganda and intrigue against the peace and territory of the dual monarchy. It demanded that the Serbian government should condemn this propaganda and utterly suppress it.

The German Offensive: The New Methods by Which It Was Pursued and How It Was Countered. The G
Germany made her advances on the Western Front. The new method was devised by the famous v

trong position
reventing ENEMY
aking large TOWN
LINE of GENERAL ATTACK & BOMBARDMENT
ENEMY REINFORCEMENTS CONVERGING UPON THE POINT OF CONCENTRATED ATTACK
ENTRATED ATTACK
MASSED GERMAN TROOPS poured in continuously to the ATTACK
HIGH GROUND SCREENING the MASSING OF ENEMY
LINE of GENERAL & ACTIVITY BOMBARDMENT

dea—This diagram does not represent any particular battle or area, but illustrates the principles by which hardi, who was pooh-poohed for his ideas by the German General Staff at the outbreak of the war.



Count Von Bernstorff
The German arch conspirator and ex-ambassador.

The ultimatum then continued:

In order to give a formal character to this undertaking the royal Servian government shall publish on the front page of its official journal of the 26th June (13th July) the following declaration:

"The royal government of Servia condemns the propaganda directed against Austria-Hungary—i. e., the general tendency of which the final aim is to detach from the Austro-Hungarian monarchy territories belonging to it, and it sincerely deplores the fatal consequences of these criminal proceedings.

"The royal government regrets that Servian officers and functionaries participated in the above mentioned propaganda and thus compromised the good neighborly relations to which the royal government was solemnly pledged by its declaration of the 31st March, 1909.

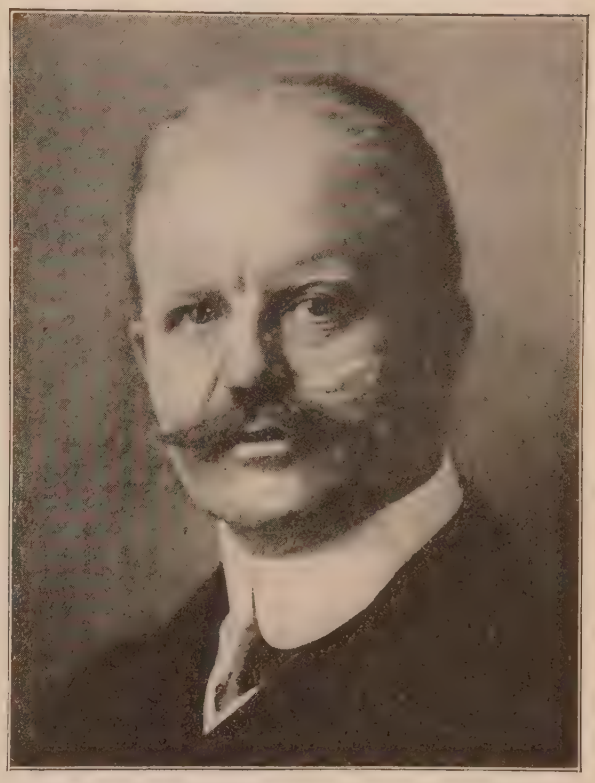
Supersubmarine Deutschland which arrived at Baltimore after a trip across the Atlantic.

"The royal government, which disapproves and repudiates all idea of interfering or attempting to interfere with the destinies of the inhabitants of any part whatsoever of Austria-Hungary, considers it its duty formally to warn officers and functionaries, and the whole population of the kingdom, that henceforward it will proceed with the utmost rigor against persons who may be guilty of such machinations, which it will use all its efforts to anticipate and suppress."

This declaration shall simultaneously be communicated to the royal army as an order of the day by his majesty the king and shall be published in the official bulletin of the army.

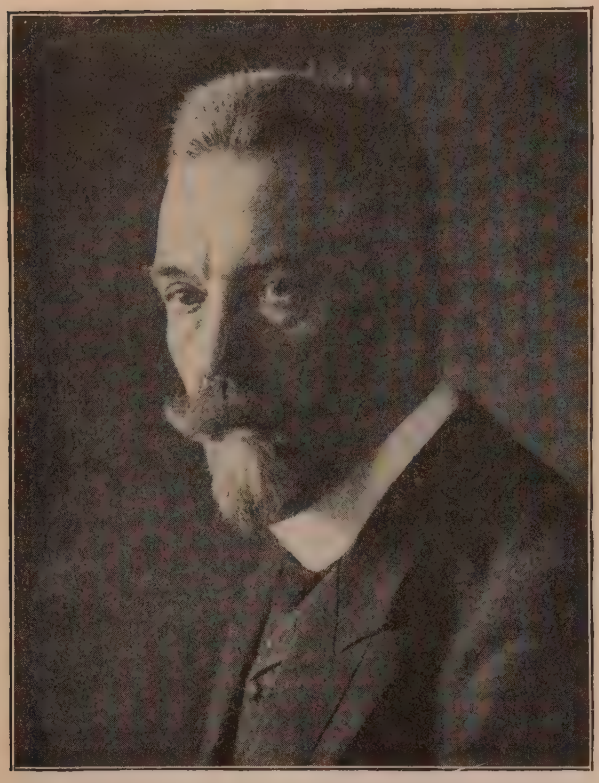
The royal Servian government further undertakes:

1. To suppress any publication which incites to hatred and contempt of the Austro-Hungarian monarchy and the



Alfred Zimmerman, Germany's ex-foreign minister.

One of the German Sanitary Posts before Laon.



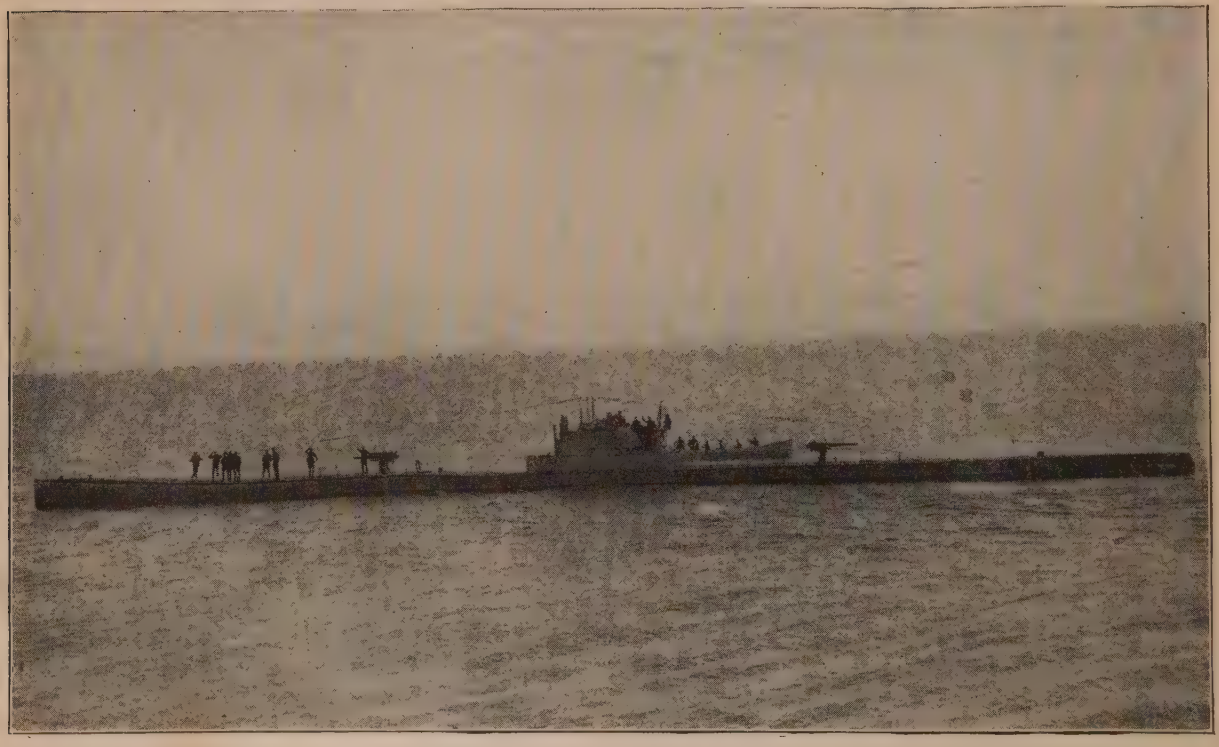
Bethman Hollweg, the weak-minded member of the Ex-kaiser's War Board.

general tendency of which is directed against its territorial integrity;

2. To dissolve immediately the society styled Narodna Odbrana, to confiscate all its means of propaganda, and to proceed in the same manner against other societies and their branches in Servia which engage in propaganda against the Austro-Hungarian monarchy. The royal government shall take the necessary measures to prevent the societies dissolved from continuing their activity under another name and form;

3. To eliminate without delay from public instruction in Servia, both as regards the teaching body and also as regards the methods of instruction, everything that serves, or might serve, to foment the propaganda against Austria-Hungary;

4. To remove from the military service, and from the administration in gen-



Remarkable Photograph of German Submarine U 65, Terror of the Sea, in Act of Holding up Liner. This is probably the only photograph showing a German U-boat actually holding up a liner at sea to arrive in America.

eral, all officers and functionaries guilty of propaganda against the Austro-Hungarian monarchy whose names and deeds the Austro-Hungarian government reserves to itself the right of communicating to the royal government;

5. To accept the collaboration in Serbia of representatives of the Austro-Hungarian government in the suppression of the subversive movement directed against the territorial integrity of the monarchy;

6. To take judicial proceedings against accessories to the plot of the 28th June who are on Servian territory. Delegates of the Austro-Hungarian government will take part in the investigation relating thereto;

7. To proceed without delay to the arrest of Major Voija Tankositch and of the individual named Milan Ciganovitch, a Servian state employe, who have been compromised by the results of the magisterial inquiry at Serajevo;

8. To prevent by effective measures the co-operation of the Servian authorities

General Von Hindenburg, commander-in-chief, and his chief of staff.

This Photo was taken in 1914. The Crowds were Optimistic.

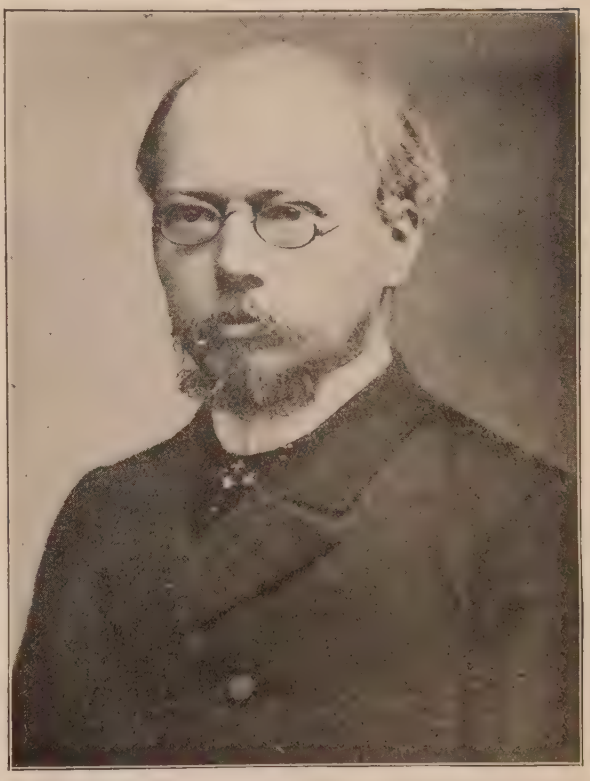
Type of Germany's Long-Distance Bombing Machines.

in the illicit traffic of arms and explosives across the frontier, to dismiss and punish severely the officials of the frontier service at Schabatz and Loznica guilty of having assisted the perpetrators of the Serajevo crime by facilitating their passage across the frontier;

9. To furnish the imperial and royal government with explanations regarding the unjustifiable utterances of high Serbian officials, both in Servia and abroad, who, notwithstanding their official position, did not hesitate after the crime of the 28th June to express themselves in interviews in terms of hostility to the Austro-Hungarian government; and, finally.

10. To notify the imperial and royal government without delay of the execution of the measures comprised under the preceding heads.

Immediately the terms of the Austrian ultimatum became known in diplomatic



The Late Count George von Hertling, the Ex-Bavarian Prime Minister and Ex-Imperial German Chancellor.

Ukraine and Germany Signing Peace Pact. Germany and her allies on the one side and the newly created Ukrainian state on the other concluding a treaty of peace.

circles in Europe there was consternation. It was seen that Austria had imposed conditions no nation could accept without an utter humbling. The war cloud gathered again, darker and more threatening than before.

We have since learned, through the disclosures made by Dr. Muehlon, the former Krupp director to whom I have already referred, that the kaiser had a hand in drafting this drastic document. He was consulted by Austria, and approved its form without consulting his

Meantime the European chancelleries were vibrant with nervous agitation. The telegraph and cable were carrying coded messages from ambassadors to their governments, and apprehension of the most serious results was everywhere felt.

Serbia's reply came within the allotted time. It amazed the world by its almost complete concession to Austria. Practically all of the eleven demands but one were accepted without modification. Serbia declined to permit the agents of Austria to prosecute investigations on Serbian

Royal Family of Germany.

William II, Ex-Emperor of Germany and Ex-King of Prussia, married the Ex-Princess Victoria of Schleswig-Holstein-Sonderburg-Austenburg. He has six sons and one daughter. The Ex-Crown Prince Frederick William, married the Ex-Duchess Cecilie of Mecklenburg-Schwerin. The Ex-Emperor's sister, Sophia is the wife of Constantine, Ex-King of the Hellenes. Ex-Prince Henry, his brother, married his cousin, Ex-Princess Irene of Hesse, daughter of the late Ex-Princess Alice of England. The Ex-Emperor's mother was Princess Victoria of England, daughter of Queen Victoria.

advisers, according to the story that Muehlon had from Chancellor von Bethmann Hollweg.

The kaiser is said to have told the chancellor he was determined to go thru with his program, and that no one now could turn him back from his purpose. His resolution being thus declared he left for a trip on his royal yacht, a discreet maneuver designed to create the impression that he had no part in the matter.

soil, but agreed to carry out the required investigations and to report progress in suppressing anti-Austrian propaganda to the representatives of the dual monarchy. In conclusion she offered, if Austria were not fully satisfied with these concessions, to submit the whole matter in dispute to The Hague or to any tribunal constituted by the Great Powers.

It was recognized by all impartial observers that a more complete ac[illegible]iescence

MARSHAL FERDINAND FOCH, COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE ALLIED ARMIES.

Beautiful City of Metz in Lorraine Returned to France.

could not be asked in reason.

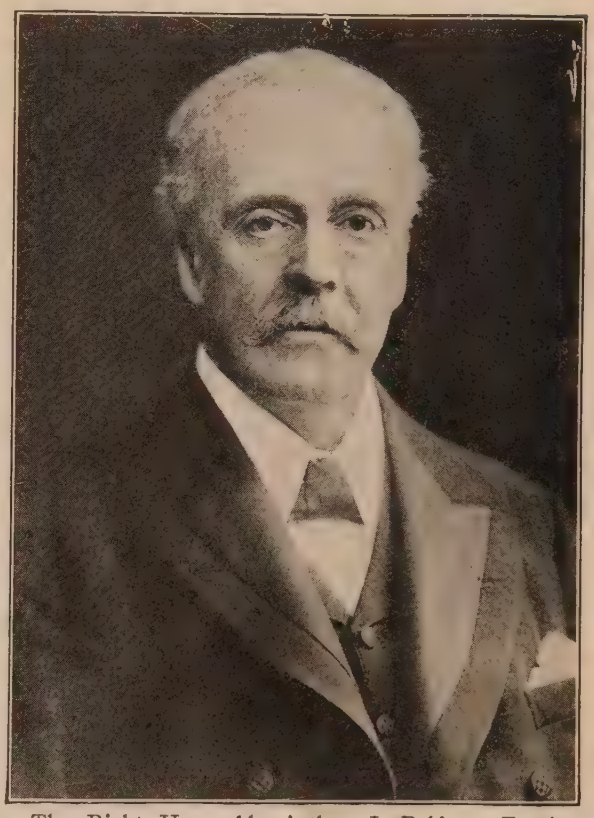
The Austrian minister received Serbia's conciliatory reply at Belgrade on July 25, 1914, at 5:45 in the afternoon. He did not even wait to read it. His things were all packed and ready for departure. He put the manuscript in his dispatch box, and left Belgrade at once for Vienna, thus severing diplomatic relations without ceremony.

It was evident that Austria wanted trouble. The ultimatum had been designed not to obtain a settlement of difficulties, but to promote war.

Great Britain immediately took up the task of preventing an outbreak of hostilities. She proposed to Germany, on July 27, that the matters at issue between Austria and Serbia be submitted to a conference of representatives from Germany, France, Italy and Great Britain. Italy was then a member of the triple alliance, of which the two other members were Germany and Austria-Hungary.

Germany declined the proposal by which peace might have been preserved, alleging that the controversy between Austria and Serbia involved the honor of Austria and could not be submitted to adjudication by disinterested parties. Russia, Serbia's friend, opened direct negotiations with Vienna, and these were proceeding more or less encouragingly when they suddenly terminated, and Vienna refused to negotiate further. There is strong foundation for the belief that Germany intervened to prevent an understanding between Vienna and St. Petersburg.

Meantime Austria mobilized her armies and Serbia responded by like action. There was some talk of localizing the trouble, and permitting a punitive expedition against Serbia, but it ended in talk. Russia, realizing that her interests in the Balkans and in the Dardanelles were menaced by the threat of Austria to drive down toward the Aegean Sea thru Serbia, mobilized five army corps behind the Vistula. The mobilization was far from the



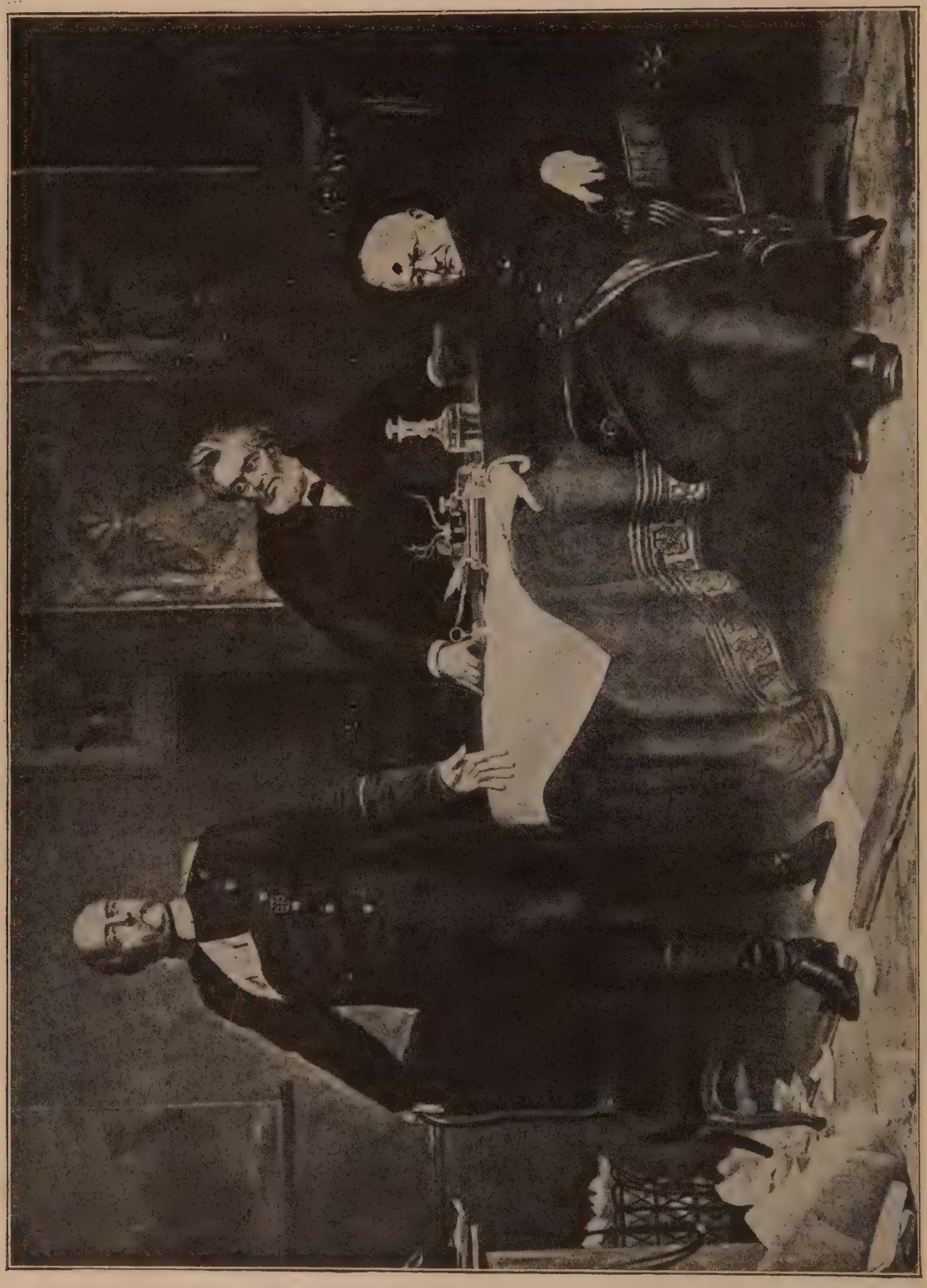
The Right Honorable Arthur J. Balfour, Foreign Secretary of Great Britain and a prominent figure at the Peace Conference. He was formerly Prime Minister of England and at an advanced age enjoys world-wide respect for his statesmanship.

frontiers of the central empires and constituted no immediate threat.

On July 28 Austria formally declared war against Serbia, and began an immediate movement of her forces toward the Serbian frontiers on the Save and Danube. Russia, alarmed by this indication that Austria was determined to conquer the little Slav monarchy that looked to her as protector, and that stood as a barrier between Germany and the east, at once began mobilization in her southwestern provinces.

Thus far there had been no direct threat to Germany, but the kaiser on the same day mobilized his fleet—an act that carried with it a very clear menace to Great Britain.

By July 29 the Austrian guns were bombarding Belgrade from the north side



Bismarck Making the Harshest Terms in History to the French Representatives in 1870.

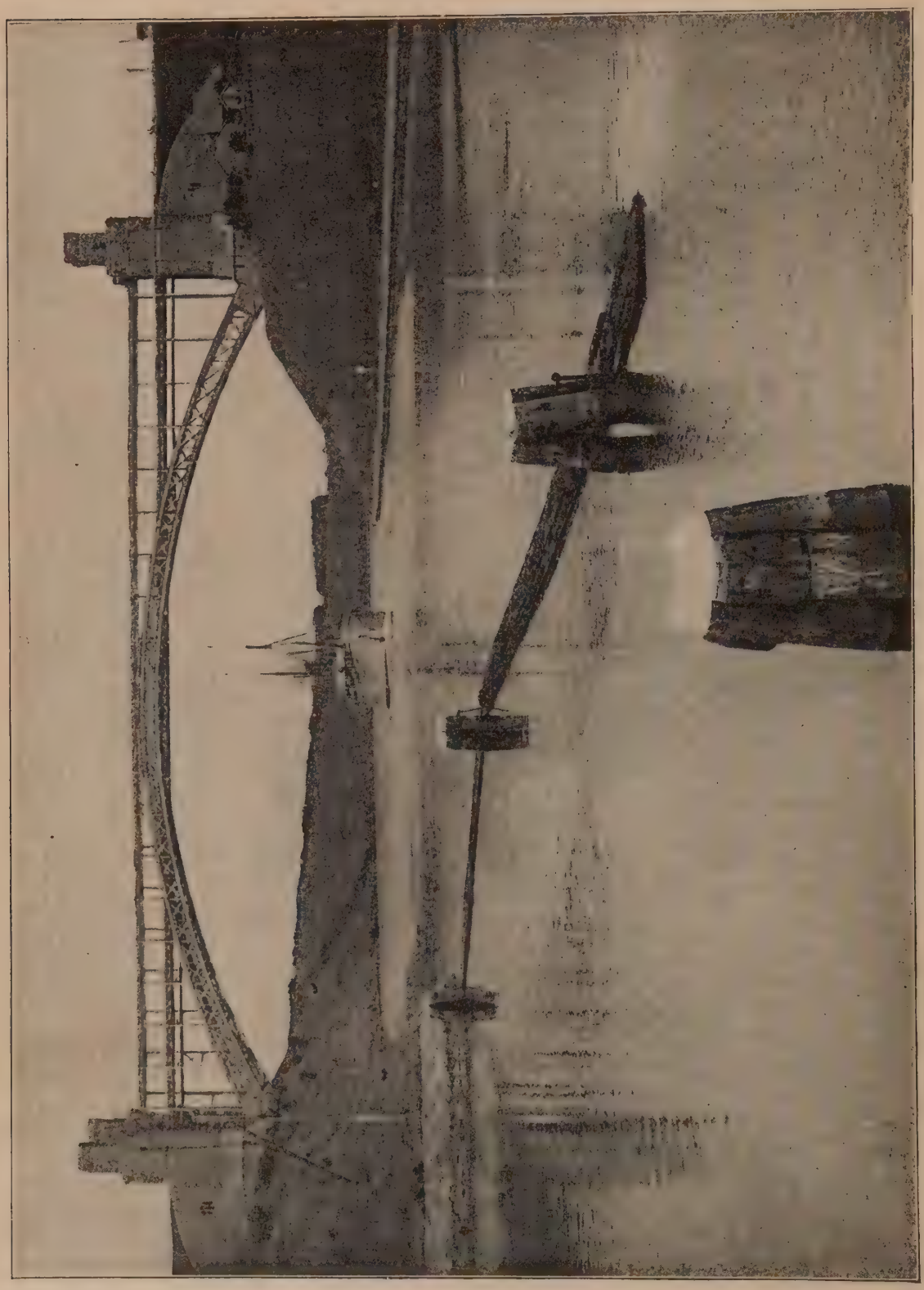
of the Danube, and the world was aroused to the fact that the long predicted European war could be averted only by some miracle.

The semi-official Lokal Anzeiger, of Berlin, issued an extra edition about noon of July 30, announcing that a decree had been issued for the general mobilization of the German army. The news was flashed at once to St. Petersburg. The edition was promptly suppressed by the authorities, but it had accomplished its purpose. It may never be known whether it was originally printed with authority and in order to provoke a belligerent response from Russia, and then suppressed to complete the case for innocence that Germany hoped to lay before the world in convincing fashion.

Its suppression was followed by a peremptory demand from Berlin that Rus-

Capt. Boy-ed, ex-attache of Germany to U. S.

The German Offensive. The Guard Grenadier Regiment who were taken prisoners by the British.



The Kiel Canal, Which Unites the North Sea with the Baltic.

sia cease mobilization within twenty-four hours. But Russia, apprised that Germany was mobilizing, refused to accede to this demand and ordered a general mobilization.

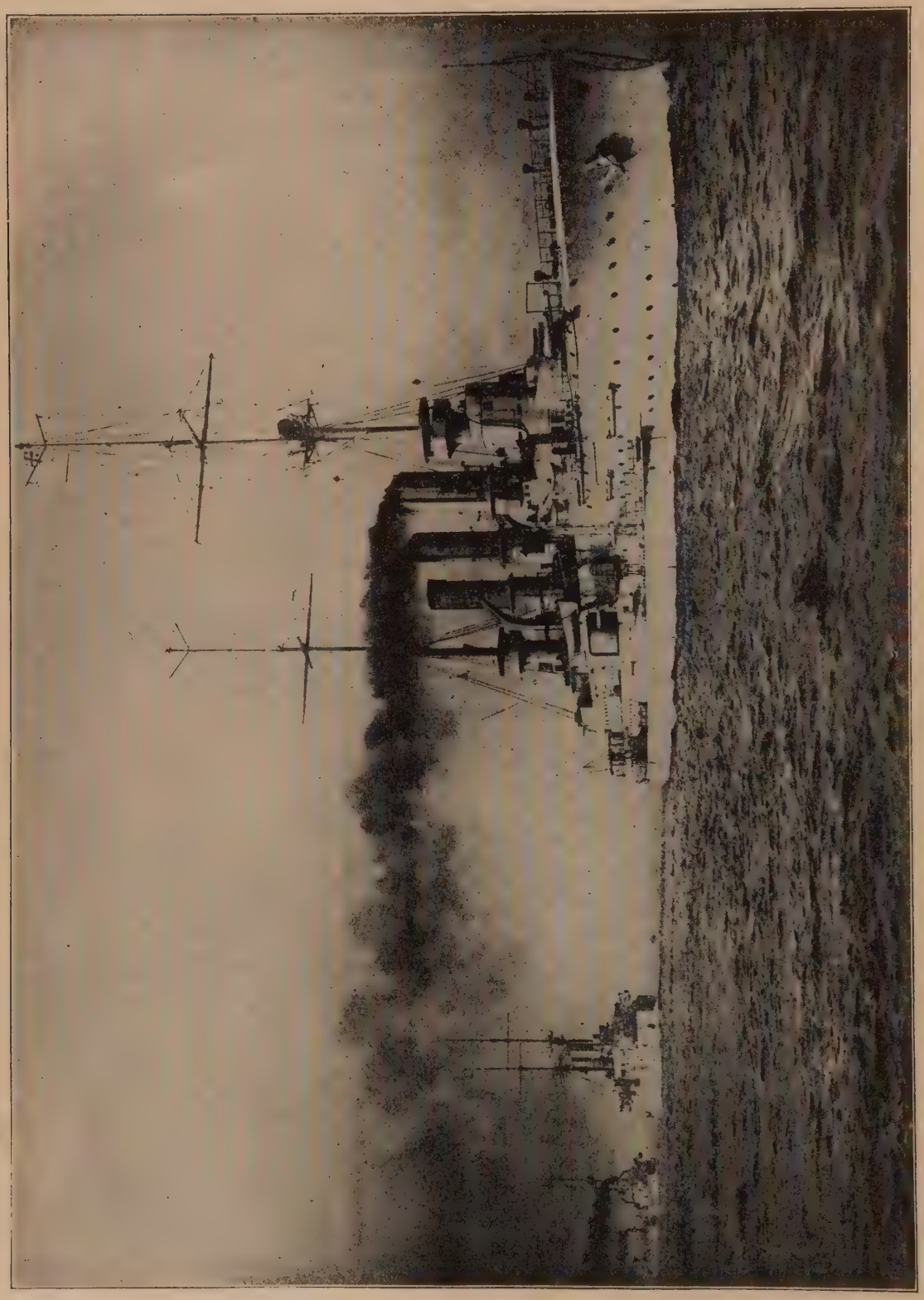
The efforts of Great Britain had failed either to avert or to localize the war. France, alarmed by the swift movements of the central empires and their implacable spirit, was calling out her troops. She held them, however, at a discreet distance from the frontier, avoiding as far as possible needless provocation.

Realizing now that a general European war was inevitable; that France and Russia were certain to be involved with Germany and Austria, Great Britain made one last effort to avert the worst possible consequences—she addressed a note to Paris and Berlin, asking both governments to respect the neutrality of Belgium.

A prompt reply was received from France, agreeing unconditionally. Germany made no answer. Her plans were

Dr. Richard von Kuehlmann, ex-member Russian Peace Conference.

One Shot from a French 305 Battery did this to a German 88M Gun. The first shot aimed at the gun struck it clear amidship.



The German Fleet on Way to Surrender to the Allied Forces.

already laid for the invasion of Belgium. It was the most convenient route to Paris, and Prussia considers nothing but her own interests.

On August 1 Germany formally declared war on Russia and made public her suppressed mobilization order.

Great Britain followed this action by informing France that her fleet would undertake to protect the French north coast against German invasion. On the same day the first hostilities opened the struggle on the west front when a German patrol crossed the French frontier at Cirey. The French immediately began the movement of their troops toward the frontier. Their preparations were made to defend the line from Luxembourg south to Switzerland, along the Alsace-Lorraine border. The invasion of Alsace was planned as a counter-stroke to the

Captain Franz von Papen, Ex-German Military Attache,

British Capture Line of Luxurious German Dugouts in Sunken Road.

Field Marshal Von Mackensen who led the Austro-German Forces on the Italian Front.

German threat.

They relied upon the neutrality of Belgium and Luxembourg as protection against invasion over an almost unfortified frontier.

But on August 3 Germany addressed a demand to Belgium for free passage across her territory. The little country did not hesitate. She returned a prompt refusal, and mobilized her small army to meet the menace that immediately overshadowed her. Her refusal was at once followed by a declaration of war against her. A like declaration was simultaneously made against France, and the armies of Germany began the attack.

On the afternoon of August 3 German troops entered the little Belgian town of Arion, while Chancellor Von Bethmann Hollweg explained to the reichstag that military necessity compelled Germany to commit a wrong against Belgium for which reparation would be made.

Clinging to an eleventh hour hope Great Britain addressed to Berlin an ultimatum, allowing twenty-four hours for reply, in which she demanded that the neutrality of Belgium be respected.

The ultimatum was delivered by Sir W. E. Goschen, British ambassador to Berlin, on the afternoon of August 4. Herr Von Jagow, the German secretary for foreign affairs, received it in person, and gave an immediate answer in the negative. He said it was impossible for Germany to observe the neutrality of Belgium since her troops had already crossed the frontier. He argued that Germany had to take this course in order to prevent France attacking her thru Belgium. He ignored the fact that France had already given her word that she would observe the obligation of Belgian neutrality, and that Great Britain, had France broken her word, would have been compelled to deal with her as she later dealt with Germany.

The British ambassador asked if he might see the chancellor, unwilling to take Von Jagow's reply as final. He was granted permission. Von Bethmann Hollweg appeared much perturbed. He talked for twenty minutes, haranguing Great Britain's representative in tones pleading and upbraiding. He declared it seemed impossible that Great Britain was going to make war on a friendly neighbor merely for the little word "neutrality" that had been disregarded so often in history, merely for a "scrap of paper."

The interview ended unavailingly. Sir W. E. Goschen prepared at once to leave Berlin. That evening the British embassy was mobbed.

At midnight in London a vast throng gathered in Trafalgar Square, awaiting the issue of the momentous ultimatum. As the great clock in the tower of Westminster struck the fateful hour it was announced that a state of war existed between Great Britain and Germany.

There was a moment's silence. Then a great cheer went up, and the multitude melted silently away.

# The Armies Are Unleashed

## CHAPTER III

GERMANY AND AUSTRIA HAD TWO MILLION MEN READY — GREAT BRITAIN'S ARMY WEAK — FRANCE WELL PREPARED — BELGIUM AND SERBIA REASONABLY WELL EQUIPPED — GERMANY'S DRIVE THROUGH BELGIUM — ALLIED REVERSES — GERMANY'S ENORMOUS STRENGTH CRUSHES ALLIES.

Great Britain, Russia, France and Belgium were now embroiled in war with Germany. Austria-Hungary was at war with Serbia, and almost immediately became a belligerent against the other allies.

Germany had 25 first line army corps ready for action, numbering approximately 1,000,000 men; she had twenty-five additional reserve corps of like number. On the day that hostilities began there were at least 2,000,000 German soldiers available, and this number was soon increased by another 1,500,000.

Austria-Hungary had a first line army of about 1,000,000 well trained soldiers, with reserves of less number than those of Germany, but material that was rapidly converted which brought her total force up to approximately 3,000,000 before many weeks had elapsed.

Turkey, soon to enter the war as an ally of the central empires, was a nation of soldiers. In later years they had been trained by German officers. She is estimated to have had about 750,000 good soldiers subject to mobilization when the war began.

Bulgaria, whose decision to link her fortunes with Germany came only after much hesitation and a cool and calculated bargaining, had probably a little less than half a million men fit for the field.

Great Britain, whose reliance was placed upon her navy, was notably weak militarily. Her regular army, at home and in the colonies, numbered only 156,100 men. She had a territorial or militia force numbering 251,000. Her native troops in India and her volunteer soldiers of the overseas dominions, including cadets and members of rifle clubs, did not exceed half a million.

France, a military country, was in much better situation. She began the war with nearly 4,000,000 trained men between the ages of 19 and 48, of whom 2,500,000 belonged to the active army and its reserves, the remainder constituting the territorial army.

Accurate figures as to Russia's military strength have always been difficult to obtain. Her available man power was enormous. It is estimated that she had 28,000,000 men between the ages of twenty and forty-three who could be drawn upon for military service in August 1914. It is probable that at least twenty-five per cent of this number was called to the colors—or 7,000,000 men—before the war had continued many weeks. Perhaps one-half that number was sent to the long fighting front.

Italy, who came into the war on the side of the allies in the spring of 1915, had about 1,200,000 fully trained soldiers. 800,000 partly trained, and a million more untrained but available for call.

Belgium had only 120,000 men with which to meet the armies of Germany when they crossed her frontier. This force was later increased to a quarter of a million.

Serbia mobilized 350,000 to face the Austrian invasion.

Such was the approximate strength of the opposing forces at the beginning of the great struggle.

It was recognized that Germany had the best organized army in Europe. Its equipment was perfect in every detail. Not a necessary thing had been overlooked that was within range of human foresight. Every officer was provided with maps, showing in detail the cities,

towns and villages, the roads and railroads, the rivers, forests and elevations of Belgium and France.

For years the trucks used for peace transport in Germany had been built so as to be available for war purposes.

shells began to fall upon the Belgian defenses. Then they were a nightmare to the world.

Germany's decision to attack France thru Belgium was due to the topographical difficulties in the way of a successful

A German Lookout in a Waterproof Trench. A view of a sandbag-constructed trench on the German battlefront in the Western battle zone showing how carefully the trench has been water-proofed.

Never had any nation in arms been prepared with every type of known fighting weapon as Germany was prepared. She had guns more powerful than the world had dreamed of, until their 42 centimeter

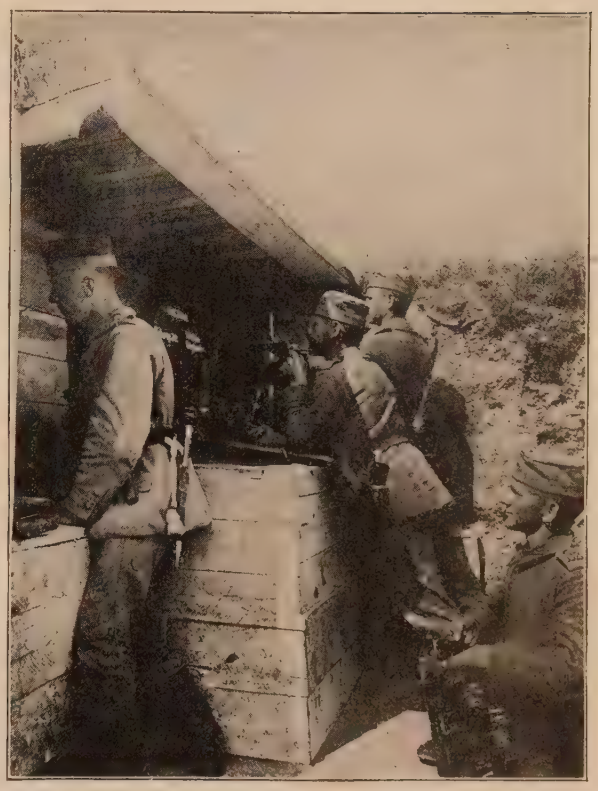
advance from Alsace-Lorraine. Paris lies within a series of natural escarpments that run in a north and south direction across France to the east of the capital. The outermost is that of the Vosges

mountains; moving toward Paris the next is the heights of the Meuse; then comes the eastern edge of the Champagne, and, nearest Paris, the hills that extend from the region of Laon to the Seine.

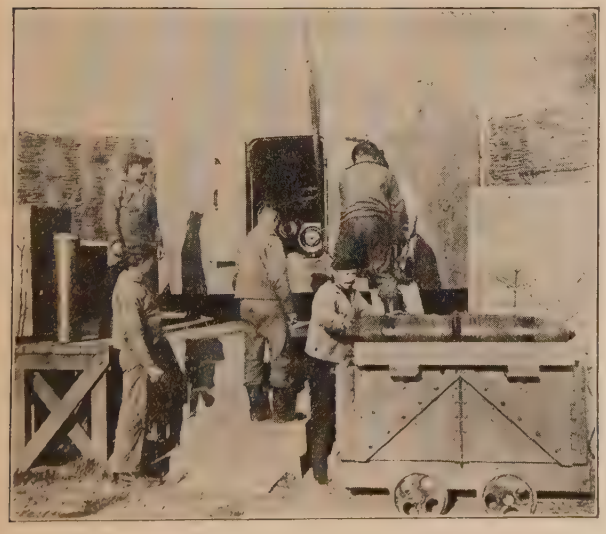
After the war of 1870 France strongly fortified the line of the Meuse. The Verdun-Toul-Epinal-Belfort defensive barrier is famous. This Germany would have been compelled to storm, after crossing the Vosges, had she observed the neutrality of Belgium, and struck France directly from her own territory.

There are gaps in the line, but they were readily defensible and offered only narrow entrances for the immense force with which Germany planned to overwhelm her neighbor. The gap of Stenay lies between the Ardennes forest and the Meuse heights; the Toul-Epinal gap is made by the valley of the Moselle, and the Belfort gap lies between the southern end of the Meuse escarpment and the mountains of Switzerland.

By sweeping thru Belgium the enemy hoped to circumvent the escarpments at their northern end, and to reach Paris over ground vastly freer from obstacles.



Teuton Machine Gun in Action Under Bomb-Proof Shelter.



Armorplated Battery on the Flanders Coast. Back View of the Armorplated Gun Turret.

Germany had two main foes to consider when she began her campaigns—France and Russia. She anticipated no appreciable resistance from Belgium. She knew the military weakness of Great Britain, and feared chiefly her fleet. Russia, she reasoned, would be slow in mobilizing and reaching her frontiers.

Hence it was her plan to drive France to her knees in a swift, smashing blow, and then to turn and deal with Russia before the Slavic giant mustered his strength and became dangerous.

Of the twenty-six army corps that she had available for an immediate use she sent twenty against France and six to hold Russia in check.

She began her attack by occupying the Duchy of Luxembourg, to the east of Belgium. It was an easy victory. Luxem-

bourg had no army to oppose invasion. The Duchess went out to meet the advance guard of the enemy and made formal, but futile, protest against the outrage that was planned.

The capital of Luxembourg was seized, and its railroads taken over by the Germans. The latter were, of course, of considerable value for the transport of troops to the French frontier.

Meantime three German divisions had reached the Belgian frontier opposite the Meuse fortress of Liege. On the night of August 4th they moved to the attack.

Liege is surrounded by six large pentagonal forts, and as many smaller ones. General Leman, a brave Belgian officer, famous as a mathematician, commanded the garrison, and made every possible preparation for stubborn resistance.

On the fifth and again on the sixth the enemy attempted to storm the forts after a heavy bombardment. He was driven back with heavy losses, and an amazed world began to wonder whether little Belgium would halt the foe on the very threshold of his campaign. But the world had much to learn of Prussian power. A third storming effort was made on August 7, and the enemy succeeded in entering that part of the city lying east of the Meuse. General Leman withdrew his troops to the west bank of the river.

French Armored Cruisers "Jaureguiberry" and "Bouvet" in Speed Trials.

On the seventh a German siege train arrived carrying heavier guns, and the monster 42 centimeter shells were hurled against the remaining forts of the beleaguered city. The bombardment was terrific, and the forts crumbled under the ponderous impact.

But it was not until August 15 that the last of the Liege forts yielded. They had

served a great purpose. Belgium's magnificent but sacrificial effort had delayed the armies of Germany for two weeks, giving the French time to prepare their defense and the British to mobilize their little army and hasten it across the channel to the scene of hostilities.

On August 7, the day that the Germans entered Liege, the French began their invasion of Alsace. It was designed as a flank attack on the enemy, and, in theory, was wisely planned. But the French movement was too long delayed to be successful. The enemy had moved more rapidly and was already on the ground with strong forces. Moreover the German success at Liege developed at once a serious threat to the French northern frontier that made further offensive adventure in Alsace imprudent. It was necessary to concentrate in order to meet the menace of a sweep thru Belgium.

The British expeditionary force, under General Sir John French, and numbering only some 80,000 men, landed in France on August 8, and immediately moved forward to join the French who were advancing into Belgium.

Meantime the enemy was sweeping across northern Belgium, outraging the civilian inhabitants of the little towns and villages, burning and pillaging. Behind was a trail of blood and ruin.

Searching skies for the enemy air fleet. Searchlight in full activity; to the left an officer observing the movements of an enemy aeroplane.

The three women were found operating machine-guns during the American advance.

The French armies took up defensive positions on a line beginning at Montmedy and extending northwest along the Meuse to Mezieres, and thence north to Dinant. From Dinant the line ran west to Charleroi. The British assumed positions to the left of the French, north of Mons. The second French army was holding positions along the Alsace-Lorraine border, its right wing resting in upper Alsace near Mulhouse and its left near Nancy.

The Belgians evacuated Brussels, retiring on Antwerp. In this way they saved one of the most beautiful capitals from otherwise inevitable destruction. On

August 20 the Germans occupied Brussels, taking over the administration of the city.

The dismayed civilians lined the streets and watched the endless procession of enemy soldiers, clad in their gray uniforms, marching with monotonous rythm thru the city. They marched with heads erect and the confidence of conquerors. They were on their way to Paris, and not one of them doubted that he would reach the great French capital within a few days time.

On August 22 the Germans, after a brief assault, captured the Belgian fortress of Namur, at the junction of the Meuse and Sambre rivers. Namur was the last stronghold between them and the allied armies. Its sudden capitulation came with the shock of surprise. It had been thought it might hold at least as long as did Liege. But the big siege guns, that were a few days late in reaching Liege, were on time at Namur, and made it a heap of ruins in a few hours.

The battleground was now cleared for the first great test of strength between the enemy and the allied armies of Great Britain and France. Von Kluck commanded the right wing of the advancing foe; the left wing was commanded by the Duke of Wurtemburg; the center was held by troops under Von Bulow and Von Hausen.

Great German Battleship "Ersatz Bavern" Among Those Surrendered.

The Crown Prince of Germany, commanding the Fifth army, was advancing from Luxembourg.

The French troops reeled backward under the smashing blow of the enemy. Along the line Mezieres-Dinant-Charleroi they retired fighting toward Rethel and Hirson. Between Mezieres and Longwy they staggered under the attack of the Crown Prince, and retreated toward

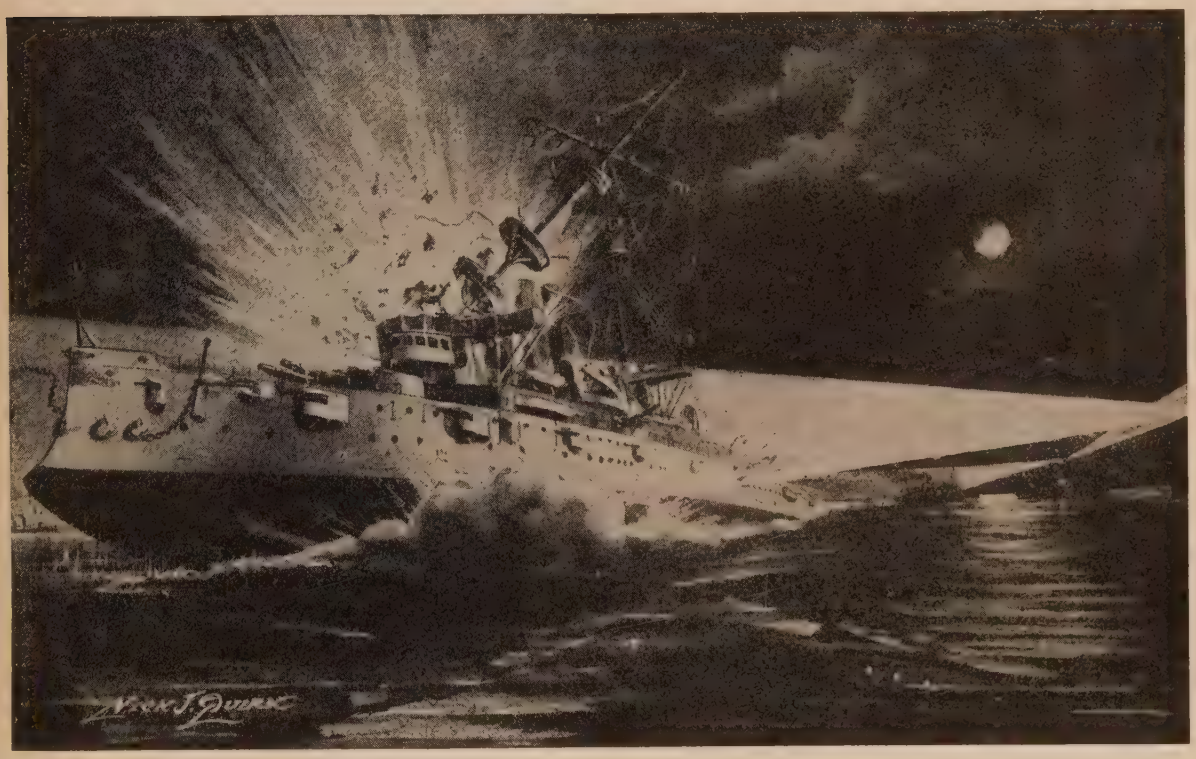
Chalons, thru the Argonne forest.

The little British army in front of Mons was left without support, and had to face the full strength of the enemy First army under Von Kluck. It fought a gallant battle, outnumbered three to one. The enemy attempted to drive the British into the entrenched camp of Maubeuge, but the masterly tactics of Sir John French defeated his purpose.

There then began one of the most notable retreats in history—the retreat of the British army from Mons. It held the vital position on the left wing of the allied forces. It had for its task the supreme duty of preventing an enveloping movement.

From the time the retreat began it was the aim of Von Kluck to outflank the allies, swing around their left wing and intercept their retirement on Paris.

Had he succeeded in this disaster might have overtaken the armies of France and Great Britain, and the victory might have been gained by Germany before her opponents had time to rally. But Sir John French with his 80,000 men managed to hold Von Kluck and 240,000 at bay. In four days he retreated 64 miles—an average of 16 miles a day—fighting courageous rear-guard actions on every mile, and occasionally halting to strike a more than usually hard blow against his pitiless pursuers.



A Successful Submarine Torpedo Attack, Cruiser Destroyed by An "Assassin of the Sea."

Effective retreat calls for as high generalship as effective attack. It is a much harder test of morale. Giving ground is always discouraging to the rank and file and taxing upon the nerve and endurance of officers, who must maintain a spirit of hope and confidence whatever happens.

As the allied armies retired the world

Palace of Justice, Brussels, Belgium.

watched with keen anxiety. Germany was exultant, but nations that loved France and admired Paris contemplated with alarm and consternation the possibility that the great capital of light and life and youth might suffer as Belgian cities had suffered, or that the nation whose spirit it embodied might be forced to yield to the invading foe.

For six days, from August 22 to August 28, the fate of the allied armies hung in the balance. The Germans had another opportunity to win a Sedan. The crisis was reached on August 26, when the British met the full force of Von Kluck's offensive — five army corps against two. The British were standing on the line of Cambrai-LeCateau-Landrecies, and preparing to retire, when the blow fell. It was met with supreme courage.

Re-enforcements had been asked from the French, but no help was sent, and the British were compelled to fight alone. Had they failed Paris would have been lost, because Von Kluck would have driven between Paris and the French right wing, rolling back the French armies and compelling them to fight at a serious disadvantage for their very existence. The capital city would have been left without other protection than its fortifications and garrison—utterly insufficient for defense under the new conditions of warfare.

But the British repulsed the enemy onslaught, and General French retired in good order upon St. Quentin. Here he obtained the help he had asked, and thus supported he again faced the enemy and fought a vigorous delaying battle with him in which was inflicted heavy losses.

By September 1 the allied armies had fallen back to within 40 miles of Paris, and the second line of French defenses had been taken by the enemy. There was as yet no sign from General Joffre, commanding the French armies, that he had any intention of halting and offering a stabilized resistance.

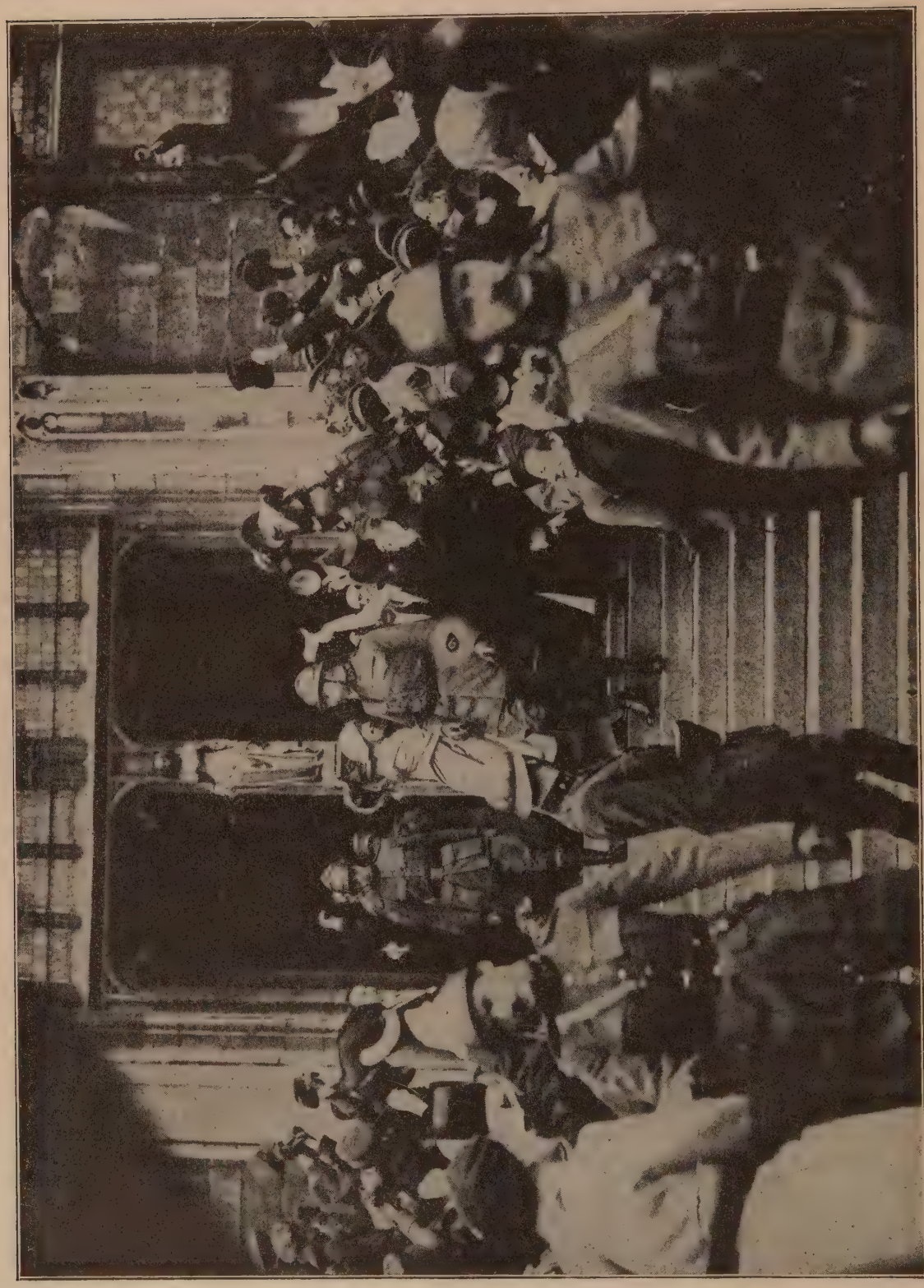
The line as it retreated was pivoting on Verdun. Along the Verdun-Toul fortifications the enemy was completely checked, while at Nancy the French army, that had been driven ignominiously from Lorraine, was retrieving its honor by a magnificent and stubborn defense.

The left wing of the retreating Anglo-French armies came under the protection of the guns of the Paris forts on September 3. It had won the race. Von Kluck's efforts to outflank and envelope had failed.

The allied armies were now buttressed between the great entrenched camp of Paris and the fortified line of Verdun-Toul. In the center they bent crescentically south of the Marne.

The supreme moment for which General Joffre had waited silently and imperturbably was now at hand. He had yielded all of northern France to reach this position, and here he elected to make his stand and risk conclusive battle with the enemy.

Immense Ammunition Dumps Captured by Allies.



King Albert and his Queen Entering Brussels

# Prussian Plans Go Astray

## CHAPTER IV

GERMAN DRIVE WEAKENS — JOFFRE STOPS GERMAN ADVANCE AT VERDUN — FRENCH RESERVES FROM PARIS BOLSTER LINE — BELGIANS CHECK GERMANS ELSEWHERE — GREAT BRITAIN HOLDS LINE AT YPRES.

The whole carefully elaborated plan of campaign for a quick and crushing triumph of Prussia over her enemies and rivals required the occupation of Paris and the paralysis of the French and British armies in not more than six weeks' time.

Every day's delay increased the menace on the German eastern front where comparatively few troops had been left to watch the Russians.

General Joffre, of course, realized this fact. He also realized that the further the German armies pursued him into France the longer the distance over which they must maintain communications and bring transport.

The region of the Marne was known in every topographical detail to Joffre and his subordinates. The French army had often held maneuvers along the river valley and on the heights that border it. The opportunities for employing tactics and developing strategy had all been carefully studied.

The battle line from Paris to Verdun was some 180 miles in length. Paris had ceased to be the French capital, and become merely a great camp, ready to defend itself if need be against siege or storming attack. The French government removed to Bordeaux on September 3, just as General Von Kluck, now only 25 miles to the north at Senlis, discovered that the British had eluded him, and that his last chance to turn the exposed left flank of the allied armies was gone.

Von Kluck could not storm Paris directly. He could not go around it on the west without breaking the continuity of the German line and exposing himself and his comrades to certain disaster. There was only one thing left for him to do—to swing across in front of Paris and assume positions in which he could assist the German armies to the east of him in attacking the allied center.

Von Kluck violated a Napoleonic aphorism in venturing to swing across Paris and turn his flank toward his opponent, but he was convinced the allies were a beaten foe, lacking either the spirit or the resourcefulness to accept the opportunity his movement might offer.

He reckoned without Joffre. The silent, unworried and unhurried French strategist had foreseen what Von Kluck would be compelled to do at the time when the German general saw nothing but the possibility of outflanking Joffre and the British.

The longer-visioned Frenchman had ambushed an army, under Maunoury, in the region of Amiens. This army had no part in the retreat. It was a surprise prepared for use at the right moment.

Joffre had another surprise in readiness. He had placed the man whom he considered the ablest strategist in Europe at the head of another army, as yet unused. There has been some mystery about the seventh army commanded by General

Belgium Soldiers cutting wire entanglements in No Man's Land. A successful raid followed.

Foch at the battle of the Marne. It was three corps strong—120,000 men.

I have heard a story—that I am unable to confirm—concerning the part played by Italy at this critical time. Italy had declared her neutrality, altho an ally of Germany and Austria when the war began. But France, never at any time a cordial friend of Italy, as a matter of wise precaution had to watch the Franco-Italian frontier. It is said that two army corps were delegated to this duty.

Then, so the story goes, word came to the French government from the Italian government that the latter had no intention of becoming involved in the hostilities; that the French frontier was perfectly safe, and that the French were exceedingly foolish if they did not withdraw their two army corps and use them to check the Germans.

The French acted on this suggestion, it is said, and threw into the battle at the critical moment two army corps that the enemy calculated were still employed in watching Italy.

The latest photograph of King Albert, of Belgium.

Queen Elizabeth of Belgium cheered her wounded soldiers at the front.

Whether the story be true or no, it is certain that Joffre met the enemy with greater strength and troops fresher and more vigorous than he expected to encounter.

As Von Kluck swung east, Maunoury, who had slipped down nearer Paris on the heels of the Germans, struck him on his flank. A desperate battle began on the Ourcq river. Von Kluck sent for aid and obtained re-enforcements. He attempted to break thru Maunoury's line and destroy its menace to the German armies, now preparing to attack on the allied center.

But Joffre had a third surprise ready. Every taxi-cab and vehicle in Paris had been employed to make it possible, and the Paris garrison, consisting of a med-

ley of fighting material, gendarmes, Republican guards and others, was rushed to the scene of action. The sudden appearance of the re-enforcements threw consternation into the German ranks. Maunoury's first blow had been a surprise; this threatened second blow was a greater surprise; what might happen if they waited for further developments none could guess, and no one was too anxious to discover by experiment.

So they decided to retreat.

lying his forces with indomitable courage, he struck so heavily that the whole enemy line was thrown into confusion and a general retreat began.

The battle had become an allied victory by September 10, and the German army was hastening toward the Aisne with the French and British in close pursuit.

The retreat of the Germans from the Marne was marked by similar tactics to those characterizing the retreat of the al-

Drilling Belgian recruits in the bayonet charge. The Belgian soldier's efficiency with the bayonet when it came to close quarter fighting was due to incessant drilling.

Meantime the British and the French Fifth army, under D'Esperey, had come into action, smashing a hard blow against Von Kluck's front. The combination was too much. The retreat became almost a rout.

Von Kluck exposed to attack his neighbor Von Buelow, and General Foch now came into action with great dash and vigor. He had suffered heavy losses in defensive action the day before, but, rallies from Mons and Charleroi—except that they were reversed. General von Kluck narrowly escaped the clutches of the British, and the crown prince, who had driven southward thru the Argonne, was in serious peril from the pursuit of the French.

In six days the Germans reached the Aisne, where defensive positions had been prepared and the terrain afforded advantage for resistance. Here they made their

stand.

The struggle now became an effort on the part of the allies to outflank them on their right, and the fighting moved north and east along the Oise, the German line slowly extending in a reach for the protection of the seacoast, and forcing a similar stretching of the enemy's front. The French reoccupied Rheims and Amiens.

Meantime the Belgians were harassing the Germans by sorties from Antwerp, and the continued advance of the allies to aid in the defense. In was quite inadequate for the task, however. On Oct. 5 three of the Antwerp forts fell under the German bombardment. By this time there were skirmishes on the Belgian frontier, and two days later there was fighting near Ypres. The bombardment of the City of Antwerp itself began Oct. 8. On Oct. 10 it surrendered, the Belgian army escaping and reaching Ostend by a detour along the coast. Here it joined the allies, later evacuating the

Covered with mud and glory. Tired out and weary Belgians bespattered with the mud from their inundated fighting ground.

northward toward the Belgian frontier developed a new danger in the possible junction of the Belgian troops with the French and British. On Sept. 20 the Germans began moving siege guns toward Antwerp. By Sept. 29 they were shelling the outer forts of the city. On Oct. 2 the allies had reached Arras, where they met a check. Two days later a detachment of British marines entered Antwerp city and falling back toward Nieuport and Dixmude.

The race to the coast had been won, and a wall of steel was built across the corner of Belgium from Nieuport to Ypres thru which the enemy was never able to drive a path of victory in spite of the most desperate efforts.

A battle front now extended from Nieuport, on the Belgian coast, thru

A stricken city—What was left of Ypres, utterly devastated by Germans. A remarkable panoramic view of Ypres at the end of the war.

Ypres and Arras to the junction of the Oise and the Aisne, and thence eastward along the Aisne, thru Soissons and Rheims, across the Champagne and the Argonne to the north of Verdun. From the region of Verdun it ran southeasterly to Belfort and into Alsace. It was nearly 400 miles in length.

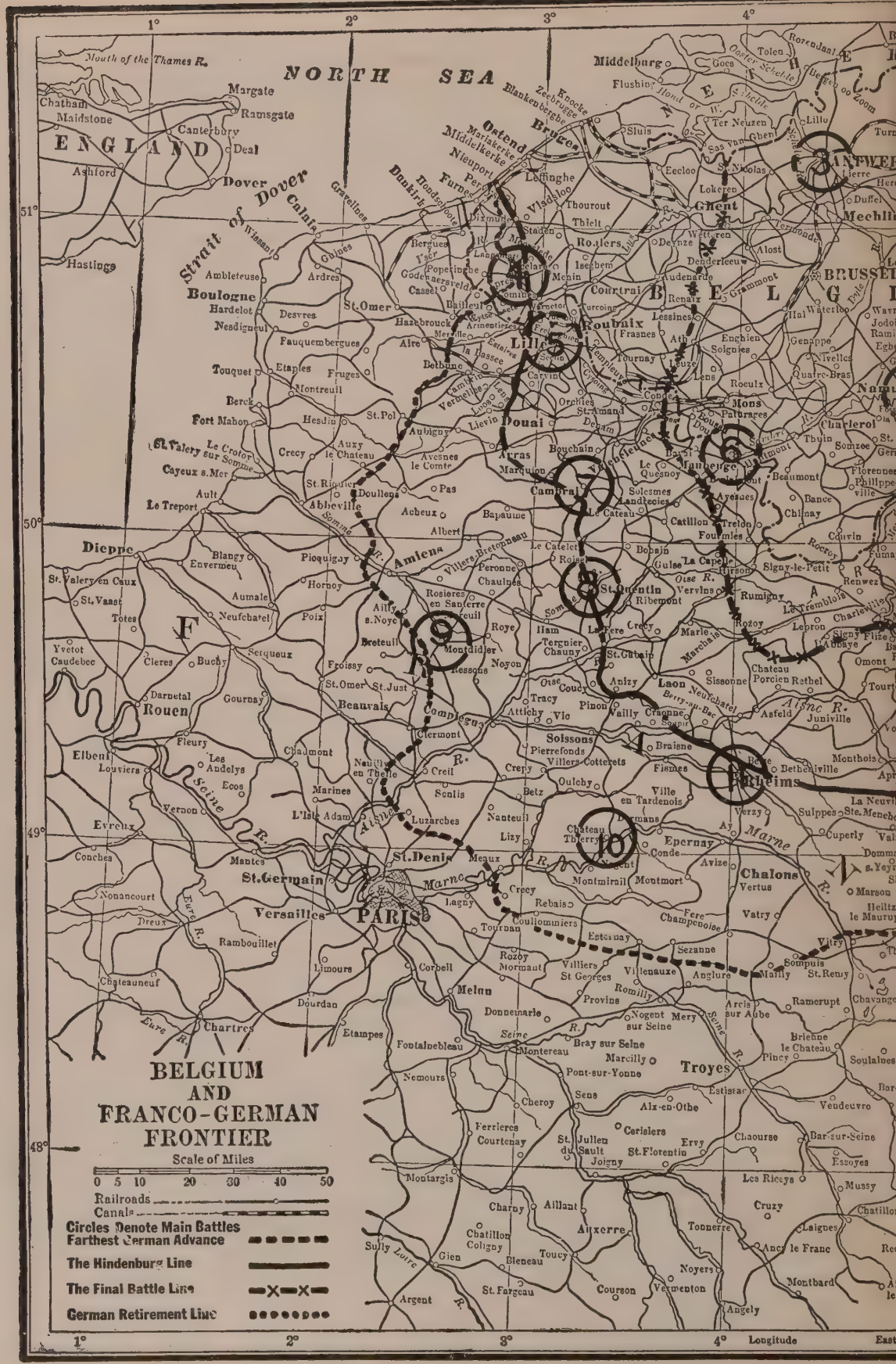
Since one end rested on the seacoast and the other was against the Swiss frontier, flanking movements had become impossible, and the frontal attack was the only means of open warfare, so both sides intrenched and prepared for the greatest siege in history.

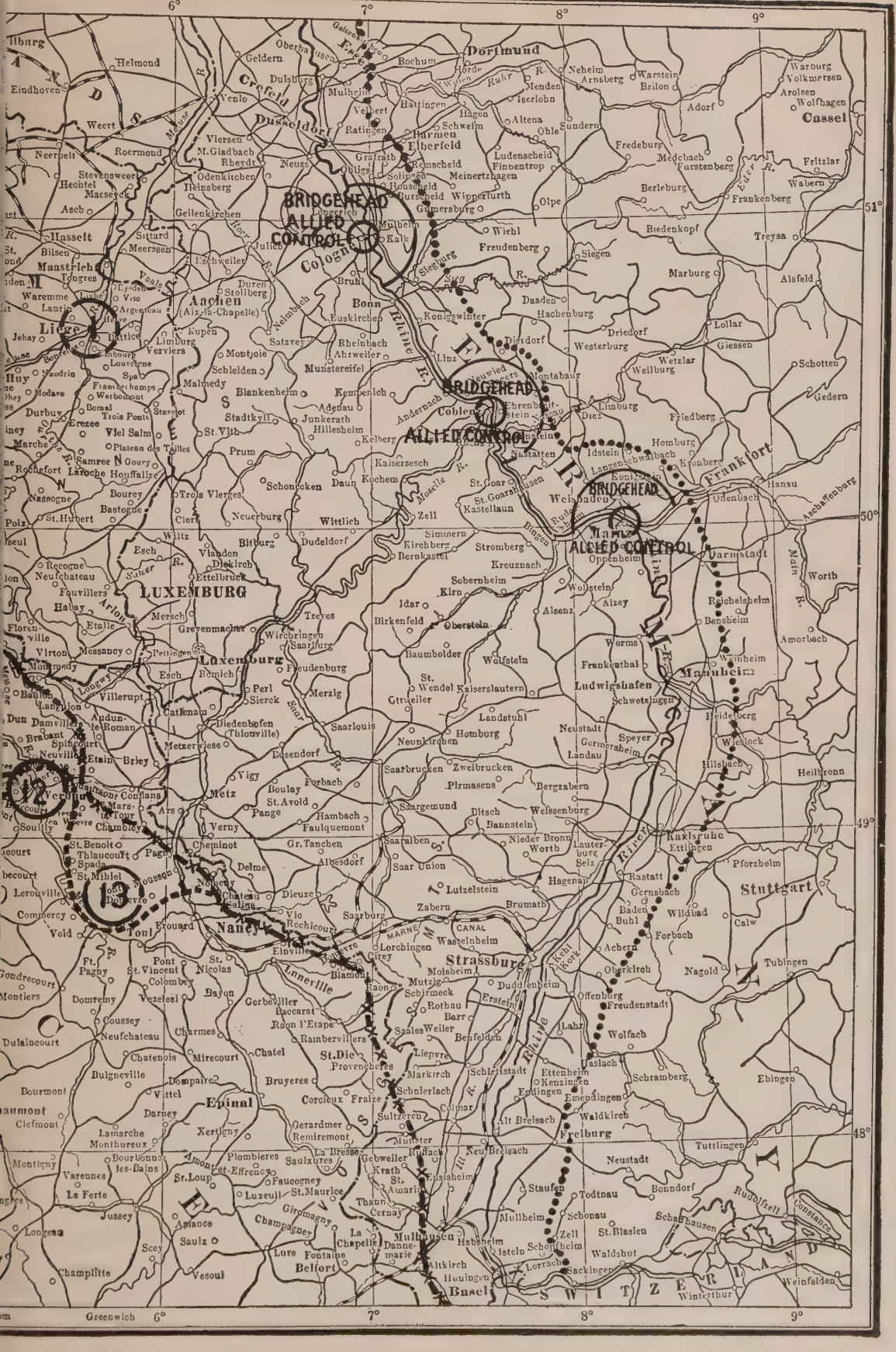
During the period of the race for the coast, however, there had been violent fighting along the Aisne, in the Argonne, around Verdun and along the Lorraine and Alsace borders. The French fortunes in Alsace had fluctuated. Mulhausen had been taken, lost and retaken and lost again. The Germans had crossed the Meuse at St. Mihiel and occupied the town. They held it as the point of a wedge driven into the Verdun-Toul fortified front.

Belgians camping in a church at Camptich. A church at Camptich converted into a camping place.

Belgians check Uhlans from behind barricaded street. Firing over barricades in Willebrook Station near Malines.

GENERAL WOLFE'S TOMB IN WESTMINSTER ABBEY, WHERE THE COLORS OF CANADIAN REGIMENTS WERE DEPOSITED WHILE THE REGIMENTS SERVED AT THE FRONT.

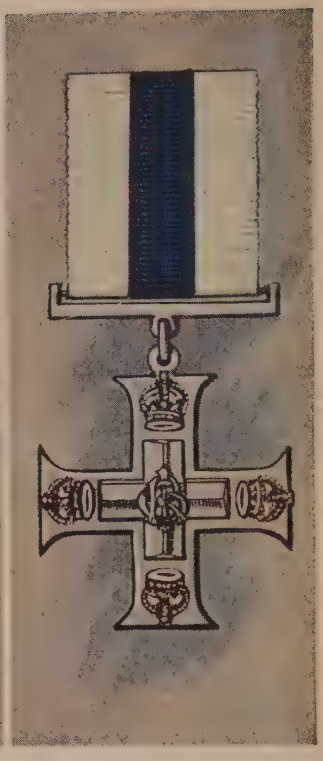

NORTH SEA
ENGLAND
Mouth of the Thames R.
Chatham
Maidstone
Margate
Ramsgate
Canterbury
Deal
Ashford
Dover
Strait of Dover
Calais
Gravelines
Dunkirk
Hastings
Boulogne
Ambleteuse
Hardelot
Desvres
Nesdigneul
Fauquembergues
Touquet
Etaples
Fruges
Montreuil
Berck
Fort Mahon
St. Valery sur Somme
Le Crotoy
Cayeux s. Mer
Ault
Le Treport
Dieppe
Blangy
Envermeu
St. Valery en Caux
St. Vaast
Totes
Aumale
Neufchatel
Yvetot
Caudebec
Cleres
Buchy
Serqueux
Darnetal
Rouen
Gournay
Fleury
Elbeuf
Louviers
Les Andelys
Ecos
Vernon
Evreux
Conches
Nonancourt
Dreux
Rambouillet
Chateauneuf
Chartres
Dourdan
Etampes
Limours
Versailles
PARIS
St. Germain
Mantes
Marnes
L'Isle Adam
Luzarches
Senlis
Creil
Chaumont
Neuilly en Thelle
Beauvais
Clermont
Compiegne
Froissy
St. Just
St. Omer
Broteuil
Montdidier
Roye
Ailly s. Noye
Poix
Oise R.
Somme R.
Seine R.
Marne R.
Aisne R.
Eure R.
Ostend
Middelkerke
Nieuport
Furnes
Dixmude
Ypres
Gheluvelt
Zonnebeke
Passchendaele
Roulers
Thielt
Staden
Bruges
Blankenberghe
Zeebrugge
Knocke
Middelburg
Flushing
Goes
Tolen
Sluis
Ter Neuzen
Sas van Ghent
Eecloo
Lokeren
Ghent
Deynze
Wetteren
Alost
Denderleeuw
Audenarde
Courtrai
Renaix
Lessines
Ath
Enghien
Soignies
Hal
Waterloo
Grammont
Turcoing
Menin
Comines
Warneton
Armentieres
Haseebrouck
Merville
Estaires
Lys R.
Lille
Roubaix
Frasnes
Tournay
Leuze
Lens
Roeulx
Quatre-Bras
Mons
Paturages
Charleroi
Thuin
Somzee
Beaumont
Florennes
Philippeville
Namur
Bance
Chimay
Fourmies
Trelon
Catillon
Le Quesnoy
Maubeuge
Avesnes
Landrecies
Solesmes
Le Cateau
Cambrai
Bapaume
Albert
Acheux
Pas
Doullens
Abbeville
St. Riquier
Crecy
Aubigny
Hesdin
St. Pol
Aire
Bethune
La Bassee
Lens
Vimy
Arras
Douai
Orchies
St. Amand
Condé
Valenciennes
Bouchain
Marquion
Denain
Le Catelet
Bohain
Roisel
Peronne
Chaulnes
Villers-Bretonneux
Amiens
Rosieres en Santerre
Ailly s. Noye
Roye
Montdidier
Noyon
Ressons
Tergnier
Chauny
La Fere
Crecy
Marle
Gulse
Le Capelle
Vervins
Oise R.
St. Quentin
Ribemont
Rumigny
Le Tremblois
Rozoy
Lepron
Charleville
Signy Flize
Signy-le-Petit
Renwez
Omont
Tourteron
Chateau Porcien
Rethel
Sissonne
Laon
Anizy
Couey
Tracy
Pinon
Vailly
Craonne
Soupir
Berry-au-Bac
Asfeld
Juniville
Aisne R.
Attichy
Vic
Soissons
Pierrefonds
Villers-Cotterets
Braine
Fismes
Rheims
Bethenville
Monthois
Ville en Tardenois
Oulchy
Crepy
Betz
Nanteuil
Lizy
Meaux
Chateau Thierry
Germains
Epernay
Conde
Ay
Verzy
Sulppes
Ste. Menehould
Cuperly
Marne R.
Avize
Chalons
Vertus
Montmirail
Montmort
Crecy
Lagny
Rebais
Couilommiers
Tournan
Esternay
Sezanne
Villeneauxe
Anglure
Sompuis
Mailly
St. Remy
Vatry
Fere Champenoise
Vitry
Marson
Heiltz le Maurupt
Romilly
Provins
Donnemarie
Nogent sur Seine
Mery
Arcis sur Aube
Ramerupt
Chavange
Briene le Chateau
Pinay
Soulaines
Melun
Corbeil
Rozoy
Mormant
Villiers St. Georges
Fontainebleau
Montereau
Bray sur Seine
Marcilly
Troyes
Estissac
Pont-sur-Yonne
Nemours
Sens
Cheroy
Alx-en-Othe
Vendeuvre
Ferrieres
Courtenay
Cerisiers
St. Julien du Sault
Joigny
Ervy
St. Florentin
Chaourse
Bar-sur-Seine
Essoyes
Montargis
Les Riceys
Mussy
Cruzy
Chatillon
Charny
Aillant
Auxerre
Tonnerre
Laignes
Ancy le Franc
Sully
Chatillon Coligny
Gien
Bleneau
Toucy
Noyers
Montbard
St. Fargeau
Courson
Vermenton
Argent
Angely
BELGIUM AND FRANCO-GERMAN FRONTIER
Scale of Miles
0 5 10 20 30 40 50
Railroads
Canals
Circles Denote Main Battles
Farthest German Advance
The Hindenburg Line
The Final Battle Line
German Retirement Line
1°
2°
3°
4°
Longitude
East
51°
50°
49°
48°


BRIDGEHEAD
ALLIED CONTROL
BRIDGEHEAD
ALLIED CONTROL
BRIDGEHEAD
ALLIED CONTROL
LUXEMBURG
Cologne
Bonn
Aachen
Liège
Dortmund
Düsseldorf
Krefeld
Elberfeld
Coblenz
Frankfort
Mannheim
Ludwigshafen
Strassburg
Nancy
Metz
Verdun
Toul
Epinal
Belfort
Mulhouse
Basel
Karlsruhe
Stuttgart
Freiburg
Constance
Cassel
Wiesbaden
Darmstadt
Luxemburg
Trier
Saarbrücken
Colmar
Schaffhausen
SWITZERLAND
RHINE
MOSELLE
SAAR
MAIN
NECKAR
6°
7°
8°
9°
51°
50°
49°
48°

**The Victoria Cross** was instituted during the Crimean War for the purpose of rewarding individuals of the Army and Navy "for valor."

**Distinguished Service Order.**—Instituted for the purpose of recognizing distinguished services of Officers of the Army and Navy, recommended in despatches.

**Naval Distinguished Service Cross.**—Instituted by King Edward in 1901 as the Conspicuous Service Cross to reward "distinguished service before the enemy."



**The Military Cross.**—Instituted in 1914. A decoration conferred on captains and officers of lower grades, and warrant officers of the Army.

**The Military Medal.**—Instituted by King George in 1916, as a reward to non-commissioned officers and men for bravery in the field.

**Distinguished Conduct Medal.**—Replaced that "For Meritorious Service," formerly issued as a reward for distinguished gallantry.

**Naval Distinguished Service Medal.**—Instituted in October, 1914. Awarded to Petty Officers and Men of His Majesty's Navy, and to N.-C. Officers of the Royal Marines.

**The Royal Red Cross.**—Instituted by Queen Victoria in 1883. Awarded to ladies or nursing sisters for special attention to sick or wounded sailors or soldiers in peace or war.

To recount all the incidents of the trench siege that followed the winning of the coast would be an almost endless task. The outstanding features of it alone need be related. Of these the two first were the battle of the Yser and the battle of Ypres. The former was an attempt of the Germans to drive in the left wing of the allies where it stretched from Dixmude to the sea, and thus to make an opening thru which they could pour in a flanking movement. It began on Oct. 20 with an attack on Nieuport that temporarily succeeded. British gunboats, however, drove the Germans out of the city, and the attack was renewed near Dixmude. Here again defeat was met thru the cutting of dikes and flooding of the canal region. On Oct. 28 the Germans evacuated the south bank of the Yser, and the battle ended.

Three days later the battle of Ypres began. The British were defending this position with an army that had been reduced to about 100,000. Their front was some thirty miles in length. They were attacked by vastly greater numbers. The fighting lasted fifteen days, culminating in an assault on the British front by the famous Prussian guard, under the eyes of the kaiser. The assault failed. Ypres itself was destroyed, but the position was saved. These two battles of Flanders are said to have cost the Germans 150,000 men.

From Nov. 16 until April 21 there was no fresh drive for Calais on the Ypres front. But in the interval there was tremendous fighting in the Argonne, in Champagne, east of the Meuse, and in the Vosges. No great gains followed these terrific encounters, altho there were advances here and there by both sides. The most marked were the German advance at Soissons in the middle of January, the French gains in the Champagne in March and the French offensive against the St. Mihiel salient in April.

On April 22 the second battle of Ypres began with the German surprise attack in which gas was first used. It was in this battle that the Canadians saved the day after the French line had been driven in. After five days' fighting, the German attack was checked, the allies being compelled to yield ground and reform their lines on their new positions. Ypres, however, remained in possession of the British.

In the early summer there was a notable French offensive on the front north of Arras, in which the Germans had been slowly driven back toward their positions at Lille and Lens. This offensive ended leaving Souchez as a German salient projecting into the French front. Early in July there was a desperate effort of the crown prince to advance in the Argonne. His first onslaught carried several French positions, but was soon checked.

But after a year of trench siege the front showed little change, and the end seemed as far distant as ever.

Immense Ammunition Dumps Captured by Allies.

Lloyd George attends first review as War Secretary. Canadian Highlanders were inspected by Lloyd George, British Secretary of War, and General Sir Sam Hughes.

# The Era of Gigantic Battles

## CHAPTER V

NEW FIGHTING METHODS USED — TRENCHES — BARBED WIRE ENTANGLEMENTS — POISONED GAS — BATTLE OF VERDUN — BATTLE OF SOMME — ALLIED GAINS.

When the first eighteen months of the war had passed and the entrenched lines on the western front showed no significant change, the world began to wonder whether the allies and the central powers had not reached a state of deadlock from which neither could extract a decisive victory.

At first there had been much confident talk of breaking the enemy line. Germany was certain she could reach Paris, the channel ports or any other goal upon which her heart was set—until she tried. Her failures to go thru to Calais on the two occasions when she hurled vast forces against the allied front in Flanders must have discouraged her, even as it encouraged the allies.

Men who were on the Yser and at Ypres in the allied armies said afterward they could not understand why the enemy had not simply walked thru their lines to the sea. They were outnumbered, terribly outgunned, and the Germans had twenty shells to their one.

These enemy failures, and the failures of the British at Neuve Chapelle and the French in the Champagne, the St. Mihiel salient and the Artois, aroused doubts as to the possibility of smashing thru an army fortified in trench positions for great gains that might lead to victory.

Military writers began to talk about war by attrition—that is by the gradual wearing down of the enemy. There was much calculating concerning man-power, and estimates of natural resources. Statesmen and generals got a new vision of the war's significance; they saw that it was a war of nations, and not of armies merely—a war in which the civilian was to be as important as the soldier.

While some men turned their thought to plans for increasing the resources and stimulating the resourcefulness of their countries, in order that they might be fit to stand the test of a long struggle, other men gave themselves to thinking out methods by which the problems of the new warfare could be solved, and the defenses of the trenches overcome. The traditional tactics and traditional weapons were manifestly inadequate.

Already the achievements of the world's inventive genius for the last fifty years had been requisitioned and adapted to the service of the armies. The telephone and the wireless, the automobile, the aeroplane and the submarine—all of these things were playing undreamed of parts in the great conflict and creating conditions for which the history of the world had no parallel.

For these conditions, almost wholly unforeseen and certainly in no full sense appreciated by strategists and tacticians prior to the actual experience of the war, new plans of attacks and defense had to be worked out and new weapons invented.

One of the first marked tendencies was to strengthen the artillery. It soon became clear that attempts to take entrenched lines, protected by barbed wire

Admiral Wemyss, whose appointment as First Sea Lord was considered a wise step, for he was familiar with the navy from the ground up, and was classed as an "old sea-dog."

entanglements and the fire of innumerable machine guns, involved a certain and terrible expenditure of life, unless the charge of the infantry was preceded by a most thoro and destructive artillery bombardment.

The cutting of the enemy barbed wire with nippers proved an enterprise far too costly to be continued. The high explosive shell was substituted as a more efficient and less costly method.

It was in the experimental fighting of the first year and a half that the "barrage" was discovered. The barrage is a method of directing the combined and simultaneous fire of a number of batteries so as to create a barrier of shrapnel, high-explosive or other shells thru which the enemy dare not pass, or, should he venture, must suffer a terrible loss.

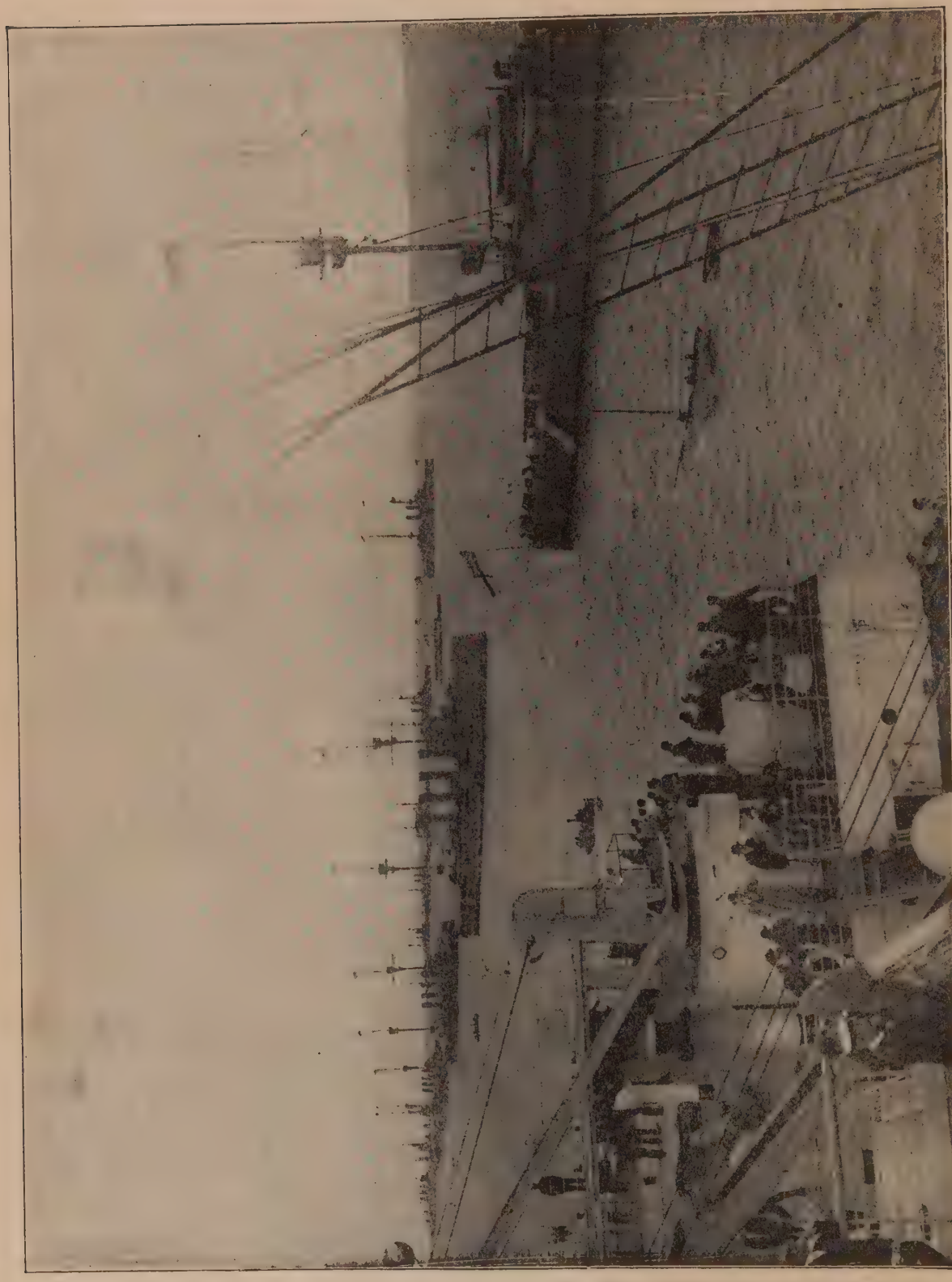
In process of time the barrage was developed so that there came to be a number of ways in which it was used for various purposes. There was the creeping barrage, that moved slowly forward like a curtain of fire in front of the advancing infantry, holding the enemy's first line trench until the attackers were within a few yards of it, and then lifting suddenly to fall on his support and reserve trenches. There was the rolling barrage, by which a certain area of the enemy's line was subjected to a systematic shelling that moved back and forth, as a lawn is rolled, until everything was flattened out. And there was the box barrage, laid down so as to form an almost impenetrable protection for a threatened position, or thrown about the enemy so as to prevent his movement laterally as well as frontally.

Another discovery of the experimental stage was the impossibility of an unlimited objective under the new conditions. It was no longer safe to say to a military unit "There is the enemy line. Go as far as you can." Operations were on too big a scale. Single units, that found

Earl Kitchener, Great Britain's former War Minister, better known as Kitchener of Khartoum, who was drowned on his way to Russia.

exceptional opportunities for advancing on their immediate sector, were in danger of getting far ahead of their supporting comrades on either side, losing contact with the main body, and so—in the very hour of victory—becoming cut off disastrously. This happened more than once.

Moreover the barrage, and the increasing use of artillery generally, made it of utmost importance that there should be the closest cooperation between the guns and the infantry. This could only be ensured by giving the infantry definite objectives, to be reached at a certain hour and beyond which it must not go without explicit orders, however promising the opportunities might be. Once the plan of the limited objective was adopted, to ignore it meant slaughter for those who took chances—meant that the venturesome unit was certain to come under the devastating barrage of its own guns.



The British Fleet in the English Channel off Portsmouth.

Hence the fighting of battles became a matter of great precision as to the division of labor, the assignment of objectives, the scheduling of attack and arrival. Battles were frequently planned months in advance and rehearsed behind the lines on fields where the enemy positions and trenches were reproduced as nearly as possible.

Ultimately a battle became an intricate affair in which the functions of heavy and field artillery, mine throwers, trench mortars and machine guns had all to be carefully weighed and related to the particular task to be done. In the same way the use of gas, of hand grenades and rifle fire had to be skilfully calculated and the proportion and manner of each determined. Aeroplanes and tanks added two further factors of ever increasing importance.

The year 1916 brought two great battles on the western front that exceeded anything the world had conceived to be possible—the battle of Verdun and the battle of the Somme. The former lasted from February 21 until July 1, and the latter from July 1 until March of the following year. Each battle—so called—was a series of bitterly fought engagements, any one of which alone would have been considered a notable event in previous wars.

The battle of Verdun was the first German attempt to put into effective use the lessons learned in the year and a half of entrenched warfare.

Two striking features characterized the beginning of this battle—First, its surprise nature; second, the amazing preliminary bombardment. The French knew that something unusual was in progress in and behind the lines north of Verdun, and they were on their guard against attack; but they did not know how strong was the force concentrated by the enemy under cover of the hills and woods. Not less than 500,000 men were assembled by the Germans for this mighty

General Byng, Hero of Cambrai in Famous Tank Charge.

effort, which, they hoped, would lead to the occupation of the great and famous fortress of France, and, possibly to the reduction of the whole Meuse line of defense, and the opening of the Marne valley route to Paris.

Never before had there been seen such a massing of artillery. It had never entered the mind of a military commander that so vast a number of guns could be used on a comparatively limited front. The war correspondent of the Niewe Rotterdamsche Courant, thus described what he saw when he visited the German lines at Verdun:—

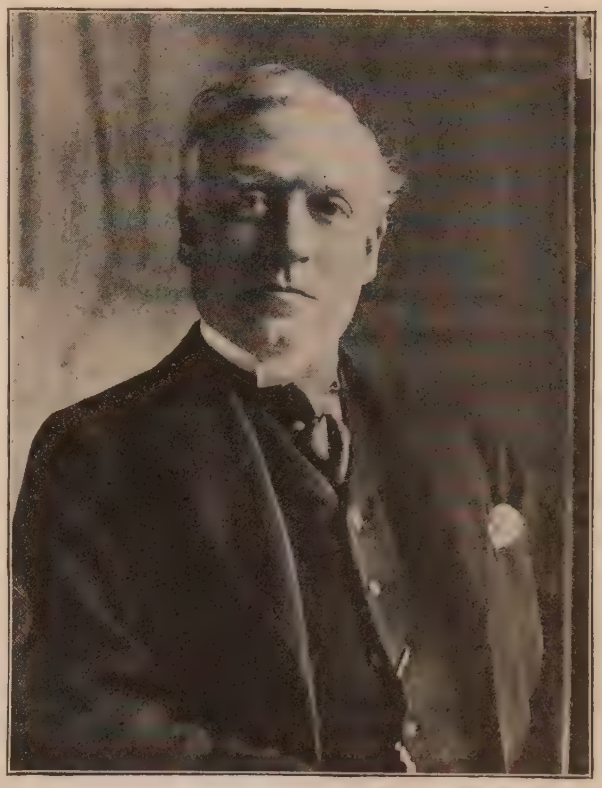
"Over the roads leading towards Verdun artillery and ammunition were brought up in such quantities as the history of war has never seen on such a limited area. The country seemed to be covered with an incredible number of guns. We could hardly believe what we saw around Verdun. Long rows of guns, as

Australian Premier and Family: An attempt was made to assassinate William M. Hughes, the Australian Premier, at his home in New Victoria, Australia.

in old battle pictures, set up in open fields with gunners standing about them, and on the hill-tops observation posts with their great telescopes uncovered. When I shut my eyes I still see before me the curved lines, row upon row of guns, endless array, with gunners moving about them in the open battlefield."

To tell in detail the story of Verdun would require a volume of several hundred pages. It was from its first hour a demonstration of German strength and French resistance. Never was the spirit of France more gloriously displayed than in this long and terrible conflict. Two thrilling watchwords rang around the world from the battlefields of the Meuse hills and valleys—"They shall not pass!" and "We shall get them!"

Following the intense and protracted bombardment with which the Germans



Herbert Asquith, famous British Statesman.

Charge of Heroic Scotch Highlanders. The hardiest of the British troops are those Highlanders composed of the brawny sons of Scotland.

opened the Verdun campaign, came a charge of their infantry on a front of twenty miles. The first day they gained ground to a depth of two miles, acquiring positions of advantage from which to continue the attack.

On the last day of February the Germans entered Fort Douaumont, northeast of Verdun, and one of the most important of the outer ring of fortresses. It had been reduced to a ruin before the enemy occupied it. During March they captured Forges, on the west bank of the Meuse, and occupied Vaux, southwest of Douaumont. The long struggle for Dead Man's hill began, the bloodiest struggle and the ghastliest battlefield on the whole Verdun front.

Thruout April and May the fighting continued incessantly. Many a terrific attack was repulsed by the French, but, inch by inch, they gave ground on both sides of the Meuse, drawing ever a narrower circle around Verdun. In June the Germans drove up the valley and the hillside leading to Fort Vaux, and, in a bitter fight, captured it. Douaumont and Vaux were now both in the enemy's hands; a few days later Thiaumont fell, almost due north of Verdun, and on June 24 the Germans entered Fleury, penetrating the inner circle of Verdun's defenses. It was a critical hour for France. For a week the fate of Verdun hung in the balance.

A German Zeppelin flight over British fleet, which the fleet destroyed with three well placed shots

Then on July 1—almost without warning—the British and French smashed hard against the German lines on a front of ten miles, north and south of the Somme river.

The second great battle of the war was beginning—a battle worthy to stand side by side with Verdun.

The success of the allied attack on the Somme, altho not measuring up in its early stages to the hopes of the British and French commanders, was enough to alarm the Germans and to relieve the pressure on Verdun. The Meuse city was never again in peril. Germany, first and last, spent 500,000 men in a futile effort. France came out of the great test of strength and spirit her confidence fortified, and forever certain of the world's admiration.

The battle of the Somme was, for the allies, what Verdun had been for the Germans—an attempt to put into effective practise the lessons of warfare learned during the first year and a half or two years of war. The massing of artillery, the employment of the barrage, the use of the limited objective, and the development of the tactical nibble into the big, strategic bite, were all phases of this battle.

When it began the British and French believed they could smash thru and break the enemy line—and the theory was generally held that if the line could be broken on a considerable front a decisive victory might be gained by pressing the advantage with unfaltering vigor.

On this theory and with this hope heavy sacrifices were made in the storming of enemy positions. The enemy was made to suffer heavy losses, and his tenacious defense indicated that he regarded seriously the possible consequences of the Franco-British drive.

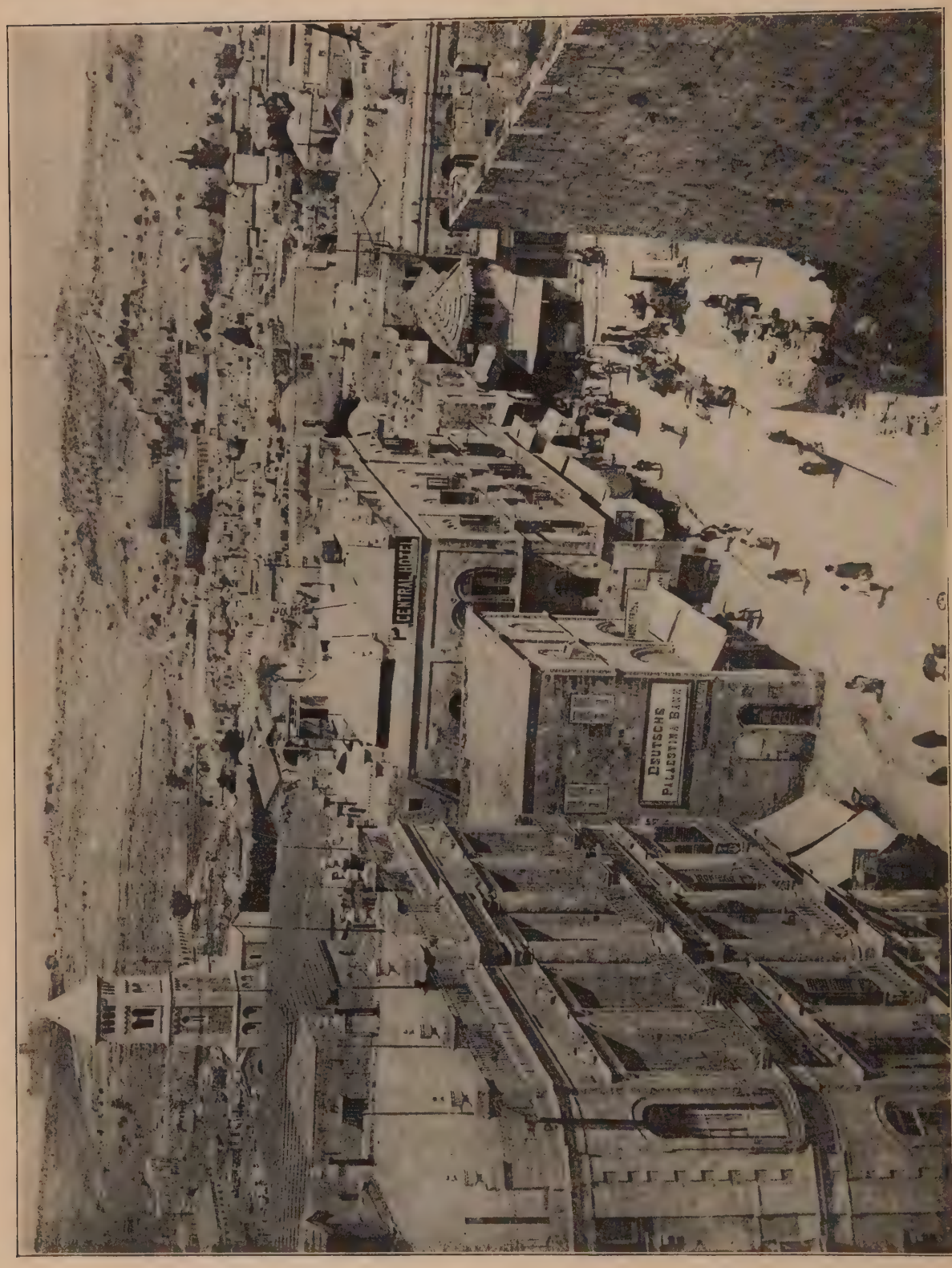
But the Somme battle had been begun too late in the summer. No time margin had been left for the possible failure of the original schedule, and when the British were held up for weeks at Thiepval and north of the Ancre, the schedule was thrown out of gear.

Before the full value of the Somme successes could be realized by pressing

Gen. Vassitch Commanded Serbia Second Army.

the victory home, the open season for fighting ended and the rainy season set in. The Somme became an almost impassable mire. Infantry movements were exceedingly difficult, and the transport of big guns impracticable. Operations had to be abandoned, and the enemy, who was getting exceedingly uneasy about the security of his lines, obtained a respite that allowed him to revise his plans and prepare for a new program in the spring.

When the drive halted in November 1916 the British had conquered the ridge overlooking Bapaume, and the French had pushed forward to the outskirts of Peronne. It was estimated the Germans had lost 700,000 men, of whom 95,000 had been taken prisoner. The allies counted among their gains 135 heavy guns, 180 field pieces and 1,438 machine guns. From this standpoint the Somme battle had been the most successful battle.




**The British** forces despite continued opposition from the Turko-German forces entered the Holy City.

# Hindenburg Retreats

## CHAPTER VI

LLOYD GEORGE FORMS NEW BRITISH CABINET — GERMAN PEACE PROPOSALS — GERMAN ATROCITIES — GERMANS RETREAT — FAMOUS HINDENBURG RETREAT — UNRESTRICTED U-BOAT WARFARE — GEN. BYNG'S TANK DRIVE AT CAMBRAI — BRITISH ARTILLERY OVERWHELMING — CANADA AND OTHER BRITISH COLONIES TAKE PART.

Had the British and French resumed their drive on the Somme front when favorable weather made further operations possible in the spring of 1917 great and important results might have been realized.

They had driven a wedge into the enemy lines, twenty miles in width and nine miles in depth. They had made the deepest impression on an entrenched front that had been made anywhere or by either side since the war began.

If the wedge had been pushed only a few miles further east it would have cut lines of petrol and steam communication absolutely vital to the security of the German line. North of it and south of it were German salients, occupied by many thousands of troops whose positions were menaced by the wedge, and would have been seriously endangered by its further progress.

Germany had suffered so heavily to no purpose in the battle of Verdun, and had been forced to pay so high a price for the defense of her Picardy positions on the Somme, that she was not in a position to launch a big offensive.

Indeed, during the winter of 1916, she made an attempt to promote negotiations for peace. She had just finished the conquest of the greater part of Roumania, and she considered the moment opportune to suggest that a settlement might be reached.

Just before her proposals were made there had been a change in the British government. Mr. Asquith, the Liberal party premier, resigned, and David Lloyd George accepted the responsibility of forming a cabinet. He invited representatives of all political parties to join him, and succeeded in creating a coalition or union government in which many of Britain's ablest men accepted office.

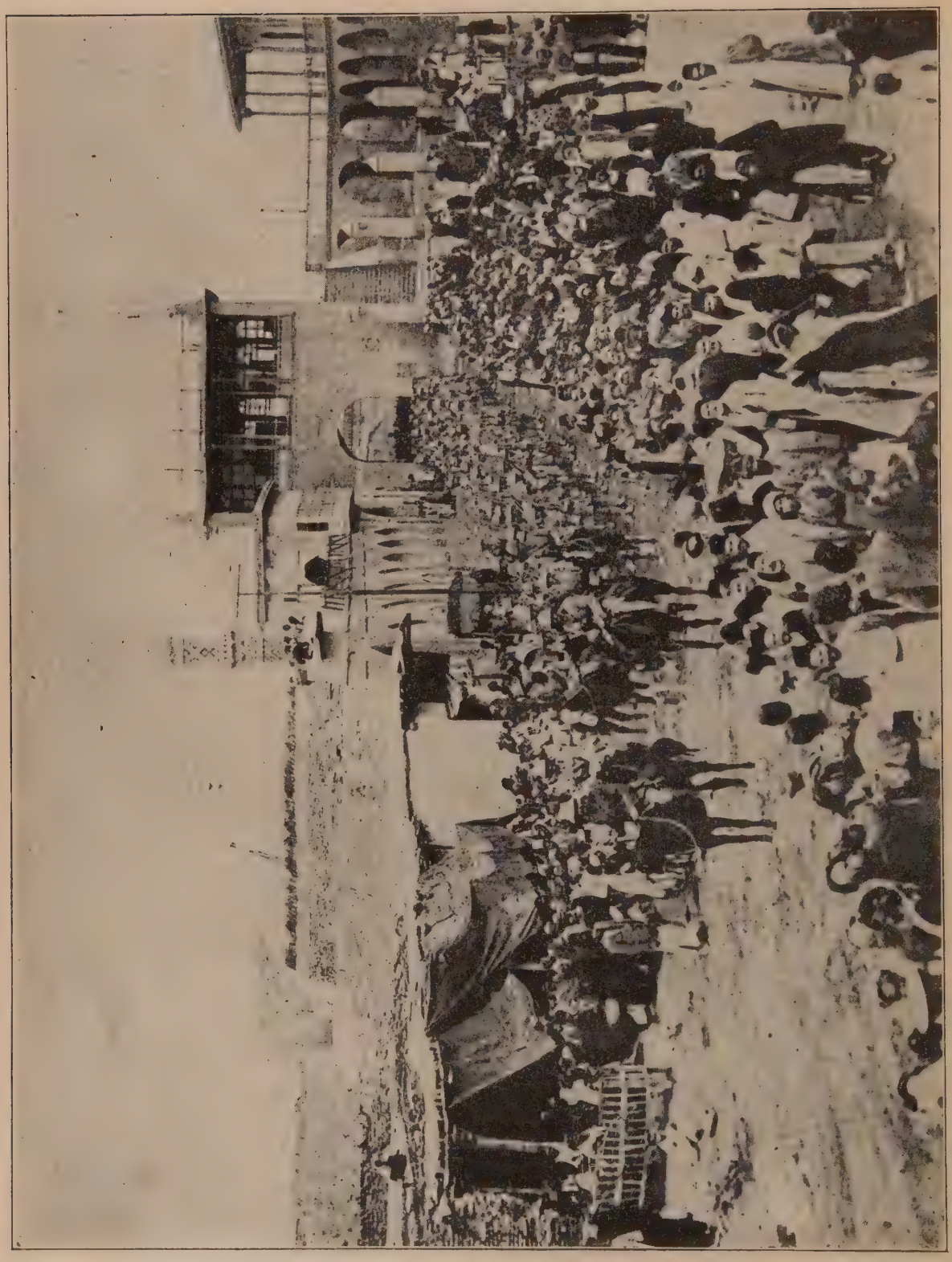
The answer of this government to the enemy peace proposals was to authorize the enlistment of 1,000,000 more men, and to ask parliament for a war credit of $2,000,000,000. Thru Premier Briand France warned the world to beware of Germany seeking peace, and General Nivelle celebrated his appointment to succeed General Joffre, now made a Marshal of France, by taking 11,000 prisoners and advancing two miles on a seven mile front north of Verdun.

Germany continued her efforts, but the allied governments gave the world to understand that they were in no humor to consider the enemy's proposals, and had no faith in the enemy's word. Premier Lloyd George declared that allied peace terms were, "Reparation, Restoration and Security."

Germany had no intention whatever of making peace on terms involving reparation and restoration.

So, finding it useless to pursue her peace efforts further, Germany turned her attention to obtaining a more secure position on the western front.

During the winter months an elaborate trench system, fortified as no trench system had ever been fortified before, was constructed along a front extending—roughly—from the region of Douai to the Aisne, with Cambrai and St. Quentin marking its main positions.



Historic City of Bagdad. The photograph shows the British troops in possession of the ancient city marching along the principal street.

Belgian civilians, deported from Belgium, and allied prisoners were employed in the construction of this trench system that became famous thruout the world as the Hindenburg line.

Early in 1917 the British began to feel out the enemy lines north of the Ancre brook on the Somme front. They found an encouraging situation and pushed forward. Presently they were regaining village after village, capturing strategic heights, and advancing with unexpected rapidity. It became evident that the enemy was retreating according to plan, and engaging only in such rear guard action as was necessary to protect his retirement. He was withdrawing his imperilled salients from their positions north and south of the allies' Somme wedge.

Admiral Sir David Beatty, of the British Navy.

The British took Bapaume and the

After the fight with the Huns near Rheims. The Black Watch, which contains some of the best fighters in the British Army.

British and Canadian Troops in the Most Sa

ttle Against the Germans in Ypres Sector.

ridge extending south from it toward Peronne. Then things moved rapidly. The Germans fell back on a front of 60 miles, burning, blasting and pillaging as they went. In all history there is no precedent for the work of wanton destruction the retreating armies wrought. Evacuated cities were mined and reduced to utter ruins by internal explosions timed to take effect after the German troops were well away; in some villages buildings were wrecked by fastening cables to their corners, and then attaching the cables to steam tractors, that literally pulled the buildings to pieces.

Orchards were chopped down, or valuable trees scarred so as to ensure their death. Vines were cut at the roots.

The civilian population of many a small town was driven out and carried along with the armies for service behind

Horses, too, wore gas masks. Both men and horses wore gas masks at the front.

Scottish fighters in a bayonet charge. 2nd Battalion "London Scottish" is an interesting study.

the German lines.

The retreating armies reached the new Hindenburg positions late in March, and there established themselves none too soon for their own safety. The allies were close upon their heels.

It had been the belief of Von Hindenburg that by making the great retirement he would destroy the program of the allies for a spring offensive. He supposed that they had concentrated vast numbers of guns, and assembled immense quantities of munitions on the Somme front, and that they would not be able to bring these supplies up to his new line in time to launch a serious drive before certain other events occurred upon which he was counting.

One of these events was the success of unrestricted U-boat warfare, proclaimed by Germany on January 31, 1917; the other was Russian surrender or revolu-

Lt.-Col. William A, Bishop, V. C., D. S. O., M. C., of the British Royal Flying Corps, greatest living war aviator

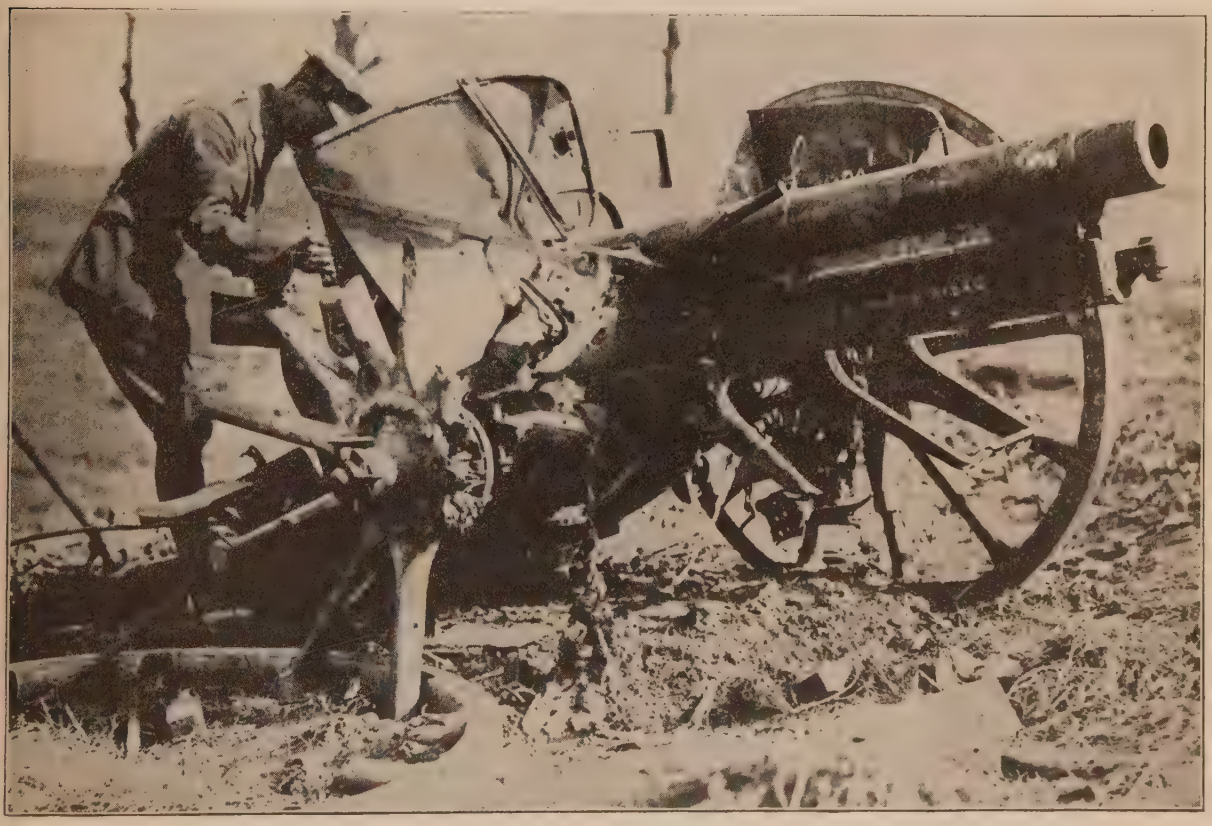
The British Cavalry. They are seen charging over the top of a ridge galloping at full speed.

The British Battleship "Iron Duke," Flagship of the Home Fleet, Has Been Present at All Battles Between the British and German Armadas.

tion, for either of which Germany had been working by every secret and corrupt means at her command.

It happened, however, that General Haig and General Nivelle, the British and French commanders, were not quite so simple as the German general supposed them to be.

General Haig, for example, instead of attempting to move all his big guns and stores of munitions across the Hindenburg wilderness, simply ran them up the line a few miles to the region behind Arras and Vimy ridge. In like manner General Nivelle made his concentrations in the Aisne region. From neither of these fronts had the enemy retired.



Evidence of the good shooting of the Canadian Artillery. A direct shot from a Canadian artillery piece put this German gun out of commission.

The quick pursuit, and the vigor with which the British and French attacked St. Quentin, threw the enemy off his guard. Hence when on Easter Monday, April 9, the British stormed Vimy Ridge, taking 6,000 prisoners and advancing over the ridge and several miles to the east of it, the enemy was manifestly surprised. The British attack and subsequent progress threatened the security of the Hindenburg line at its northern end, and there was a frantic effort of the enemy to construct new and stronger positions covering Douai and protecting Cambrai before Haig's men could menace these important points.

In the meantime the French under General Nivelle carried out an ambitious attack along the Aisne front, with the Craonne plateau and the Chemin des Dames as their primary objective, and the St. Gobain plateau and city of Laon as their ultimate and chief objectives.

They gained their primary objectives in part, at least; but the price paid was so heavy that the political leaders of France were panic stricken, and—so the story goes—ordered the attack abandoned at a time when a great success impended.

Motorcycle Troops on Scout Duty.

General Nivelle soon thereafter lost his command, and was succeeded by General Petain, a man of strict military mind and spirit, who had no ears for the politicians, and was inclined to move carefully, rather than spectacularly. For the rest of the year there was little offensive action on the part of the French. They fought a hard and successful duel with the forces of the German Crown Prince for possession of the Chemin des Dames, positions from Messines to Passchendaele.

On the Cambrai front General Byng made a dramatic attack that came as a complete surprise to the enemy.

Tanks had been first employed by the British on the Somme. They had proved wonderfully effective in smashing down barbed wire, field fortifications and trench parapets; they had done great work in cleaning out machine gun nests.

British troops in France captured 657 German guns, including over 150 heavy guns. Machine guns to the number of 5,750 have been counted as have over a thousand trench mortars.

and late in the year, by a clever bit of tactical work on the part of Petain, they ousted the enemy from road and plateau, and won positions commanding the approaches to Laon.

The British, having exploited their success on Vimy Ridge as far as seemed possible, opened a new campaign in Belgium, resulting in the capture of all the ridge But on the Somme tanks had been comparatively few in number. An effort had been made to use them in Flanders, but the ground was so muddy, so horribly churned by shell fire, that the tank was at a disadvantage.

But General Byng swept the enemy temporarily off his feet by a tank attack on an extraordinary scale. Hundreds of

Switzerland-German border lighted by electricity in form of crosses for aeroplane guidance.

Australian troops on parade just before leaving for the front.

the monsters rolled suddenly down on the German trenches behind a screen of smoke from the British guns, their rumble drowned to the hearing of the enemy by the roar of the cannon. They smashed a wide path thru the enemy lines, opening the way for the infantry. The success was too big—it was bigger than the British expected, bigger than they were prepared to support.

The infantry advanced within three miles of Cambrai, occupying Bourlon wood on the crest of Bourlon hill. But the enemy counter attack caught the British insufficiently supported in their new positions, and they were forced to abandon about two-thirds of the ground they had gained.

The failure of General Byng to hold his advance was a great disappointment to the allies. However there were greater results from the venture than appeared on the map.

It had demonstrated the value of tanks, and it had proved that the enemy line could be broken—a possibility long doubted by many.

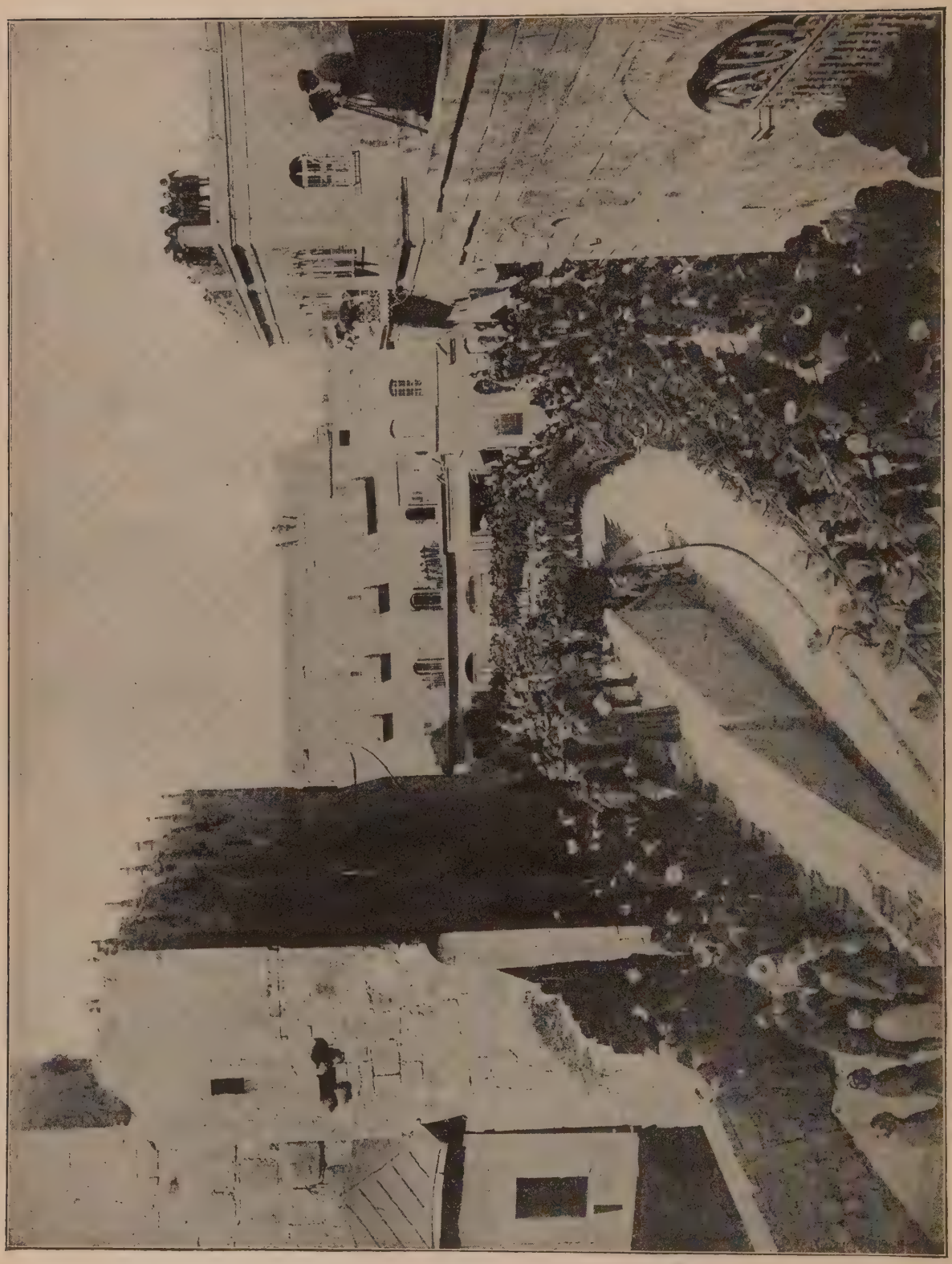
The battles of 1916 and 1917 were amazing demonstrations of destructive power.

The Somme bombardments were the most intense known in the history of warfare up to that time.

In eighty days of fighting the French and British troops used on a front of less than 25 miles 15,000,000 artillery shells, or an average of between 150,000 and 200,000 a day—not less than 6,000 an hour for every hour of the twenty-four. And this is exclusive of trench mortar shells and other projectiles, such as hand grenades.

Many of these shells weighed over a ton; many more over half a ton. It is safe to estimate that 5,000,000 tons of metal were hurled against the German defenses in little more than ten weeks time.

Royal Horse Artillery going into action at the gallop. This remarkable British official photograph taken on the British Western front in France shows the Royal Horse Artillery approaching a battery position at a gallop. The R. H. A. are the most mobile branch of the artillery.



The taking of Jerusalem and the entry of the British forces, was probably the most historic event of the old world.

This, of course, was only part of the blasting work. Unestimated quantities of high explosives were used in mining operations, and vast craters were created in which enemy soldiers and guns were entombed.

It was thus that Thiepval, the Regina redoubt and other powerful German works were reduced to ruins, and their garrisons driven from the chaotic heaps of earth and masonry and molten metal.

quantity used in the same time on the Somme. Instead of 6,000 an hour they discharged over 12,000. As a consequence the British captured four times as big an area as they had in a like period of the Somme offensive.

Along the Aisne the French exceeded the British record in quantity of shells used. The strong defenses of the Germans, in the caves and tunnels of the chalk and limestone cliffs, required a tre-

Sir Robert Borden, Premier of Canada, making rousing speech to Canadian fighters at front.

But if the Somme drive outrivalled all previous records, it became a comparatively moderate affair in the light of what took place on the Arras front and along the Aisne in 1917.

It is estimated that the British in the first ten days of their fighting on the Arras front deluged the enemy with 4,000,000 shells, or more than double the

mendous pounding. The French literally shattered the solid rock, and forced the enemy to flee from his quarried shelters as men will flee in the day of God's judgment.

The part played by the over-seas Dominions of Great Britain in the world war is one that will long be remembered to the glory of the British race and the

Anti-Aircraft Gun Used by the Allies Against the Germans.

praise of those free institutions that were cradled in England.

From Canada, Australia, New Zealand and South Africa there was an immediate response. Men of the colonies rallied to the call of the empire. It should be borne in mind that the people of these self-governing dependencies were under no constraint of constitution, law or force to send their sons to Europe, or in any other way to share in the sacrifices of the great conflict. They were as free to choose as was the United States, and they chose at once to stand with the mother country, with France and with Belgium for the cause of liberty against the central autocracies.

The story of Canada's response is characteristic of that of the others. Canada was essentially a non-military country, happy in the security of her own long frontier because of the century of friendly relations that she had enjoyed with her great American neighbor. She had no army—only a few militia battalions.

But when the news came that Belgium had been invaded and that Great Britain was at war with Germany, there flashed across the Atlantic the message "England can count on Canada."

In seven weeks Canada had created a magnificent camp at Valcartier, near the ancient city of Quebec, and was gathering the nucleus of as fine and as fit a little army as fought on any front in the four years of war.

The government's first call was for 20,000 men. It got 40,000, and the first contingent sailed from the Gaspe Basin on October 3, two months after the war began, numbering 33,000 picked men.

British Tommies returning from the trenches on the Flanders front after several days of fighting.

Collision of this vessel, the S. S. Imo, with the S. S. Mont Blanc caused the Great Halifax disaster.

Indescribable horrors and ruin caused by great Halifax explosion. This most remarkable photo tells the story of suffering and misery caused by the great Halifax explosion with graphic realism.

A period of training was necessary in England, but four months from the day of departure a Canadian division landed in France and was sent to the Flanders front.

From that hour to the end of the war Canada always had a place in the line. To her credit stands one brilliant victory after another and many a stout defense.

Langemarck and St. Julien are names on the Canadian honor roll. It was there that the sons of the Maple Leaf saved the day when the enemy, in April 1915, broke thru the line of the French colonial troops by the use of gas. Canada closed the gap, and, at terrific price held the enemy at bay for over 72 hours until reenforcements could arrive.

In the battle of the Somme the names of Courcelette and the Regina redoubt are remembered among the names of places that are forever identified with Canadian courage.

The taking of Vimy Ridge will be one of the great and often told stories in the history of the Dominion.

It was the Canadians, who, after other troops had tried for weeks to capture Passchendaele, northeast of Ypres, did the job and came back from victory a mere tattered and wounded remnant.

Canada, by voluntary enlistment and conscription, raised an army of about 500,000 men. Her population is barely more than 8,000,000. An army of like proportion in the United States would number over 10,000,000.

Australia did even better in proportion to population, and Australian troops were abreast of the Canadians in the bravery and daring of their efforts for freedom. In the early stages of the war they were mainly engaged in defending Egypt from Turk attack and holding tribesmen of the desert in check.

Their campaigns on the Gallipoli peninsula, in which the New Zealanders were their comrades, brought them undying renown. The world remembers them as the men who fought naked to the waist, in cotton knee breeches and bare legs, and fought with the fury of demons, and the courage of young gods.

Armenians defeated Turks in the siege of Van. The Turks were compelled to withdraw after a heavy loss inflicted by the Armenians.

On many a western front sector the Australians did magnificent service. The demoralized retreat of the enemy from the Amiens front in the late summer of 1918 is ascribed to the work of these sinewy giants from the antipodes. It is said that their habit of raiding the enemy trenches in broad daylight, often while the German soldiers were eating their noon-day meal, completely unnerved the foe, and made him yield easily when the main counter attack was launched.

South African troops participated in the west front fighting, but the great work of South Africa was done in conquering the German colonies in Africa.

No less loyal than the self-governing colonies was India—still the domain of alien rule. Her turbaned sons took Bagdad and helped to take Jerusalem; they redeemed Mesopotamia and Syria; they were represented on every front, and everywhere with honor to themselves.

"The most daring adventure in naval history": The attack on Zeebrugge. In this picture is visualized the s
history." In the foreground is the Vindictive, which had been fitted with prows to land men on the great half-
to block the channel, are seen in the distance. The Thetis came first, steaming into a tornado of shell-fire fro
in the mud and blown up. The Iphigenia was also beached, according to plan, on the eastern side, her engines
the defenders and the flash of the British and German guns made the dark and artificially fog-laden scene spe

ttack on the Mole on April 22, which Admiral Sir Cyprian Bridge describes as the "most daring adventure in naval he Mersey ferry boats Iris and Daffodil being shown at each end of her. The three cement-laden cruisers, designed batteries ashore. The Intrepid, smoking like a volcano, and with all her guns blazing, followed, and was sunk ing to hold her in position till she became bedded well down at the bottom. The searchlights and star shells of ehold.

Man or Beast? Masked Dispatch Riders Pick a Safe Road. English Advance Scouts Consulting Road Plans. Masked Dispatch Riders on the Salonica Front Well Guarded from the Fumes of Bulgar Gas Shells, Examining a Map in Order to Pick Out a Safe Road Back to Headquarters.

# Russia's Tragic Story

## CHAPTER VII

RUSSIA AT FIRST SUCCESSFUL — HINDENBURG STAYS THE RUSSIAN ARMIES — RUSSIA RETREATS — VON MACKENSEN VICTORIOUS — RUSSIAN OFFICIALS' TREACHERY — RUSSIAN REVOLUTION TAKES PLACE — KERENSKY BECOMES LEADER — KERENSKY DEPOSED — TROTZKY AND LENINE IN POWER — RUSSIA MAKES SEPARATE PEACE.

Russia came into the war as an autocracy. She left by the wide gateways of anarchy, along a road lurid with flame and crimson with blood.

Imperial Russia was actuated by the desire to prevent the extension of Imperial Prussia's sway to the Balkans, Constantinople and the regions that lie beyond.

Always the eyes of Russia had been on Constantinople. She was a mighty empire whose coasts in Europe were washed by the waters of land-locked seas, or, in the north, were barred by the Arctic ice for long months in every year. For her developing life she needed better access to the rest of the world. It seemed intolerable to her that the Dardanelles should be controlled by Turkey, apt at any moment to become the tool of some unfriendly or rival power, and thus the warden who would lock the only door thru which her mighty neighbor could emerge from the Black Sea.

On the Black Sea was the great Russian port of Odessa, the port where the vast harvests of southern and southwestern Russia—the incomparably rich black soil country—were gathered for shipment thruout the world. Thus the freedom of the Dardanelles was vital to the life of Russia. Desire to get Constantinople, or at least to keep it from German control, was more than a mere desire for empire. It was prompted by the fundamental principle of self-preservation.

There were some differences of opinion in the military councils of Russia when the war began as to whether the armies should advance across Poland and attack Germany, or whether the Vistula should be held as a line of defense, while the attack was made on East Prussia and Galicia, to the north and to the south of Poland.

This latter idea prevailed. It was decided to hold the Warsaw-Ivangorod fortified line of the Vistula, while an advance was made across the Baltic provinces, against East Prussia, and thru Bessarabia into Galicia.

Before the Germans had completed their drive thru Belgium the Russians were over the East Prussian frontier. As they advanced against an insufficient defending force the people of the invaded region sent up a loud cry for help, that reached the ears of the conquering armies sweeping toward Paris. It became necessary to send back to the eastern front troops that had been intended to cooperate in the humiliation of France. The Russian giant had moved with swifter strides than the German general staff had believed to be possible, and when it required re-enforcements to stay the threatening disaster on the Marne, they were already far distant, hurrying to check the Slav armies in a remote corner of the empire.

The service of the Russians in the critical hour that held victory or defeat for the western allies should not be forgotten.

They paid a heavy price for their prompt and courageous flank attack on the foe.

On September 1, General Von Hindenburg met them in East Prussia with powerful re-enforcements. It was his first dramatic appearance in the role of deliverer for the German people.

The battle took place at Tannenberg. The Russians were routed, with a loss of 80,000 in killed, wounded and prisoners, and were compelled to make a hasty retreat to their fortified line on the River Niemen.

The Hindenburg victory was hailed with great acclaim in Berlin. It was disappointing news for the allies, but the disappointment was quickly turned to rejoicing by the success on the Marne—a success to which the Slav reverse had contributed materially.

Better fortune attended the Russian invasion of Galicia, where the Austrian armies were early placed upon the defensive. On the day of the defeat at Tannenberg, in East Prussia, the Russians won a great victory over the Austrians at Lemberg. Thousands of the enemy were taken prisoner.

The Austrian demoralization was so great that Berlin became alarmed. At the western end of Galicia stood the city of Cracow, once capital of Poland. It was the gateway into Germany. If the Russians reached Cracow the immensely valuable industrial and mining region of Silesian Germany would be exposed to invasion.

Cleaning Up Sackville Street, Dublin, After Rebellion. It Had Been Shelled by Field Artillery.

Vienna was urged to strengthen its armies and exert a supreme effort to check the Slav advance. But the Russians could not be held at Lemberg, nor yet at the San river, seventy miles further west, where the Austrians made a desperate stand against them.

On September 7, as the German army

was falling back to the Aisne in France, the Russians routed the Austrians again at Ravaruska. A little more than a week later they invested the great Galician fortress of Przemysl. Leaving besieged by their troops they pressed forward and occupied Jaroslav on September 23.

With these important strategic points either controlled or held, they advanced to the Donajec river, that crosses Galicia from north to south, and, by the end of the month, had pushed their vanguards to within cannon range of Cracow.

Here they were content to rest for the time, while they spread out along the Carpathians, that separate Galicia from Hungary, in an attempt to get possession of the chief mountain passes debouching on the Hungarian plains. Here and there they actually penetrated the barrier range and reached the plains, occasioning consternation in Buda Pest, capital of Hungary.

Thus, two months after the beginning of the war, the Russians had conquered Galicia, and were menacing Germany and Hungary.

Early in October the Austrians began a series of counter attacks. German troops had been sent to their aid, and with the better trained soldiers of their great ally they were able to make appreciable progress.

The Russians were driven from the Uzsok pass in the Carpathians and compelled to abandon Przemysl. The capture of Jaroslav followed and the Russian armies fell back in eastern Galicia beyond the San.

A great battle developed along the San in the middle of October. It lasted for days in which fortunes varied. Gradually the Russians gained the upper hand. The Austrians attempted a flank attack thru Bukowina, but before it could threaten seriously the Slav line the Aus-

For this "military purpose" the Germans dropped bombs on England. The end of a perfect air raid by the German air men on England. The baby victims and women are being buried.

trians collapsed on the San, and the Russians re-entered Jaroslav. Six days later Przemysl was again besieged, and remained surrounded by the Russian forces until its capture in the following March. By the middle of November the Russians were once more on the outskirts of Cracow.

established a strong line across Galicia, protecting the rear of their forces in the Carpathians. A long series of operations then began in the mountains—battles in deep snows and zero temperatures—in which the Russians gradually forced their way into the passes. On March 22 they captured Przemysl, and under the im-

London air raid. Mother and son inspecting their home. A mother and her little son have returned home from a visit and this mass of debris greets their eyes.

Hungary was again raided thru the mountain passes, and the Austrians were driven from Bukowina.

Germany was forced to send additional aid to her ally. With this help the siege of Cracow was lifted, and the Russians retired to the Donajec river, where they

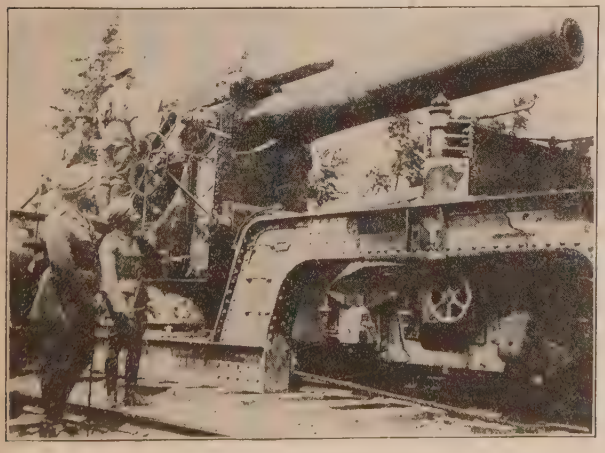
pulse of this success swept forward on Hungary with Buda Pest as its goal.

The alarmed Austrians rallied again and again to defend their frontier, fighting stubbornly for every yard of ground, and then, with the coming of May appeared Mackensen on the Donajec.

The German offensive against Russia was marked by three great efforts to conquer Poland, sieze the Vistula defenses and crush the armies of the Czar.

The first of these began in the opening days of October, 1914, with Von Hindenburg in command, fresh from his victory over the Russians at Tannenberg, in East Prussia. The German armies, admirably equipped, swept across Poland to the Vistula. They reached the outskirts of Warsaw and Ivangorod by October 17. Aviators dropped proclamations in Warsaw calling for the surrender of the city. The big guns began to shell its fortifications. Then re-enforcements suddenly attacked the left flank of the Teutons, driving it back and compelling a retreat all along the line. In perfect order Von Hindenburg's armies withdrew, moving too swiftly for the pursuing Russians, who followed to the German frontier and actually crossed into Posen at one point.

This Russian success was brief. Von Hindenburg struck again. Early in November he began a movement against both flanks of the Russian army. One came down the south bank of the Vistula from the East Russian fortress of Thorn; the other advanced northeast from Czenstochowa, whither it had retired after its failure at Ivangorod. The Russians were



The Maharaja of Patiala visited the Western front. This photo shows the Maharaja of Patiala inspecting one of the big camouflaged British guns on the Western front.

First picture of the actual surrender of Jerusalem on December 9th, 1917. The only photo taken on the morning of December 9th, when Jerusalem surrendered.

in serious peril of being outflanked and cut off from Warsaw and the Vistula. They fell back toward Lodz. Here, at the moment that threatened their destruction, re-enforcements from Warsaw suddenly attacked the flank and rear of Von Hindenburg's encircling movement, and the battle of Lodz began. The tables were turned. The Germans were in peril of extinction. An entire army corps surrendered. But aid was rushed to them and they cut their way out of the Slav net. The Russians fell back from Lodz, and ultimately took up positions along the Bzura river, twenty miles west of Warsaw. Thus began a long trench siege paralleling the Vistula from west of Warsaw to the Galician boundary.

For months there was bitter fighting along the entrenched front in Poland, and

campaign and counter campaign in the Baltic provinces and East Prussia. The Russians met disaster at the Mazurian lakes, but carried out a sweeping offensive in Galicia and the Carpathians, already described, and it was this success that brought upon them the third and greatest German drive.

General Von Mackensen came upon the scene as the leader of this final attack upon the armies of the czar. He massed the greatest concentration of artillery that had been seen up to that time on the eastern front against the Russian Donajec line. On May 3, 1916, he opened fire with all his guns.

The Russian front was shattered. Mackensen captured 30,000 prisoners and drove his enemy in hasty retreat eastward. They crossed the San, abandoned Przemysl, after an effort to rally and hold it, and fell back on Lemberg. They lost Lemberg on June 22, and a week later Mackensen turned his attack north, behind the fortified line of the Vistula.

Meantime Von Hindenburg was pressing the battle hard in the Baltic provinces. By the middle of July a tremendous struggle was in progress on a 900 mile front, with Warsaw and Ivangorod as the main objectives of the Austro-German forces. They fell on August 5 and 6. By the end of August the Germans had reached Brest Litovsk.

A busy scene on a road just behind the lines. The company at the right are resting prior to taking up their march again.

The czar suddenly came from Petrograd to the battle front, removed the Grand Duke Nicholas from command of the armies, and placed himself at their

was some failure on the part of the command, and the opportunity was lost. The Turks were given time to rally and obtain re-enforcements. As a result of this failure General Sir Ian Hamilton was recalled, and Major General Munro sent to succeed him.

But the change in command did not greatly help the situation. In December 1915 it was decided to abandon the campaign, and the British were withdrawn from the Suvla bay region. The following January the remainder of the allied forces bade farewell to the peninsula, leaving behind many a wooden cross to mark the graves of heroes who had died in vain.

Concurrently with the Gallipoli campaign the British had begun a campaign in Mesopotamia and had been compelled to defend their Egyptian front.

The Mesopotamian campaign opened in November 1914, when Basra was seized at the northern end of the Persian Gulf. The British were impelled by the need of preventing Germany securing access to the Gulf, where the establishment of a naval base would have been a direct threat to India. They were also intent upon blocking Germany's road thru Bagdad to Persia. Already German agents were busy in Persia instigating revolt.

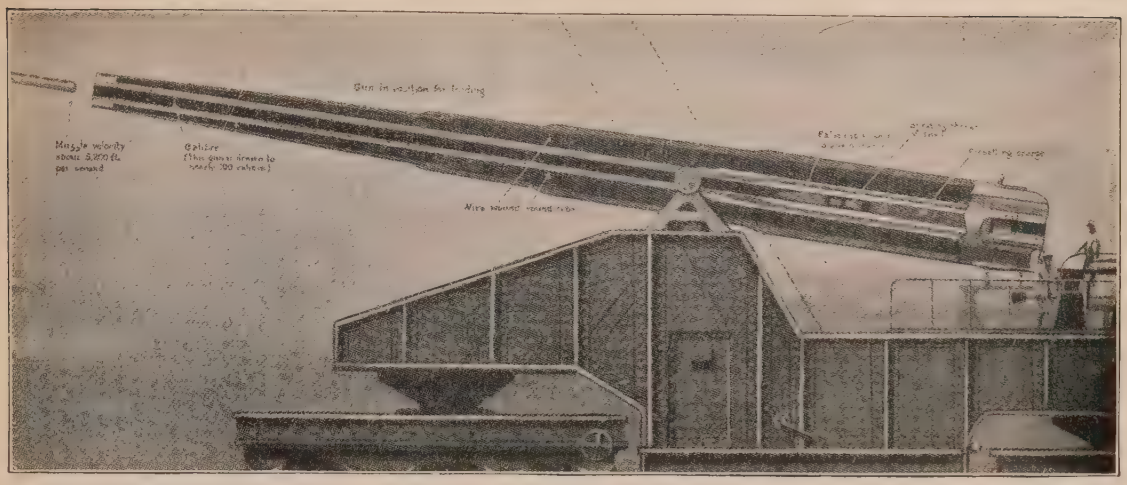
By seizing Basra a base was obtained from which Great Britain could control the Arab tribes, whom Turkey, as Berlin's agent, was attempting to enlist in a "holy war." Operations went slowly at first, but successfully. In November 1915 the British had occupied Kut-el-Amara on the Tigris, about half way north to Bagdad, and General Townshend was nearing the ancient city of the caliphs.

Then came a serious reverse. Within eighteen miles of Bagdad the British were routed by the Turks, and forced to retreat. They fell back to Kut, and there stood. The Turks besieged the city.

A Zeppelin over Paris. A Zeppelin sighted over Paris boulevards. It can be plainly seen in this picture.

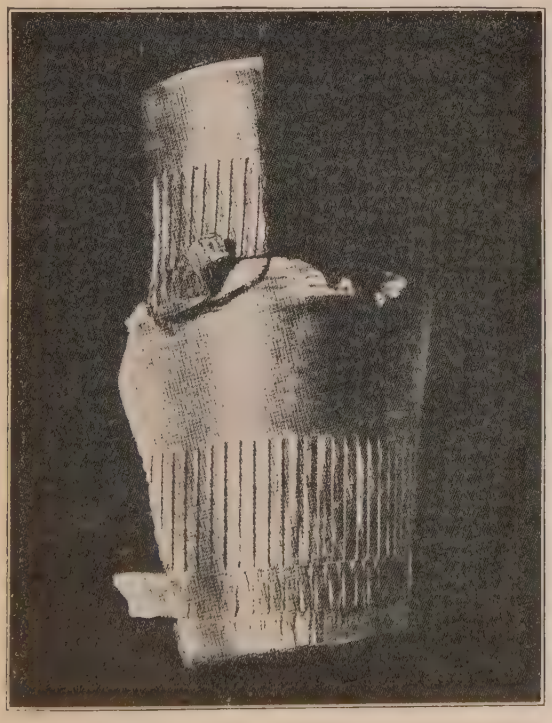
General Aylmer and Sir Percy Lake attempted to reach the city with re-enforcements and raise the siege, but failed before the powerful Sannayat position. On April 29, 1916, after 117 days, General Townshend surrendered to the Turks. His garrison had been starved into submission.

France's Colonial Troops. The colonials in the photograph are going through barbed wire entanglements.



Heavy Gun Supposed to Have Been the Type to Shell Paris, a Distance of 75 Miles.

It was a humiliating termination to the first stage of a promising campaign. But the British are not easily daunted. In the following December, with a new army under the command of General Maude, they resumed the campaign. On February 24, 1917, they re-entered Kut. The Turks were badly demoralized, and the advance against them was continued without interval. On March 11 he entered Bagdad. From that time on the Turk was always in retreat. Expeditionary forces drove many miles north beyond Bagdad, and northwest along the Euphrates toward Aleppo.



Copper bands on the gigantic shell used in the bombarding of Paris. This section was found in a street of Paris after a shell struck nearby.

In the meantime General Allenby was conducting his Palestine campaign. The Turks had been routed on the Egyptian front, and the British had crossed the desert of Sinai, and entered the Holy Land on its southern border.

On March 27 they met the main forces of the enemy near Gaza and defeated them with heavy losses. For some months thereafter progress was slow. Roads had to be constructed and communications maintained across the desert with the base in Egypt. All the fresh water for the British army was brought across the desert in conduits.

In the autumn of 1917, however, General Allenby got his movement under way. Beersheba was taken on October 31. Gaza and Jaffa, the latter the Mediterranean port of Jerusalem, fell in November. As Christmas drew near the world awaited with expectancy news that

Big French Railway Gun. Here is one of the big railway guns which did excellent work on the Western front. These mobile guns could be shifted to any part of the line and had been engaged in hurling the French lines and keeping back the Germans.

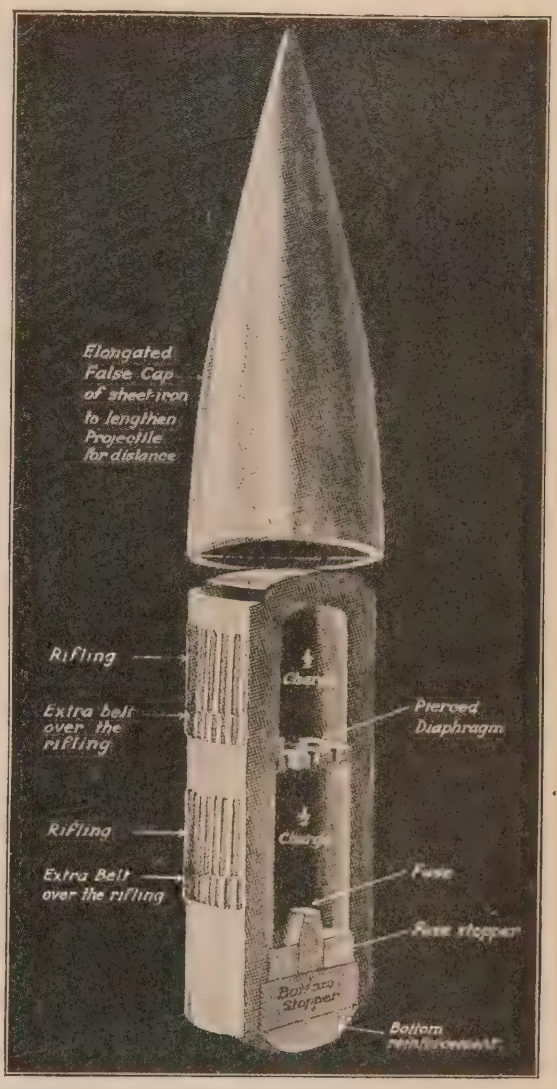
the Holy City itself had returned to Christian occupation and control. It was thought General Allenby might time its capture for Christmas day, but being more of a soldier than a sentimentalist, he took it at the first opportunity and entered it on foot, in modest recognition of its sacred character, on December 11.

The fall of Jerusalem marked the beginning of the end for Turkey in Syria. During 1918 General Allenby continued his northward progress, slowly overcoming natural obstacles and enemy opposition. Aleppo, the gateway to Asia Minor, was his goal. Once at this important junction point, where the railroad branches to go east toward Bagdad and south toward Mecca, he knew the whole of Syria and Mesopotamia would be in Christian hands.

Early in October his long journey ended. He reached Aleppo, and the Turkish armies still left in northern Mesopotamia were cut off from Constantinople. On the last day of October Turkey surrendered. Thus the Armenians and Syrians were freed from the tyranny of the Ottoman empire, but not before untold thousands of them had suffered horrors that cannot be named, and multitudes had perished from starvation and abuse.

In the indictment of Germany must be charged not only the atrocities she perpetrated on the people of Belgium and France, but the brutal massacres in Armenia, carried out by her vassal ally without a word of protest or a restraining finger from Berlin.

The part that Greece played in the war was not understood by many people. There were those who charged the allied nations with treating Greece as Germany had treated Belgium. Here are the facts:




A diagram of the mammoth shell, probably the one used in the immense gun located in St. Gobain woods which bombarded Paris a distance of seventy-five miles. The destruction caused by these gigantic shells was very great, and the Parisians were continually in a state of terror until the Allies made a concentrated attack and drove the German forces beyond the Paris range.

Germany violated a treaty to enter Belgium.

The allies entered Greece to keep a treaty.

Germany entered Belgium by violence.

The allies entered Greece by invitation of the constitutional government, of which Venizelos was then premier.

Types of French Troops Who Entered Germany to Keep the Enemy in Order Until Peace Was Declared.

Germany killed Belgians and burned their towns.

The allies respected the lives and property of the Greeks.

Germany bled Belgium white with taxation.

The allies kept Greece alive with loans.

Great Britain, France and Russia were the three powers that gave Greece its independence and placed the father of Constantine on the throne. They were obligated by treaty to preserve the dynasty and the constitutional government of Greece. The treaty further provided that they might land troops on Greek soil by common agreement among themselves in order to fulfill their treaty obligations.

When Constantine refused to recognize the vote of the people that returned the Venizelist government after its forced resignation he over-threw constitutional government. This fact justified the presence of the allies in Greece, aside from their invitation, and aside from the fact that they were there to fulfill for Greece her treaty pledge to Serbia, which Constantine refused to keep.

When Constantine fled from Greece he knew that evidence of his base treachery had been discovered. He was the conscious tool of Germany. His plea to be permitted to remain neutral was a dishonest plea. He was never neutral.

Capt. George Guynemer, the leading French aviator, and Lieut. Vosse, (in oval), a leading German aviator, meet death at almost the same time.

In the last year of the war the Greeks, freed from the incubus of a Berlin-controlled monarch, joined with the Serbs, Italians, French and British in driving the Bulgar from the soil of Macedonia. The spirit of Greece was always with the allies.

French Troops Going Over the Top and Entering the Enemy's Wire Entanglements.

Americans Cutting Wire Entanglements Prior to a Drive.

Heavy Artillery Used by Allies on Western Front

WHEN THE WHINE OF "KAMERAD!" LIFTS ABOVE THE CLAMOR.

In this subterranean retreat a group of the enemy believed themselves secure.

BRITISH MACHINES CHASING THE GERMAN SCARLET SCOUTS.
Our fighting planes have intercepted and caused to turn tail a squadron of German Scarlet Scouts.

Chateau-Thierry Liberated. This is one of the first photographs to arrive in this country of the battle-scarred Chateau-Thierry, where the Americans successfully stopped and defeated the Germans in their drive on Paris. The photograph shows women and children who had remained in the town during the occupation of the Germans, walking across the devastated streets.

# The War On The Sea

## CHAPTER IX

BRITISH FLEET MASTER OF SEAS — GERMAN SEA RAIDS STOPPED — U. S. AUGMENTS BRITISH SEA FORCES — BATTLE OFF JUTLAND — U-BOAT WARFARE — LUSITANIA SUNK.

In no war since the beginning of the world has the sea played a part so important as in this war.

Consider a moment the position of the central empires, and then the position of the allied nations.

There was no fighting front of decisive significance that Germany and Austria-Hungary could not reach by land, and there was none, except the Mesopotamian and Syrian fronts, more than 500 miles from Berlin.

The central powers and their vassal allies had land communication. The transport of troops and materials could be done wholly by rail, and without risk of attack by the enemy, or of any enemy interference.

For example in shifting her armies back and forth between the French and Russian fronts Germany ran no danger of loss thru hostile efforts. She could move men and guns to the Macedonian and Mesopotamian fronts without considering the possibility that her enemies would block their road of travel or destroy them en route.

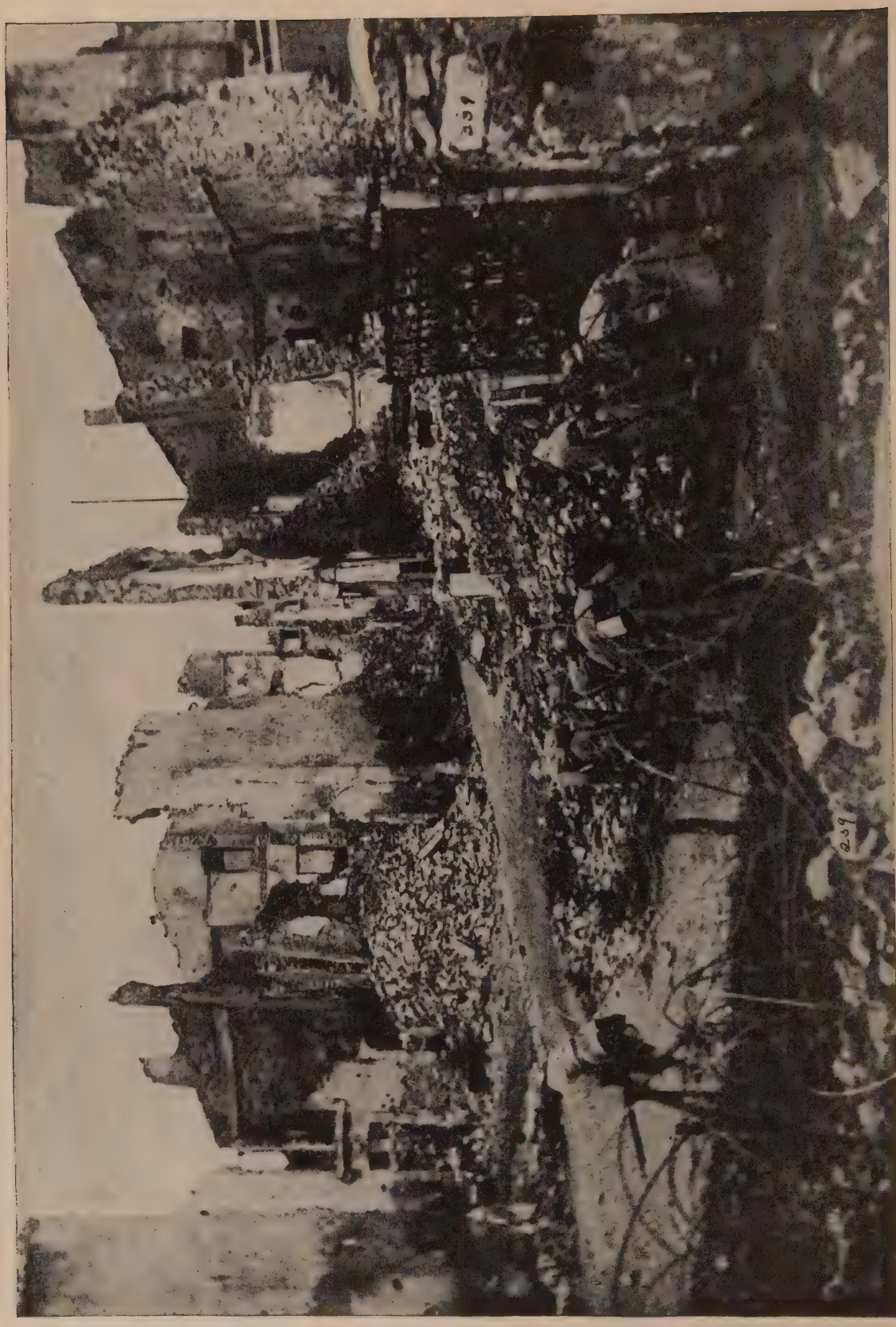
But Great Britain could not reach any front without crossing seas or channels. Every man she sent to war, every ton of food and munitions, had to be protected against submarine attack. In order to keep contact with her Russian ally Great Britain had to travel thousands of miles around the North Cape of Scandinavia, to Archangel. To reach the Macedonian front she had to travel the length of the most dangerous of all the seven seas—the Mediterranean. If the Mediterranean had been created for the express purpose of making things easy for the U-boats, its configuration could not have been improved upon. In order to reach the Mesopotamian front Great Britain had to risk these same waters, and continue thru the Red Sea to the Persian Gulf—a distance of 9,000 miles.

Half a million soldiers came 3,000 miles across the Atlantic to fight with their British comrades, and were kept continually supplied by transport between Canada and the front for four years. Half a million came round Good Hope or thru the Suez from Australia and New Zealand, and were in like manner provided.

France sent troops to the east and risked the perils of the sea. Italy, washed by the Mediterranean, was dependent upon sea transport for food and coal and almost every other essential.

And all these countries relied upon America as a source of supply, and upon the Atlantic as a line of communication with the food, and munitions and raw materials of the American market.

Finally, when the great crisis of the war developed, and the life and death struggle on the plains of Picardy and the banks of the Marne was being watched breathlessly by the world, the whole issue depended



French Scout Troops entering Laon, after the German retirement.

upon whether America could get 1,500,000 men across the sea in time.

It is evident, therefore, that the sea constituted one of the biggest problems the allies had to face. They had to make the sea safe for transport and serviceable as a line of communication. If they failed in this the war was lost.

As obviously the sea presented to Germany her greatest opportunity. It was the most vulnerable point at which to strike her enemies.

Hence the struggle for the sea became, in many respects, the supreme struggle of the war.

In this struggle Great Britain played the part that saved the world from a triumph of Prussianism. Weak as she was numerically and in material equipment for land warfare at the beginning of the war, on sea she was mighty, and she moved to the defense of civilization and the great ocean highways with power and promptitude.

It happened that the British fleet was mobilized for maneuvers when the war cloud gathered in Europe. Instead of demobilizing it slipped quietly up to a rendezvous in northern waters, and awaited developments. Thus it was ready the instant war was declared to meet and fight the enemy.

The enemy, who probably entertained hopes of a swift descent upon the shores of Great Britain and a sweeping campaign by fast cruisers against enemy commerce, modified his plans. He did not dare to challenge the British fleet to do battle.

French soldiers moving up to the front. This British official photograph shows a detachment of stocky French poilus marching up to the front lines to meet the Huns.

Several enemy cruisers were at large when the war began, notably the Emden. These engaged in raiding tactics. They sank many thousands of tons of allied shipping, ignoring wholly the requirement

of international law that their prizes should be taken into port to have their status determined by a prize court.

However the commanders of these raiders were humane. They made provision for the safety of passengers and crew, and this consideration entitled them to the respect which even the allies felt for their daring and courage. Had Germany confined herself to such operations as the Emden conducted she would not have sunk in the eyes of the world to the level of national degradation that now marks her.

But the raiders were pursued and captured one after another. An Australian cruiser, the Sydney, ran down the Emden off Cocos Island in the Indian ocean on November 9, 1914.

Prior to this, however, a German squadron, under Admiral von Spee, encountered a British squadron of lighter armament in the Pacific, off Coronel on the coast of Chile. Rear-admiral Craddock was in command of the British squadron. He was maneuvered into an unfortunate position. After a courageous fight against odds in which he went down with his flagship, the Good Hope, the rest of his squadron, excepting the Monmouth, managed to disengage itself. The Monmouth followed the Good Hope to the bottom.

Shell from big German gun kills many in Paris nursery. One of the shells fired by the big German gun in the forest of St. Gobans, a distance of about eighty miles from Paris, fell in a nursery and created the awful havoc shown above.

This was the first important naval encounter in the war, and it naturally gave great satisfaction to Germany and her friends, of whom, at this time, she had not a few in America and thruout the world. The von Spee victory was a blow at the supremacy of Britain on the sea.

A month later, on December 8, 1914, von Spee was cruising north on the oppo-

site side of the continent. He was looking for victims in the region of the Falkland Islands—British islands off the coast of Patagonia.

Concealed in one of the deep harbors of the Falkland group lay a British cruiser squadron under the command of Vice-admiral Sturdee. It was waiting for the Germans, and as they steamed northward past the islands, it suddenly sallied out and attacked. Before the enemy fully realized what was happening he had lost his flagship, the Scharnhorst, and the battle cruisers Gneisenau, Leipzig and Nurnberg.

That incident just about finished the surface efforts of the German navy. Such activities as were later engaged in by German battleships took place in waters immediately adjacent to Germany or Great Britain. The waging of war on allied commerce was left to the U-boat.

The story of the U-boat's depredations is too long to tell in detail. The history of the war, exhaustively related, will need a large volume devoted exclusively to the U-boat.

It became, at the climax of its destructiveness, the most serious peril the allies had to face, and, in the end, it was the utter undoing of Germany.

French warriors on horseback. General Joffre had kept these and nearly all his other mounted men from within rifle range of the Germans. These men, who were photographed while reconnoitering in Somme region, were as fine cavalry as the world ever saw. In their two years of service back of the trenches they had time to master the technique of their kind of warfare.

The U-boats had enjoyed several notable successes in the opening months of the war. A number of British war ships had been sunk, and there was no little uneasiness lest Germany should be able to nibble down the strength of Britain's navy ship by ship.

On September 5, the light cruiser Pathfinder was sunk by the U-2 at the entrance to the Firth of Forth; on Septem-

From left to right: Marshal Foch, General Pershing, Madame Dubail, Marshal Joffre, General Dubail and Son. Gens. Pelletier and Galopin in rear to either side of Marshal Joffre.

ber 22 the U-boats had a field day. They caught the armoured cruiser Aboukir in the North Sea just after she had parted from her sister ships the Hogue and the Cressy. The Aboukir was seen to be in distress by the other cruisers, and they went to her aid. This was exactly what the enemy had hoped would happen. As they neared the sinking ship each of them received in her hull a torpedo from the hiding submarine. All three cruisers went down with the loss of 1,400 lives. The cruisers were old and almost obsolete. The loss of life was the most serious phase of the incident. Germany was jubilant. She saw the destruction of the British fleet by "attrition". The U-boat commander responsible for the coup—Otto Weddigen—was decorated and became a national hero.

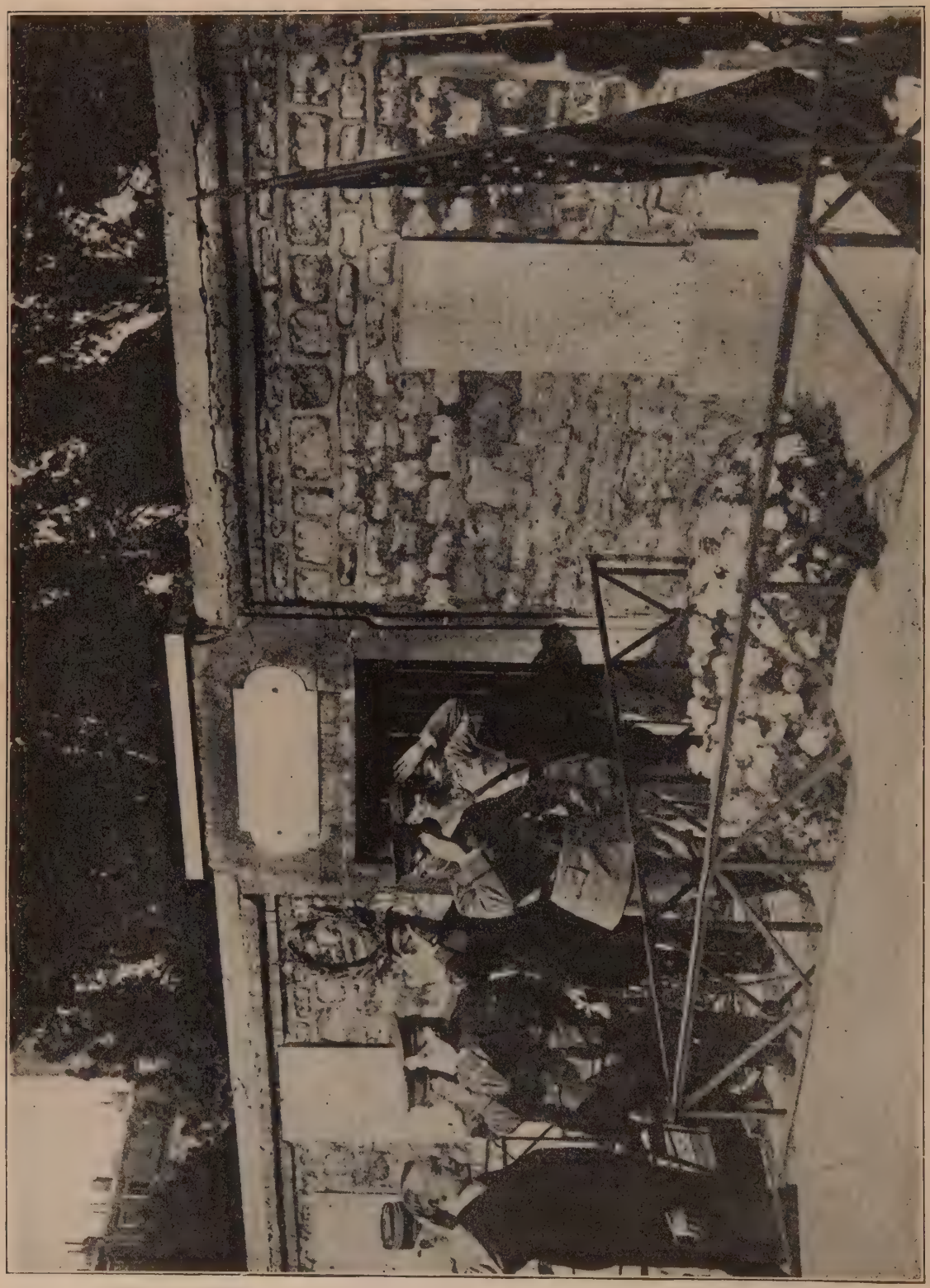
But the British had learned a lesson. Instructions were given that in case of a ship being torpedoed other ships must not go to the rescue, but must take every precaution to ensure their own safety. Furthermore plans were considered and agreed upon for protecting the navy from the war of attrition without in any measure lessening its efficacy as a menace and a blockading force against the enemy.

Losses to battle ships in North Sea and Atlantic waters became rare events. The enemy's successes were largely confined to the Mediterranean, where the problems of defense were exceedingly difficult, and the treachery of the King of Greece made murder easy for the U-boat.

Germany soon realized that she had a long and probably disappointing task ahead of her in an effort to pick off the great British fleet one ship at a time. Her naval experts began to turn their attention more definitely to the destruction of allied commerce. This was wise policy. To attack the allied lines of communication and cut off the armies in France, Macedonia, Egypt and Mesopotamia from their sources of food supply and munitions meant to compel the capitulation of the allied countries.

Marshal Petain, the Defender of Verdun.

Germany had scattered mines in the waters adjacent to the British Isles. German ships carrying neutral flags had engaged in this murderous work. It was a clear violation of international law. No nation had the right to make the common highways of the sea unsafe for neutral shipping and noncombatant merchant vessels of the enemy by the indiscriminate placing of mines.



Gen. Pershing and Allied Leaders at the Grave of Lafayette.

As a consequence of this action Great Britain in November 1914 announced that a safe channel for neutral shipping would be maintained in the North Sea for all ships entering and leaving it by the Straits of Dover. That meant British ships would sweep up enemy mines and guarantee safety in the swept and guarded waters. Ships taking the northern passage did so at their own peril.

safety of crew and passengers. Neutral ships were told that they ran danger in entering the zone, as a result of "incidents inevitable in sea warfare."

That was the beginning of Germany's great U-boat campaign to starve England into submission. Predictions were made in Germany that England would be compelled to yield in a comparatively short time.

Kemmel Hill Before the Germans Attacked. This was the French commander's post on Mount Kemmel battle of April 24, when the Germans stormed and captured part of the hill.

Von Tirpitz characterized this action of Great Britain as the closing of the North Sea to neutrals, and hinted at reprisals. The reprisals came in the announcement of the German government on February 4, 1915, that the waters surrounding Great Britain and Ireland were a war region, and that every enemy merchant ship found in these waters on and after February 18 would be destroyed, without guarantee of warning or provision for the

Further it was the beginning of the long controversy between the United States and Germany over her attempt to make piracy and murder legitimate on the high seas. The declaration of U-boat warfare was followed almost at once by President Wilson's note warning Germany that America would hold her to "strict accountability" for offenses against the law of nations and humanity.

To continue the story of the U-boat

war in detail would be merely to relate sinking after sinking, crime after crime against the innocent and the helpless. From the torpedoing of merchant ships without warning the Germans passed to the diabolical practise of shelling open life-boats with women and children in them.

No brutality was too terrible, and the brutal deeds were met with rejoicing and approval by the German people. To this hour no voice has been raised in Germany

"Whoever cannot prevail upon himself to approve from the bottom of his heart the sinking of the Lusitania—whoever cannot conquer his sense of the gigantic cruelty to unnumbered perfectly innocent victims, and give himself up to honest delight at this victorious exploit of German defensive power—him we judge to be no true German."

It was such utterances as these that later arose to refute the arguments of men who tried to draw distinction between the

Real dogs of war on duty in the trenches. People often talked of the "dogs of war" but the dogs they thought of then were far different from these real dogs in the trenches.

to condemn the massacres of the seas, or to regret such offenses as the torpedoing of the Lusitania and the Sussex.

When the Lusitania was sunk, with a loss of 1,154 lives, a medal was struck in Germany to commemorate the occasion, and Pastor D. Baumgarten, a prominent German clergyman, in the course of an address on the Sermon on the Mount, declared:

German rulers and the German people.

After the sinking of the Lusitania more notes were exchanged between the United States and Germany, and America began a long season of waiting for an "overt" act on the part of the enemy—an act of open and deliberate hostility.

In August the White Star steamer Arabic was sunk, struck by a torpedo without warning of any kind. There

were 424 persons on board of whom 26 were Americans. While the lives of all were endangered only 30 were lost, of whom two were Americans.

After some argument Count von Bernstorff, on behalf of his government, disavowed the sinking of the Arabic, and assured President Wilson that a recurrence of like incidents was considered "out of the question."

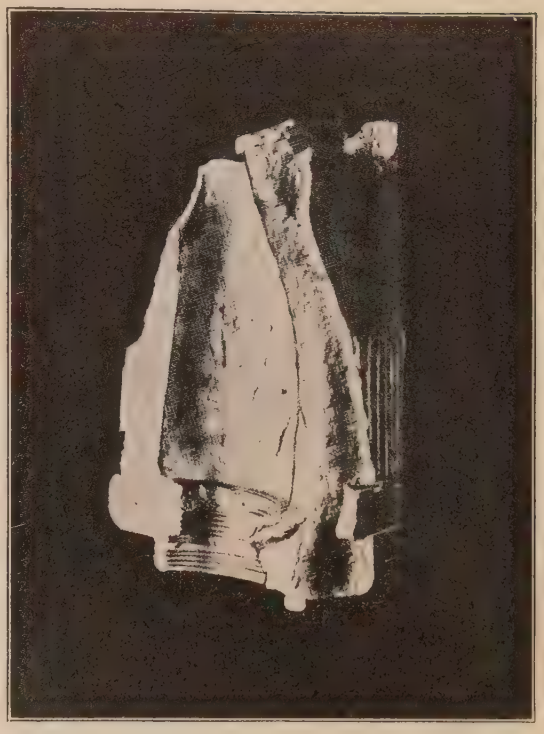
On February 9, 1916, Germany sent her last note on the Lusitania affair, in which she declared she was willing to pay a full indemnity for the lives of American victims—as tho that were possible—and repeated the pledge that "unarmed merchantmen shall not be sunk without warning and unless the safety of the passengers and crew can be assured."

And a little less than a month later came the sinking of the Sussex, with a loss of some 80 lives. The Sussex was a channel steamer carrying passengers from Folkstone to Dieppe. She had 25 Americans on board, some of whom were injured. The U-boat attacked without any warning and made no effort to save the victims of its torpedo.

Germany attempted to evade the Sussex issue. She suggested a mine might have caused the disaster; she raised the point that the Sussex was armed, or that she was a mine-layer or a warship of some sort. These assertions and allegations were all disproved.

President Wilson on April 26 sent Germany a note that practically informed her she had been caught in repeated lies and deceit, and concluded with the ominous declaration:

"If the Imperial German Government should not now proclaim and make effective renunciation of its present methods of submarine warfare against passenger and cargo ships, the United States Government can have no other choice than to break off completely diplomatic relations with the German government."

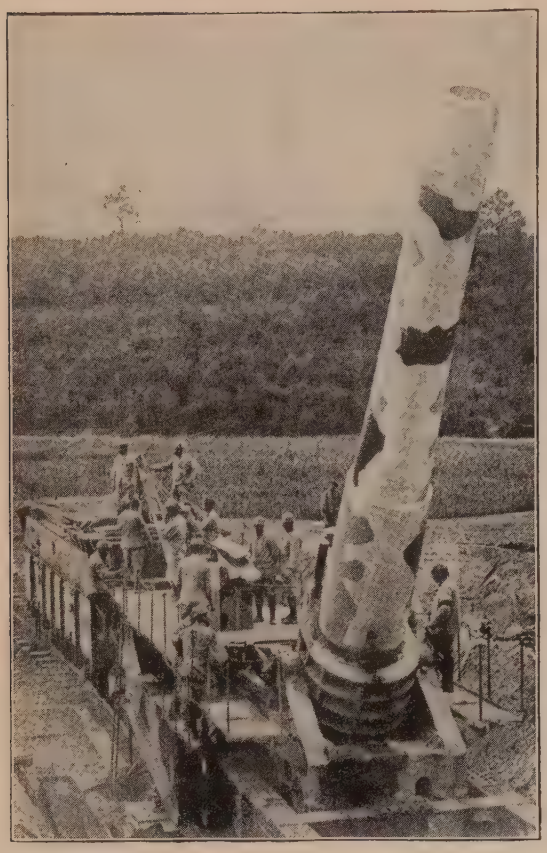


This shows the appearance of some of the fragments of shell found in a street of Paris.

To this Germany replied with the announcement that the German naval forces had received the following orders:

"In accordance with the general principles of visit and search and destruction of merchant vessels recognized by international law, such vessels, both within and without the area declared as a naval war zone, shall not be sunk without warning and without saving human lives, unless these vessels attempt to escape or offer resistance."

At the same time Germany suggested that now the United States should exercise her influence to make the British government observe the rules of international law, and added that if the British government did not follow the "laws of humanity" the German government would feel it was facing a new situation in which it must reserve to itself "complete liberty of decision."



Camouflaged Big Gun. Mounted on a specially constructed railroad carriage, this big French 400 m/m, gun was ready to bang away at the German forces making the drive on the Somme front. It was exceedingly well camouflaged to prevent detection by Boche aerial forces.

The British navy had not occasioned the loss of a single neutral or non-combatant life. Even in battle with German warships it had uniformly done everything in its power to rescue enemy sailors. It had bombed no open ports and sunk no merchantmen. It had most scrupulously observed the rules of visit and search, and the enemy had been given his day in the prize court. Its offense was the effective blockade of Germany at a point remote from the German coast and beyond the reach of the U-boats.

The impudence of the German reply, however, lay in making the fulfillment of her pledges to the United States depend upon the conduct of a third party who had no place in the controversy.

Matters drifted along under this arrangement until the beginning of 1917, and then, as elsewhere narrated, the crisis came and the rupture in diplomatic relations as a result of Germany's proclamation of unrestricted U-boat warfare.

That proclamation was the beginning of a new and serious chapter for the allies. The rate of destruction went up at once. In March, April, May and June of 1917 ships were sunk in such numbers that it looked as if the enemy's intentions might be realized, and the surrender of Great Britain and France forced by starvation.

The United States, entering the war on Good Friday, brought the help of her genius and industry to the problem. Devices were invented for detecting the presence of submarines and for destroying them. The depth bomb began to prove of great value. When the arming of merchantmen failed to lessen the sinking of ships materially, the convoy system was adopted. It proved the most effective method of rendering the U-boat harmless.

Gradually the U-boat was mastered. Allied ship-building efforts gained upon the ship-destroying efforts of the foe. America transported 2,000,000 soldiers to France with practically no losses. By the summer of 1918 the earlier alarm that the central empires might win the war with the submarine was dissipated. Instead it was felt that the submarine could do nothing more than delay the issue.

During the period of the submarine war the British navy had two clashes with the enemy on the high seas. Vice-Admiral Beatty, in command of a British patrolling squadron, encountered a German raiding squadron in the North Sea on January 24, 1915. There was a sharp little fight, in which the enemy battle cruiser Blucher was sunk, and two other of his big ships badly damaged. The British cruisers Lion and Tiger suffered, but were able to make port under their

own steam.

The biggest naval battle of the war occurred off the coast of Denmark on May 31, 1916.

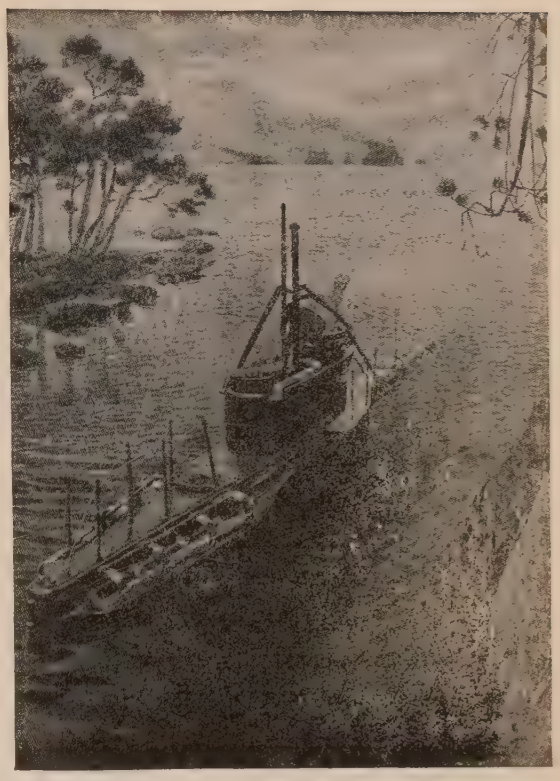
Vice-Admiral Beatty, commanding the battle cruiser squadron, discovered the enemy's high sea fleet steaming north and west in the region of Jutland. It was late in the afternoon, and the weather was hazy, but Beatty at once closed in and gave fight. It was his purpose to engage and hold the foe until the British dreadnaught fleet could arrive on the scene.

The battle raged mightily until darkness set in, and the enemy, realizing his peril, succeeded in slipping away in night and fog and reaching his own sheltered waters behind Helgoland.

The British lost three battle cruisers—the Queen Mary, Indefatigable and Invincible; three armored cruisers—the Defense, Warrior and Black Prince, and eight destroyers. The enemy admitted at the time the loss of one battleship, the Pommern, one battle cruiser, the Lutzow, four cruisers and five destroyers.

When the war ended it developed that his losses had been far heavier than he had admitted or than the British had claimed, and that from May 31, 1916, until the hour of final defeat official Germany knew that its fleet could never again run the risk of meeting the British.

In British naval history, however, no incidents will live longer or redound more loudly to the praise of Britain than the intrepid raids on the submarine bases of Zeebrugge and Ostend, on the Belgian coast. The former took place on the night of April 22-23, 1918. Vice Admiral Sir Roger Keyes directed the daring expedition that undertook to destroy the fortified mole of Zeebrugge and block the channel by which access was had to the canal. Six obsolete British cruisers took part in the enterprise—the Brilliant, Iphigenia, Sirius, Intrepid, Thetis and Vindictive. The last named won great



French Submersible Torpedo-boat Signalling Fleet at Biserta.

glory. She landed storming parties on the mole while being hammered with shells from the enemy shore batteries. A noble wreck she managed to reach port. A few weeks later she ventured forth again, and allowed herself to be sunk at the entrance to the harbor of Ostend.

In all the history of the world there has been no more wonderful spectacle, nor any surrender more utterly humiliating, than that which ended the long struggle upon and beneath the seas.

When in late November 1918, the pride of the German navy, great dreadnaughts, battle cruisers, armored cruisers and destroyers, steamed sullenly across the North Sea and gave themselves up to the waiting fleet of Britain with its allied squadrons of American and French warships, there ended the dream of Wilhelm Hohenzollern, the dream of a vast world empire, mighty on land and sea.

FRANCE
SCALE OF MILES
0 20 40 60 80 100
ENGLISH CHANNEL
BAY OF BISCAY
MEDITERRANEAN SEA
LIGURIAN SEA
Gulf of Lion
Gulf of Genoa
PARIS
Marseille
Bordeaux
Lyon
Nantes
Rouen
Le Havre
Cherbourg
Dijon
Reims
Amiens
Lille
Strasbourg
Nice
Toulon
Hyeres
RIVIERA
ILES D'HYERES
CORSICA
SWITZERLAND
GERMANY
ALSACE
LORRAINE
BELGIUM
BRUSSELS
ANDORRA
Longitude from Greenwich
West
East

# America's Long Patience

## CHAPTER X

AMERICA NEUTRAL — BELGIUM STARVING — GERMAN PLOTS — LUSITANIA SUNK — EXCHANGE OF NOTES — RELATIONS WITH AUSTRIA BROKEN — AMERICA'S ULTIMATUM.

America was slow to discover that she lived in the world rather than in the western hemisphere alone, and that she was neighbor to Europe as well as to Mexico.

When the war began in Europe the American people looked upon it as a strange and tragic madness of monarchs and subject nations, with which they had nothing to do, and could have nothing to do, except as intermediary in an effort to make peace.

Millions of Americans were shocked and outraged by the ruthless treatment of Belgium when Germany hurled herself across the little country's frontier in a frantic effort to get at the throat of France.

Some Americans wanted the United States to protest and even to threaten a declaration of war if Germany persisted in her violation of Belgium's rights and liberty.

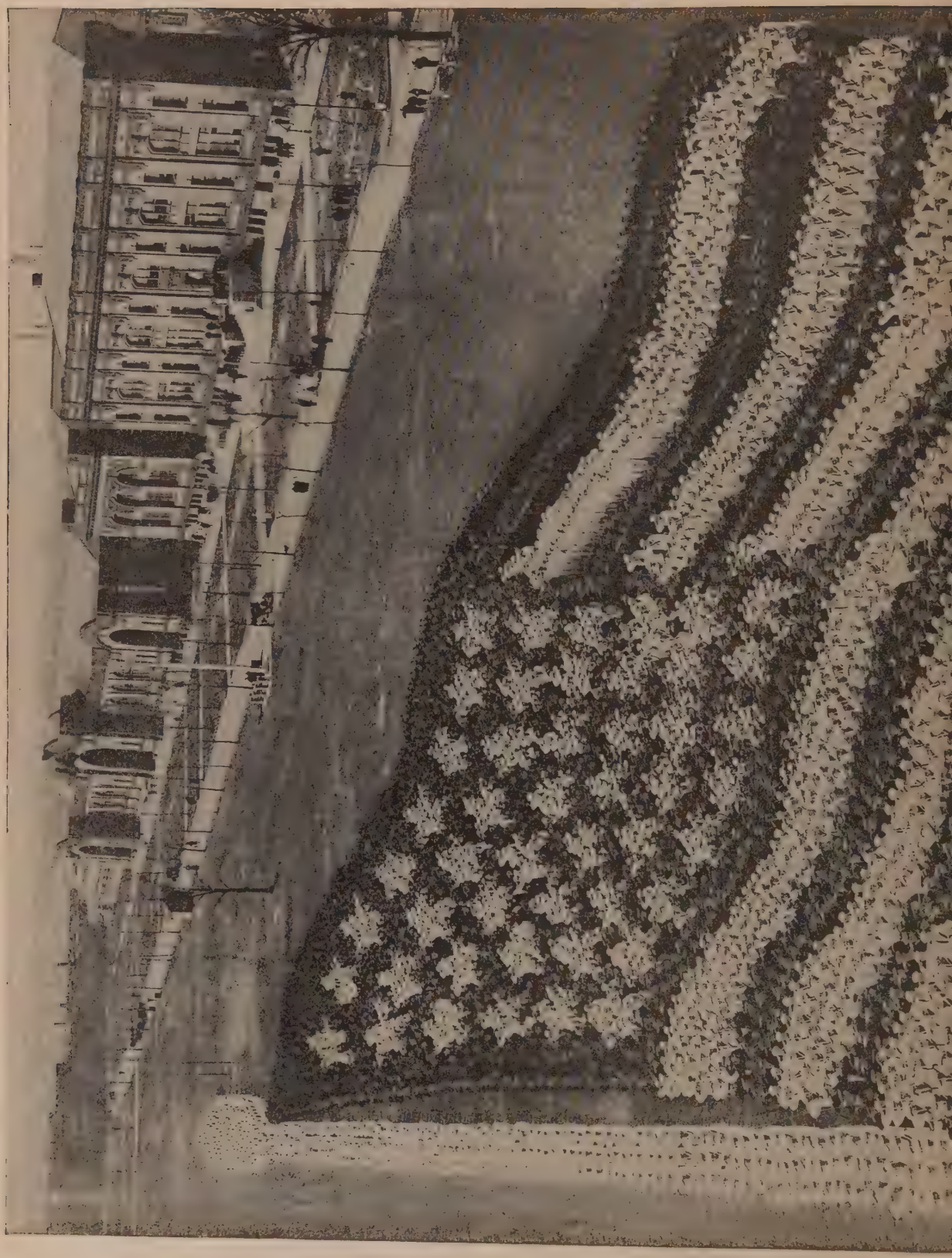
No action was taken by the American government, however, and it is probable the government faithfully reflected the sentiment of a majority of the people, at that time. There was very general sympathy for Belgium, and wide-spread indignation against Germany, but the old tradition that America had no lot or part in the politics and quarrels of Europe obtained thruout the land, and few would have been willing to go beyond sympathy and indignation.

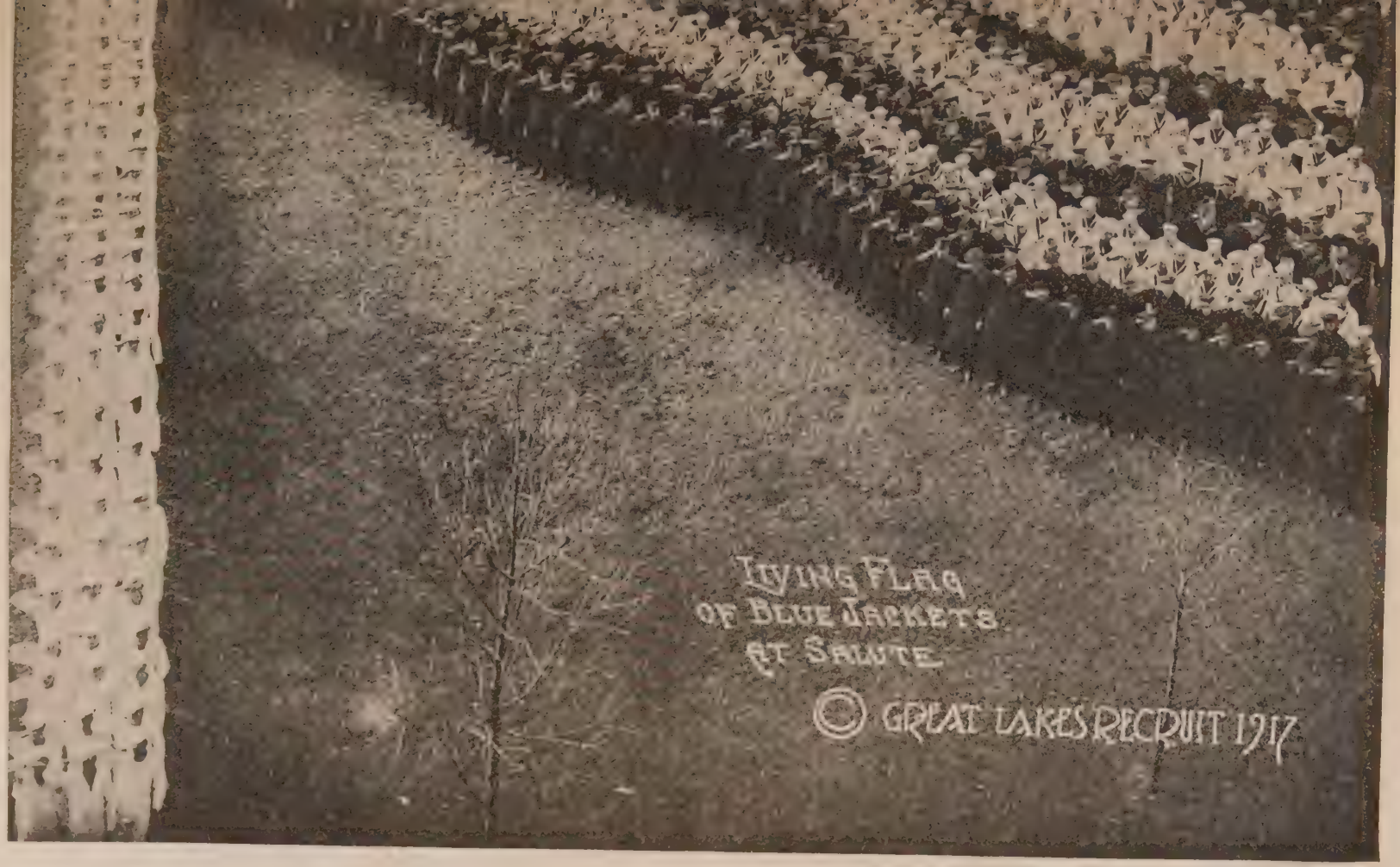
America's sympathy was shown most practically and with little delay. All over the country funds were raised for the relief of Belgium, whose people had been reduced to misery and starvation in a brief space of time by the cruelty of the foe.

When it became apparent that the proper administration of American bounty depended upon direct American supervision, an American Commission for the Relief of Belgium was named, with Herbert Clark Hoover, an Iowa mining engineer, as chairman. Mr. Hoover proved a wonderful organizer, a man of generous heart and great executive ability. Under his leadership millions of dollars were raised for the help of King Albert's oppressed people, and under his personal direction the money was disbursed for their salvation. For two years he labored incessantly, handicapped by the frequent refusal of the German administrators of Belgium to cooperate or in any way to facilitate his work.

The ministry for Belgium was America's main means of contact with the war zone during 1914-15-16. There were other contacts, but they were all of the same sort—relief work for the suffering of Serbia, Syria, and Armenia, or ambulance driving and Red Cross service in France.

Officially America was neutral. The President issued declarations of neutrality as each new belligerent appeared in Europe. Immediately following the first outbreak of war, in August 1914, he ap-






A LIVING FLAG — 10,000 Blue Jackets form the most remarkable flag in the world at the Great Lakes Naval Training Station, 30 miles from Chicago, and photographed from a plane. (Copyright Great Lakes Recruit, 1917)

As interesting as the picture itself, is the manner in which the design was laid out in the huge drill grounds. The flag, if formed in proper proportions, would hardly be recognizable when photographed, so expert photographers worked through the law of perspective so that when viewed from the "eye of the camera" and photographed, it stood out in proper proportions. For instance there were 65 men in the star in the extreme left hand corner and only 12 in the nearest front star.

290 men were in the ball, 560 in the pole, 450 in the top stripe and 300 in the lower one.

The flag itself, was 293 feet long and 428 feet in width.

The star field measured 143 feet at the top, 66 feet at the bottom.

One of the features of this extraordinary formation is the fact that in the respective stars there were men from nearly every state in the union.

pealed to the American people to maintain a strict neutrality in word and act.

The American people made a loyal effort to acquiesce in the President's request, and a very large proportion of them succeeded admirably; but the American of German birth or descent proved in many instances an exception to the loyalty of the majority.

The United States did not realize at first that its citizens of German blood were being made the objects of continued incitement by German agents in America; but this was true. Had they been left to themselves there is little likelihood that any serious trouble would have developed. But men on the pay-roll of the German Ambassador, Count Bernstorff, and in the employ of Dr. Dumba, the Austro-Hungarian Ambassador, maintained a ceaseless propaganda thru channels and agencies of varied kinds by which they played upon the racial sentiment, the pride and even the fear of German-Americans. Secret organizations were formed; oaths of loyalty to the kaiser were taken; reservists were drilled.

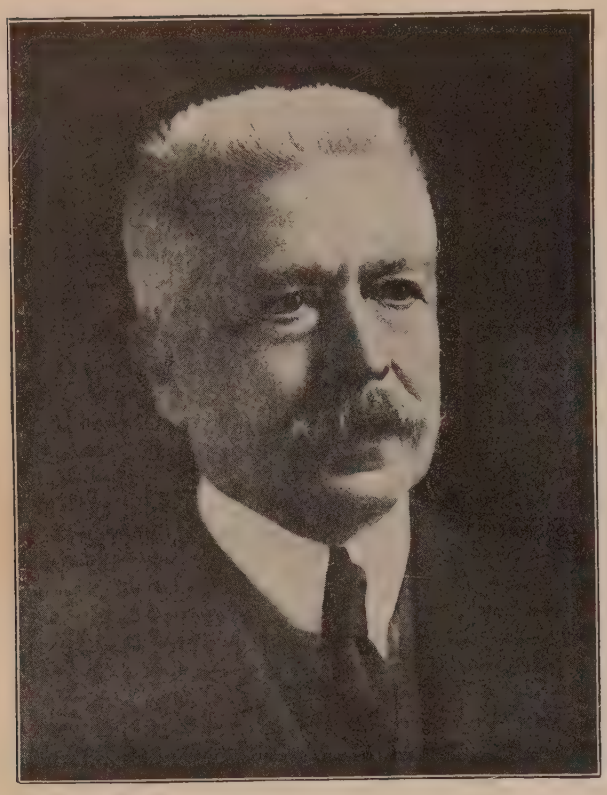
Agents were hired to go into American industries and provoke and persuade the workers to strike. These efforts were directed chiefly to the demoralization of the munition factories, or other concerns producing goods that were of value to the enemies of Germany.

French Advancing Behind a Barrage Fire.

At the same time agents lobbied in Congress, while subsidized or misguided newspapers thruout the country supported their efforts to obtain an embargo on the export of munitions, and even on the export of foodstuffs.

The propaganda of the Bernstorff-Dumba organization attempted to make the American people believe it was unjust and, indeed, unlawful to sell guns and shells and food to the enemies of Germany

The Italian Royal Family.



Premier Orlando directed Italy's War Committee.

when Germany was unable to buy them. This was, of course, ridiculous. The manufacturers and producers of the United States had a right to sell to anybody who could reach their market and pay their price. It was not their fault that Germany could not come to New York or Boston or New Orleans and trade. The obstacle in the way was not American prejudice so much as the British fleet—and that was an obstacle that Germany would have had to remove for herself.

The refusal of Congress to follow the promptings of the kaiser thru Count Bernstorff and his agents, provoked these gentlemen to more desperate efforts.

Explosions became frequent in munition factories; bridges were blown up; trains were wrecked.

But all of these things, altho vexing the American people, did not greatly stir them. Many of them simply refused to believe that they were anything more than accidents, or—at worst—the work of irresponsible fanatics.

Then came a day—May 1, 1915—when there appeared in the New York newspapers an advertisement. It read as follows:

NOTICE!

TRAVELLERS intending to embark on the Atlantic voyage are reminded that a state of war exists between Germany and her allies and Great Britain and her allies; that the zone of war includes the waters adjacent to the British Isles; that, in accordance with formal notice given by the Imperial German Government, vessels flying the flag of Great Britain, or of any of her allies, are liable to destruction in those waters and that travellers sailing in the war zone on ships of Great Britain or her allies do so at their own risk.

IMPERIAL GERMAN EMBASSY

Washington, D. C., April 22, 1915.

Not many people saw this extraordinary advertisement, in which a foreign government ignored the government of the United States, and talked directly to the American people in threatening words and tone. Those who did see it paid little attention to it.

But there were individuals to whom came mysterious warnings to avoid sailing from New York on the Lusitania, that was due to steam out of the harbor the day after the appearance of the German Embassy's menacing notice. Some of them heeded these warnings. Others laughed at them. The idea that Germany would sink a great passenger liner, with American citizens on board, seemed absurd.

It was true that German submarines had been very active and had occasioned considerable loss, but, aside from the sinking of several allied battleships—legiti-

mate prey—there had been no appallingly dramatic happenings such as were soon to come.

In February the German government had proclaimed a submarine zone around the British Isles, and announced the establishment of a U-boat blockade of Great Britain.

President Wilson followed the enemy proclamation with a note addressed to Berlin, pointing out the perils of Germany's plan of blockade and its threat to the freedom and security of neutrals. This note closed with an emphatic declaration that if Germany violated the rights of the United States upon the high seas, the United States would hold her to a "strict accountability."

It was with this phrase still clearly in mind that American citizens went on board the Lusitania, and sailed from New York, in spite of insulting advertisements and mysterious warnings.

The Lusitania carried in her hold some small arms ammunition—rifle cartridges. She had no dangerous cargo. In every respect her manifest complied with the law. She was a British passenger liner. She had no troops on board, and altho on the naval reserve list, she had not yet been called for active service.

At five minutes after two on the afternoon of May 7, 1915, the Lusitania was slipping along rather slowly off the Old Head of Kinsale, Ireland. Suddenly the U-boat 39 appeared at her side, and discharged two torpedoes into the utterly helpless vessel.

No warning was given, no opportunity for the escape of the women and children, and of course no effort was made to visit and search her, as the law of the sea requires.

The great liner sank quickly, carrying to their death 1,154 persons, many of whom were women and children. A score of little babies died pitifully.

Among the 1,154 dead were 102 Americans.

Major Baracca, Italian Ace.

The news of this tragic happening shocked and horrified the world. It stunned Americans. It seemed impossible to believe it true. After the first incredulous amazement there came a surge of anger, and had President Wilson declared war on Germany the day after the sinking of the Lusitania he would have had a large part of the nation with him for vengeance on the cruel and cowardly foe.

But President Wilson did not declare war. Instead he made a speech at Philadelphia in which he said:—"There is such a thing as a man being too proud to fight; there is such a thing as a nation being so right that it does not need to convince others by force that it is right."

The phrase "too proud to fight" was the most unfortunate the President had

Types of soldiers and laborers on the Italian front at time of Austrian invasion.

ever used. Torn from its context it was carried around the world, and wherever it was repeated there came back to America the laughter of mockery and the scorn of men.

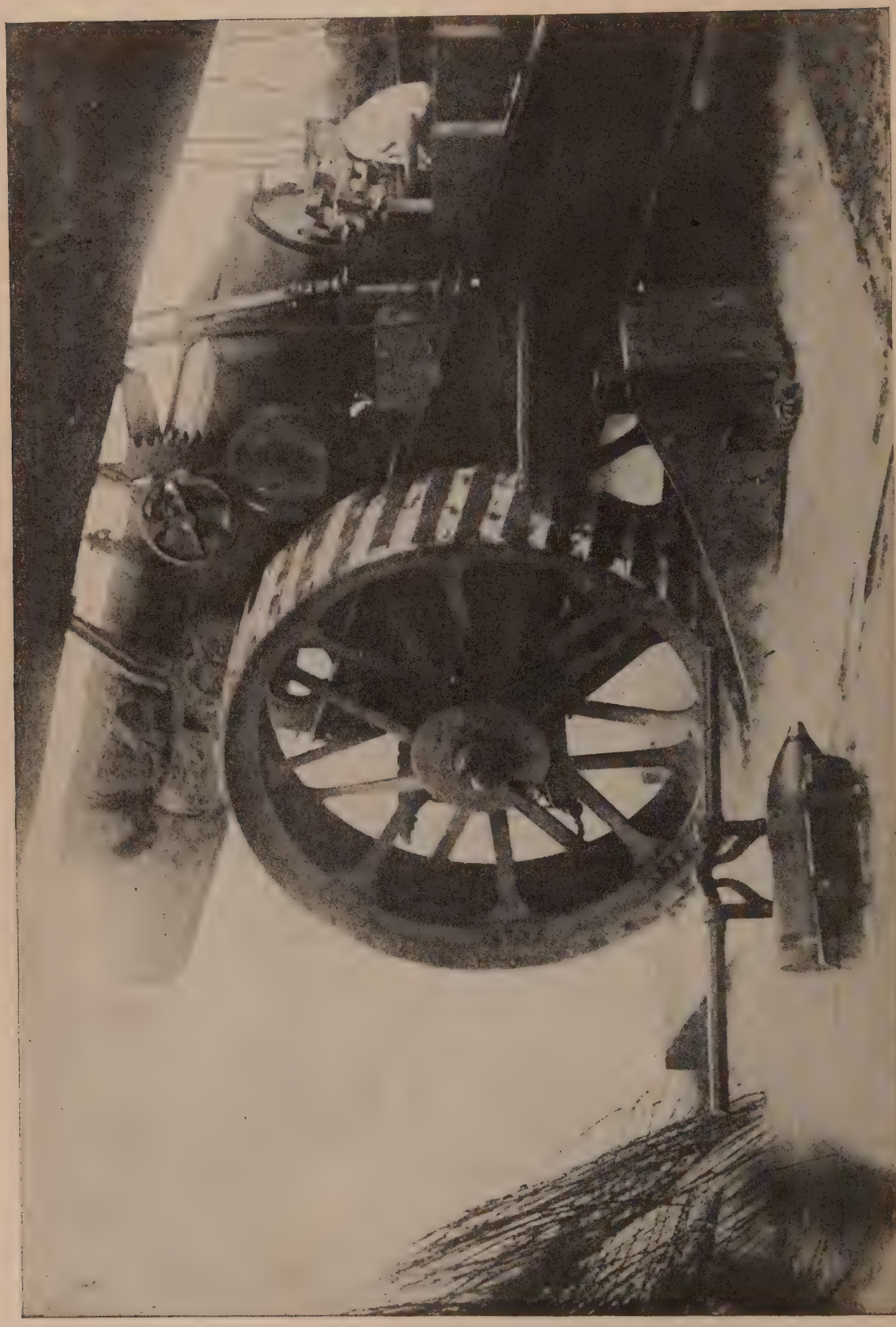
President Wilson did not know Germany then. No man knew her as all came to know her later. Had he known her he would never have used the second phrase, about a nation being "so right that it does not need to convince others by force." President Wilson learned that there is only one way to convince the Prussian mind of anything, and that is by force. You might be as right as God Himself, and it would make no impression whatever upon the type of mind that burned Louvain, sank the Lusitania, murdered Nurse Cavell and wantonly converted Northern France into a wilderness of death and desolation.

President Wilson attempted to demonstrate the righteousness of the United States to the German intelligence. He went about his task earnestly, ably and patiently. He wrote two notes to Germany, in the first demanding reparation, and, in the second, emphasizing the demand, and insisting that Germany must not sink ships without warning, and must not turn passengers adrift in open boats at a distance remote from shore.

After these several interchanges of notes, on September 1 Count Bernstorff announced that Germany would sink no more passenger liners without warning, and would otherwise comply with the conditions deemed by the United States government to be essential in the interests of humanity, international law and neutral rights.

Public indignation subsided a little. It was hoped that the President's conciliatory plan would prove effective.

Italians had many anti-aircraft guns mounted on tractors. Italian anti-craft guns and light artillery pieces were mounted and hauled into position by tractors.



Type of heavy Italian gun on the Piave River kept the Austrian forces from concentrating at any one point.

There were other provocations, however, that disturbed the peace of mind and good temper of the average American citizen. The activities of certain agents, whose connections had been traced back to the vicinity of the Austrian embassy, made many people feel that America was much too tolerant of some of the representatives of the central empires. This impression became so strong that the State Department at Washington, early made small difference as long as the shrewd, unscrupulous little agent of the Hohenzollern autocrat was still free to go as he pleased in Washington. Dr. Dumba had never been more than a tool for Count Bernstorff. Dumba was a business man and Bernstorff an aristocrat, hence Dumba was content to be a valet in conspiracy for his master, the arch-conspirator.

However the expulsion of Dumba—

Italian Bersaglieri cycle regiment on their way to the Austrian frontier.

in September 1915, requested the Austrian government to recall Dr. Dumba. This did not mean severing diplomatic relations, but merely a protest against the conduct of the particular individual then acting for the dual monarchy at Washington.

The Austrian government did as it was requested, and Dumba departed. But the departure of the Hapsburg ambassador for such it was in all but technicality—led to further discoveries and disclosures. As a consequence in December the two German agents chiefly responsible for outrages and plots in America—Boy-Ed and Von Papen—were induced to follow the former Austrian ambassador.

It was on September 1 that Count Bernstorff gave the sacred word of Germany that she would not sink another

Austro-Italian Fighting in the Alps.

passenger ship without full warning. A little less than six months later, on March 25, 1916, the channel packet Sussex was torpedoed off the French coast. She sank with loss of life among crew and passengers. Several Americans were on board, but happily escaped death. The Sussex was wantonly sunk. No warning was given. No effort was made to save life. It was another instance of cold-blooded murder.

America was on the verge of breaking diplomatic relations with Germany. The anger of the people was intense. "Strict accountability" had been the words a year before, and Germany had acted as tho they meant nothing of which she need be afraid.

President Wilson sent another note, and made a speech to Congress emphasizing the serious and perilous nature of the situation. In his note he told Germany that should she repeat this crime diplomatic relations would be severed.

In a few weeks Germany answered with new promises of good behavior, and once again the United States swallowed its wrath and gave the Germans a chance.

Thru the remainder of 1916 Germany avoided further provocation. President Wilson was re-elected in November on a platform summed up in the phrase "He kept us out of war." America, evidently, was happy to be kept out of war in spite of all the injury that had been done her, and the insults that had been heaped upon her. Her anger had flamed up occasionally, but there was no steady heat. There was certainly no heat intense enough to repudiate the pacifist slogan of the Democratic nominee.

This was in part due to the fact that the people of the great middle-west and far west were not yet aware of the real perils to the nation involved in temporizing with a power like Germany. Moreover the offenses committed by U-boats did not appeal with the same force to them as to the people of the eastern and sea-board states. They were inclined to think that Americans should keep off the sea when the sea was dangerous, and not risk the provocation of international dispute and war merely to gratify their desire for travel.

Carrying a wounded Highlander to the ambulance after he had received first aid.

Following the victorious campaign of the President on his peace platform, there came a rather dramatic opportunity to act for a moment as a potential peacemaker.

Early in December Berlin proposed that the warring countries engage in an effort to negotiate peace. Germany had just completed the conquest of Roumania by occupying Bucharest six days before. Russia was hors de combat. The hour seemed opportune to the Prussian leaders.

President Wilson also thought the hour opportune for a definite effort to end the war. He addressed an identical note to all the belligerents requesting

Italian Troops After Rout of Teutonic Forces in Northeastern Italy. Having wounds dressed.

them to make a clear statement of the terms upon which they were willing to consider peace. He based this request upon the ground of America's interest in the restoration of peace. He argued that the prolongation of the war was endangering the security of the United States.

The President's note was not favorably received in the lands opposed to the central empires. Nevertheless they replied with definite statements of their war aims. From all of them came a declaration that they would enter into no discussion of peace with Germany until she had defined her terms. The British prime minister insisted that there could be no peace without assurance of reparation, restoration and security. Finally in a combined reply, just as the year ended, the allies emphatically rejected the German proposals for a conference, and reminded the world that Germany looked upon sacred promises as "scraps of paper," and approved the principle that "necessity knows no law."

However opinions may differ as to the wisdom of the course taken by President Wilson, it can never be questioned that he exerted himself to the extreme limit of patience and tact in the effort to keep America neutral and peaceful, and to encourage a spirit of conciliation among the belligerent nations over-seas.

More ardent spirits would have entered the war when Belgium was invaded, the Lusitania sunk or the Sussex torpedoed—excuses were abundant. But President Wilson was not seeking excuses to fight; he was trying to avoid fighting. If America had to fight he wanted it to be the result of a situation that left no possible alternative; he wanted every American citizen, no matter what his ancestry or nativity, to feel that America was entering the war only after she had exhausted every means in her power to remain neutral and because national safety and self-respect could not be preserved in any other way.

This photograph, one of the most remarkable made in the national army camps, shows a number of the soldiers in the trenches wearing their gas masks, facing a gas attack of the "enemy."

When his attempt failed to obtain from the belligerent nations an agreement to enter upon peace negotiation—failed because of Germany's refusal to commit herself to any definite proposals—he realized that he had gone as far as it was possible to go. He had given the central empires chance after chance, and they had proved shifty, untrustworthy and indifferent to honorable appeal. Now, altho the proposal for negotiation came from them, and, at his request, had been met by the allies with a clear forthsetting of their war aims, the central powers declined to go on record as to their basis of bargaining. President Wilson was satisfied at last that if Germany gave any new provocation to the United States there could be only one answer to it. Reason, persuasion and appeal were no longer of any avail. Force—force to the utmost—was the only way left.

Gregory Rasputin, the famous Russian monk, who was the power behind the Russian throne, surrounded by a group of admirers

# The United States Draws The Sword

## CHAPTER XI

GERMANY RENEWS SUBMARINE WARFARE — NO HOPE FOR FRIENDLY RELATIONS — GERMAN-MEXICO PLOTS — UNITED STATES DECLARES WAR ON GERMANY — GEN. PERSHING ARRIVES IN FRANCE — FIRST UNITED STATES EXPEDITIONARY FORCES REACH FRANCE — FRENCH AND AMERICANS SHOW CORDIAL RELATIONS.

It was on the last day of January in the year 1917 that Germany announced to the world that she would wage war on the sea with unrestricted frightfulness. Thus she repudiated her pledges to the United States and intimated that she would torpedo without warning every ship that dared to sail the seas. At this time she had lost faith in the efficacy of her wonderful military machine and believed that the huge fleet of submarines she had been building secretly would enable her to starve Britain into submission within three months. She argued that she could afford to earn the hostility of all civilization so long as she won the war.

The gauntlet thrown down by the Teuton warlords was taken up quickly, if reluctantly, by the great North American republic. On February 26th, President Wilson went before Congress and asked that diplomatic relations with Germany be severed. He knew, then, that the step he was taking was irretraceable and that only a miracle could keep the United States from being involved in the fearful European struggle. His last hope, which was that the United States would be able to maintain armed neutrality, soon vanished. Although the President authorized the arming of American merchant ships, the desperate German government proceeded to carry out its threat and soon a whole series of attacks on the trading ships of the world, involving the loss of American property and of American lives. And so on April 2nd, the President went before Congress again and requested that a state of war with Germany be declared. In this utterance Mr. Wilson took pains to say that "We are but one of the champions of the rights of mankind."

Congress did not hesitate as to its course. The revelation that the German Foreign Minister, while his country was at peace with the United States, had urged the German Minister in Mexico to arrange for a Mexican invasion of the United States, promising to Mexico a slice of American territory, and that he also had sought to improve this plan by seeking an anti-American alliance between Japan and Mexico, aroused the ire of the whole country, and made the people ready to plunge into the Old World struggle. The Senate passed the war declaration on April 4 by a vote of 82 to 6 and the House of Representatives passed it on April 6 by 373 to 50. At the same time the President was directed to employ the entire naval and military resources of the country to bring the struggle to a successful termination.

President Wilson immediately after signing the war resolution issued a proclamation concerning the conduct and treatment of alien enemies.

All of these momentous acts that swept America from her traditional isolation into the maelstrom of European strife took place amid profound emotion on the part of those participating, and breathless interest on the part of the people.

Beyond a display of flags—flags of all the nations at war against the central empires—there was no great public demonstration. Millions of Americans rejoiced that the bonds of neutrality were broken, that the obligation to silence and inactivity was removed, and that—before it was too late—America had taken her place

Commandant Bachkarova, the leader of the Women's Death Battalion.

beside the great democracies of the world for the final fight against autocracy and the legions of oppression.

In 1776 America had raised the flag of freedom and the right of self-determination and self-government. She had been true to these ideals that then began to revolutionize the world. She had fought to free the slave. She had given Cuba liberty. She had redeemed the Philippines from the bondage of Spain. By all that she had held precious, by all that made her history glorious she had a right to stand with France and England and Italy and little Belgium against the Hun. Her duty lay upon the frontiers of freedom, and it was with a glad pride, counting well the cost, that America unsheathed her sword, and sent across the seas to the older allies a message of cheer and comradeship.

Generally speaking, the year 1916 had been most unfortunate for the Germanic combination from a military standpoint. Only on the Roumanian front had any consolation been offered to the high German command. Russia, although she exhausted herself terribly by her efforts, had carried off the honors on the east, the Italians had had a good year on the southwest and in the west the Verdun offensive had failed and the British and French counter-offensive at the Somme had made dangerous headway. Early in 1917, therefore, Germany was dreading events on all fronts, particularly on the east and the west. Her agents in the east were reporting that a revolution might occur in Russia but the hopes raised by her secret agents in other quarters had been sadly disappointed and she could not be sure that the downfall of the Czaristic regime, with its pro-German element, would be a help to Germany. For that reason she decided to order a retreat from the great Arras-Soissons salient, to dodge the attacks the allies were preparing and to depend on her submarines to gain victory at sea while her armies evaded decisive conflict on land.

That was the general situation in the world conflict when the United States became a belligerent on April 6, 1917. Three days later the British forces gained a brilliant success at Vimy Ridge, and they and the French scored time and again during the remainder of the 1917 fighting season but they had not sufficient strength of themselves to overwhelm the enemy and the United States was in no position to render appreciable help except at sea. American dreadnoughts and destroyers were not long in finding their way to the North Sea and there, and around the shores of Ireland, they did splendid work in curbing the piratical underwater craft of the common enemy. The closest possible co-operation prevailed between the British and American admirals, and together they baffled the supreme effort of the enemy to accomplish the defeat that the enemy's armies had failed to obtain.

In the meantime the United States set

Family of Czar of Russia.

to work determinedly to improvise an army and to build transports in the hope of aiding the allied nations to gain victory in the year 1918. As the months passed by and the destruction of Russia's military efficiency by the revolution became clear, it was seen that the United States would have to prepare to take a much larger part in the struggle than had been anticipated. Twenty-two days after the declaration of war, Congress passed conscription or the law providing for the selective draft. In a few weeks, the regular army, by volunteering, was brought up to a strength of 287,000 and the National Guard up to 625,000. On June 5, ten million young Americans registered and became available, when required, for the purposes of the national cause. Two weeks later, two million men, by drawing lots, were chosen for military service. This number was greatly increased in 1918. Among those enlisting were 300,000 colored men, many of whom won decorations on the field of battle.

By the end of June General Pershing, who was appointed to the chief command of the United States expeditionary forces, and the first contingent of American troops were safe on the soil of France. Training camps for American troops soon were established midway between Paris and the Swiss frontier. Within six months of the declaration of war it became known that American troops were fighting in the trenches on the Nancy front on the banks of the Rhine-Marne front. A few weeks later, in November, the Germans, in their eagerness to gain precise information, made an elaborate raid on the American front in which they killed three, wounded eleven and captured eleven men from the United States. Germany did not realize then that not a year would pass before the allies, with the material aid of a huge American army, would have beaten her to her knees.

The flag of America had been on the front since the first month of the war—

A. F. Kerensky, Russia's youthful Minister of War, formerly one of the greatest of the nation's heroes.

since August 1914. It had been there as a promise and prediction that America would follow it. The story of where that flag came from and what befell it was told in Current History by the Rev. S. N. Watson. And this, in part, is the story:

Under the burning skies of August, 1914, there was seen in the streets of Paris a procession of soldiers of the Foreign Legion. Over the heads of one of the groups floated the Stars and Stripes. The soldiers who formed this American group belonged to the Second Regiment of the Foreign Legion, and their devotion to France and to liberty had impelled them to enlist. Their flag was the first American flag on the French front. Some one had offered them this flag here in Paris, where the group was formed. They took it with them to Rouen, where they had their first camp. When Rouen was threatened by the enemy this regiment was sent to Toulouse. Returning from Toulouse to Paris for active service at

Russians slaughtered in the streets by the Bolsheviki forces. The machine gun is mounted on the roof of the building. Mother in foreground protecting child.

Russian Army in Cosmopolitan Salonica. This shows a few of the troops of the large Russian army that landed in Salonica just as the barge tied up to the dock.

Foreign Minister Leon Trotsky, of the Bolshevik Russian Government.

the front, its members draped the starry banner over the side of the cattle car in which they were riding; and, arrived at the front, they always found a place of honor for their idolized flag. When they slept at night, or when they went "over the top" in an assault, one man or another always carried it with him.

At last came the moment when the United States took its place in the war. The little group of American volunteers was dispersed. Three were dead, one was grievously wounded, one was a prisoner in Germany. Of one of those now dead it is reported that he lay three days in his bed without saying a word and that suddenly he seized the flag and waved it, crying "I'm an American!" and expired.

One of the survivors sent the flag to the rector of the American Church in Paris, asking him to offer it to the French Government. The rector willingly accepted the task. He wrote to the Minister of War, telling of the request of his compatriots, and received this cordial reply:

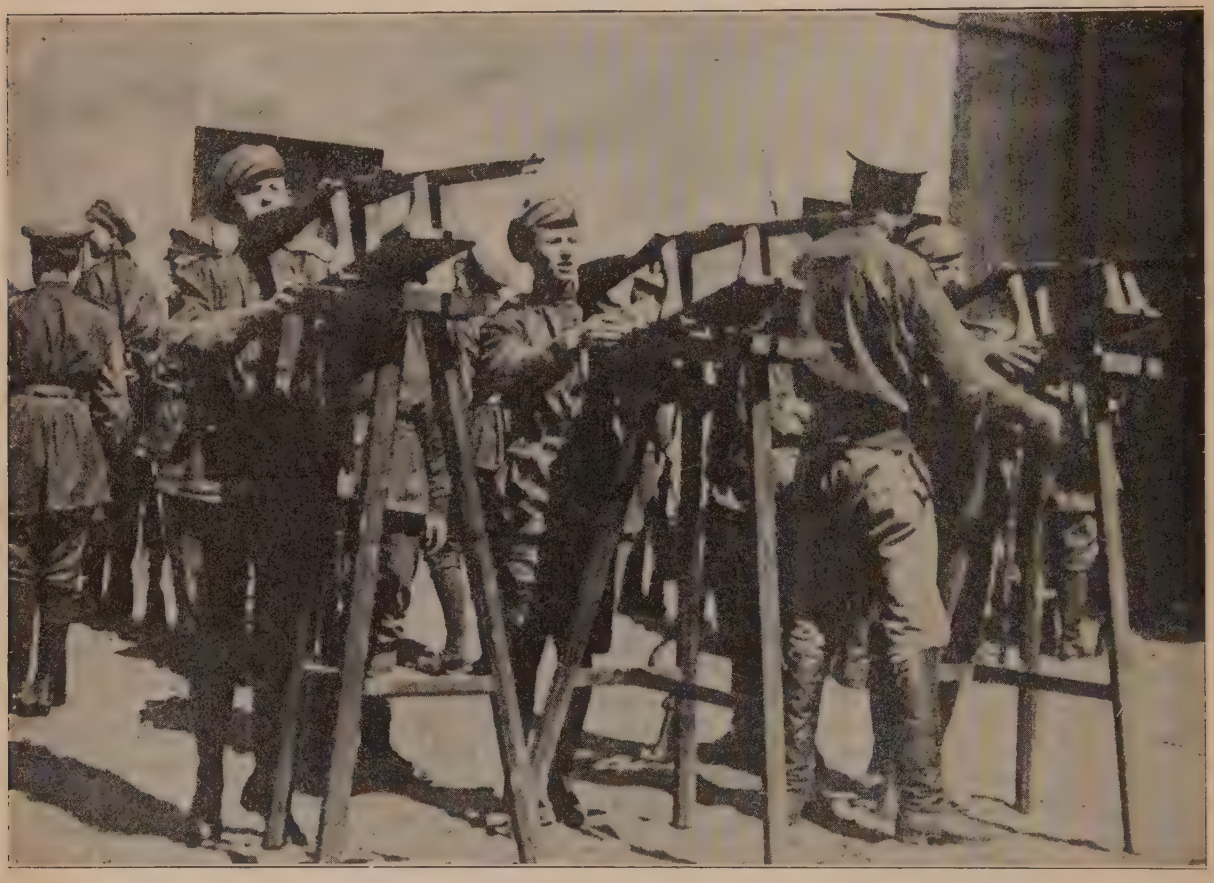
"I accept with pleasure, in the name of the French Army, this glorious emblem, for which General Niox, Governor of the Invalides, has reserved a beautiful place in the Hall of Honor of the Musée de l'Armée. This flag will thus remain a striking witness of the devotion to France displayed by the American volunteers who, from the beginning of the war, came to fight in the ranks of our army for right and civilization."

General Pershing was present on the occasion when the flag was presented to France. It was on July 4, 1917, in the Court of Honor of the Hotel des Invalides, Paris. The French president was there, and the minister of war and Marshal Joffre. In making the presentation the rector of the American church in Paris said:

Gen. Diaz, Italian Victor.

"What a prophet this flag has been, the first American flag that has floated over the heads of those who were fighting on the soil of France for the ideals which the banner represents, and which are the life and soul of France! It was not permitted to our gallant boys of the Foreign Legion to carry their flag openly, like the colors of a commander when he leads his soldiers to the charge, but they carried it just the same; one after the other, they carried this flag wrapped about their bodies as a belt—a life-preserver for the soul; one after the other, they were wounded—some were killed—and it was in this way that the American flag received its first baptism of blood in this conflict where now it has its recognized place.

"This flag has been the prophet of what has come to pass, now that the great Republic beyond the sea is physically taking the place which it has always held in spirit. We are rendering a service to the comrades who died for France when we ask you to accept this emblem for which they gave their lives. It is also an inspiration to the living to be worthy of those pioneers who preceded them on the road that leads to eternal liberty and the redemption of justice."



"Battalion of Death" Made Up of Russian Women.

So the flag was placed among the treasured things of France in the heart of Paris, where it remains to this day. And General Pershing, with his staff about him, stood before the tomb of America's heroic friend and said:—

"Lafayette, we are here!"

# The Decisive Campaign in the Year 1918

## CHAPTER XII

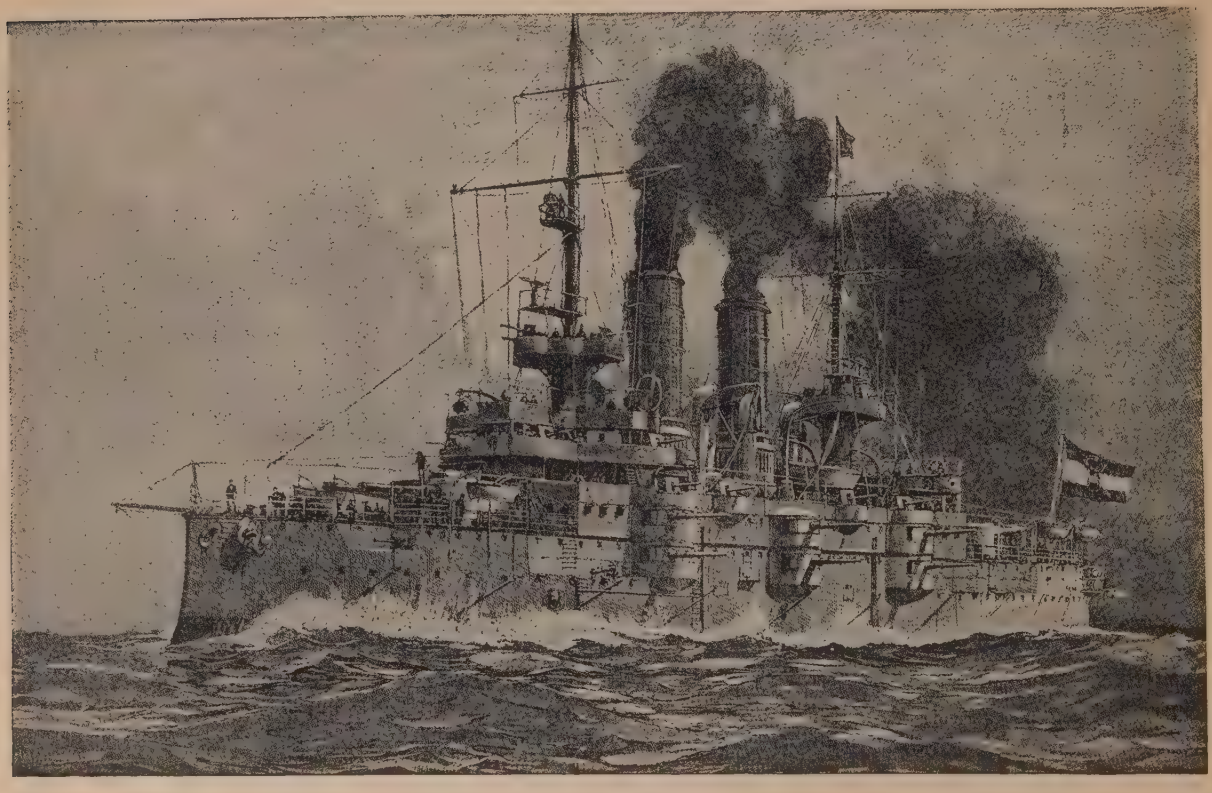
GERMAN REVERSES AND GAINS — UNITED STATES SPEEDS UP — GERMAN GIGANTIC ATTEMPT AT CHANNEL PORTS — ALLIES UNITED UNDER FOCH — FOCH'S STRATEGY WINS GERMAN RETREAT — ENORMOUS ALLIED GAINS — GERMANY ADMITS DEFEAT — ARMISTICE SIGNED.

To understand how Victory came to the allied and associated powers in 1918 it is necessary that we shall see the main features of the war in the preceding years. In 1914 the Germans tried for victory in the west and failed. In 1915 the Germans tried for victory in the east and failed again. In 1916 the Germans made their main efforts on the Italian and French fronts but their attacks broke down and allied offensives at the Somme, on the west, in Galicia on the east and along the Isonzo on the southwest made appreciable headway in spite of the most desperate Teutonic resistance. The 1914 and 1915 offensives of the Germans, while they fell short of complete success, carried the battle-fronts from one to three hundred miles away from the German border on the west and the east and for several years kept the devastation of war out of the fatherland. Thus the defence of Germany was maintained at a safe distance from the towns and cities of Germany which actually suffered less damage than was experienced by those of the various allied countries on the continent which were victorious in the great struggle. Just so soon as the allies demonstrated their ability to sweep over the fair country of the Germanic peoples, the white flag went up and the enemy signified that he would submit to any terms the allies saw fit to impose.

The year 1916 was the first one in which the honors did not go to the Germans. In the two years next preceding, the Germans carried on extremely vigorous offensives, both of which came to within an inch of complete victory. But in 1916 the only consolation Germany could get out of the campaign was that she improved matters near its close by concentrating all her reserve forces against Roumania and overrunning the larger part of that country. Nevertheless, she averted a disaster on the east in that year only by employing many hundreds of thousands of German troops on that front which were urgently needed elsewhere. Germany realized that the armies of Austria-Hungary were in an exhausted condition at mid-summer in 1917, and that but for the assistance given by Germany the weary dual empire would have been overwhelmed, carrying down to ruin with her Bulgaria and Turkey, and ultimately Germany, herself. As we saw in Chapter XI, it was the obvious inability of her armies under existing conditions to wage victorious offensives on either of the main fronts that nerved Germany to resort to unrestricted frightfulness on the sea and incur the hostility of the United States.

Nineteen-seventeen was a peculiar year in the war. It opened under the most favorable circumstances the allies had enjoyed up to that time, yet it was a year of terrible disappointment of the most unexpected sort. The setback experienced was not foreseen by Lloyd George in January when he said "We are on the verge of the greatest liberation the world has seen since the French revolution." Nor did the enemy's submarine venture accomplish its purpose. Thanks to the effective work of the allied navies, the conservation of food in America and the speeding-up of shipbuilding programs,

Russian Armored Cruiser "Ruric."



Austrian Coast Defense Battleship "Hapsburg" at Sea, Surrendered to Italy.

along with the rejection of non-essential cargoes, the enemy's plan to starve Britain and shut off military supplies destined for France, was a miserable failure. The year also saw the great North American republic, the United States, and plucky little Greece under Venizelos, enlist with the forces of civilization. The upset to the calculations of both the Huns and the civilized nations was provided by the revolution in March which swept away Czarism and crippled still

near Cambrai and almost simultaneously the enemy inflicted a disastrous defeat on the Italian armies on the Isonzo, capturing no less than 300,000 men and 3,000 guns, representing one-half of the artillery and one-fourth of the personnel of the Italian field armies.

At the opening of the year 1918 the anxiety of the allied nations was in marked contrast with the jubilant spirit of the German warlords. The enemy's highest command was convinced that it

Provisional government troops guarding the central telephone station in Petrograd from the Bolsheviki

further the military efficiency of Russia which already had suffered from the treachery of Germans in high places at the court of St. Petersburg. The impotency of the Russian armies from an offensive viewpoint enabled the Germans and Austrians to move large numbers of troops from the east to the western and southwestern fronts. Thus reinforced, the enemy countered effectively when British troops under General Byng broke through the German front with tanks

would not be possible for the United States to develop an army large and efficient enough to be any considerable factor in the year's campaign and it was equally certain that the armies of France and Britain, which had had to send help to Italy during the previous Fall, would be unable to prevent the piercing of the allied battle-front by new methods and the defeat in detail of the separated allied armies.

Von Hindenburg, the German gener-

alissimo, openly boasted that he would be in Paris in April. His chief lieutenant, Ludendorff, declared that nothing could rob Germany of victory. The Kaiser Wilhelm, himself, became so infected by the enthusiasm of his military advisers that he permitted the attack that was being prepared to be referred to as "The Kaiser's Offensive." Instead of pussy-footing for peace as he had been doing throughout 1917 he flaunted his political advisers, vetoed the no-indemnity-no-annexation policy of the Reichstag and imposed an oppressive peace on Russia and Roumania, by treaties signed at Brest-Litovsk and Bucharest in February and March.

These Russian soldiers were made of the right stuff and when called upon to fight to down the enemies of democracy, willingly took up arms and fought a courageous battle.

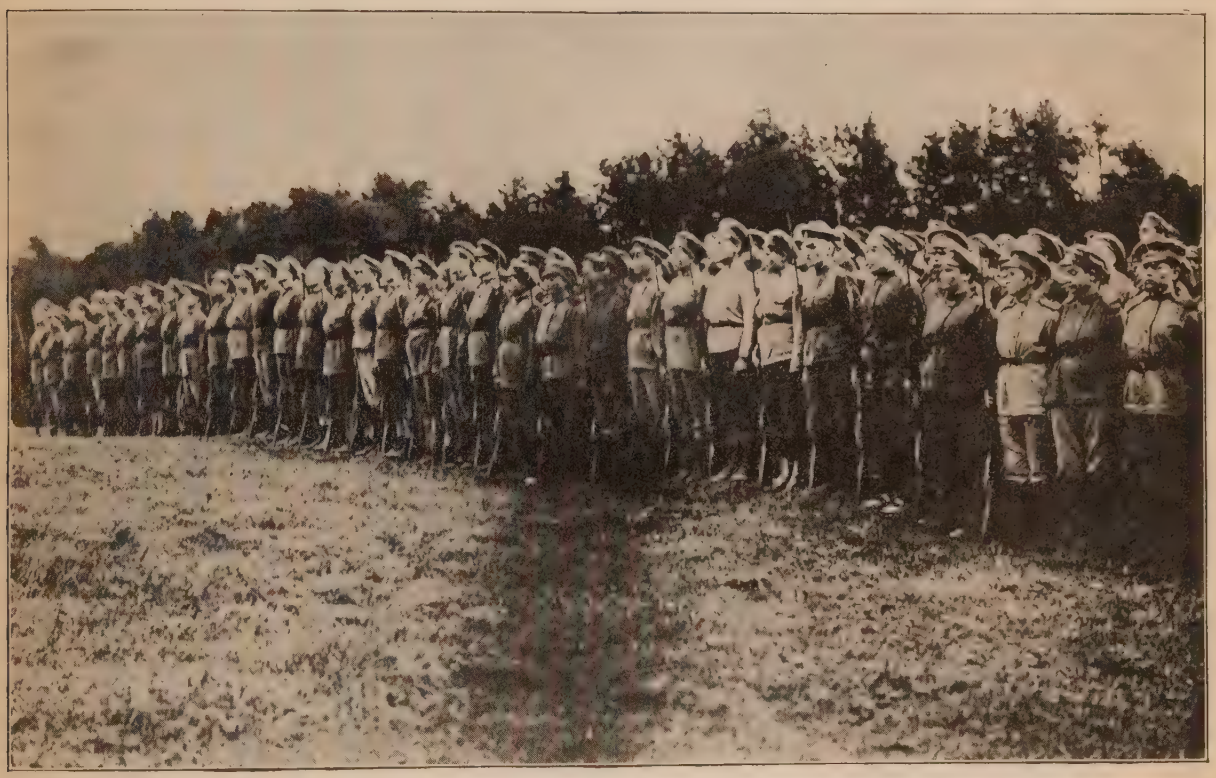
By the spring of 1918 the German armies in France and Belgium were at least half a million stronger than they were a year earlier while those of the allies, actually fit for the front, were little if any more numerous. This accession of strength by the enemy gave him a numerical superiority in March of but little more than one hundred thousand men, but he knew that his advantage in unity of command, standardization of organization and the ability to concentrate reserves where they could be of the most value, which the allies did not possess, was worth several hundred thousand men. He also knew that more troops were hurrying westward and by the middle of May would bring his numerical superiority in troops actually available for the firing line up to five hundred thousand. Consequently, he had little doubt of his ability to destroy the allied armies before the military power of the United States could come into play. So great was his confidence that he figured that he could afford to take chances.

Perhaps the best plan open to the enemy was to concentrate against the French. The morale of France was

shakier and the army of France was more exhausted than were those of Britain. In April and May of 1917 the political situation in France caused the allies concern owing to the war-weariness of the people. It was possible, therefore, that even though the French army were not destroyed by a smashing German attack, the morale of the nation would not bear the tremendous increase in casualties involved in the French bearing the brunt of the German attack.

against the British and only reluctantly did he yield to Petain's request, which was backed up by the Supreme Allied War Council which had been formed to tide the allies over the supreme crisis of the war.

The plan that Hindenburg actually did put into operation was to attack the British on the 50-mile front extending from La Fere on the Oise river to the region of Arras on the Scarpe river. The enemy's generalissimo knew that the



A striking glimpse of Russia's army of women, 2,500 in number, drilling behind the trenches at the central western front.

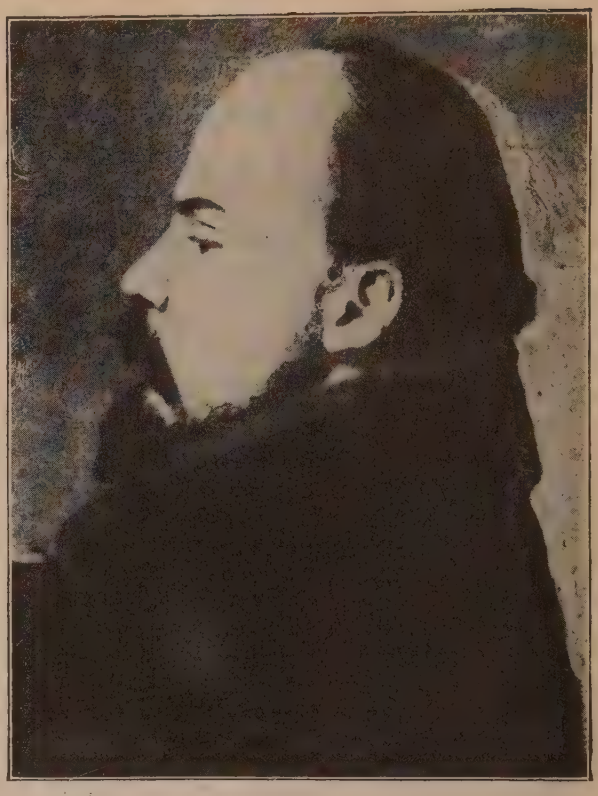
General Petain, the French commander-in-chief, seems to have expected Hindenburg to concentrate against the French. The most likely point of attack against the French was in the Rheims region and Petain strongly urged General Haig, the British commander-in-chief, to take over twenty-eight more miles of front on both sides of St. Quentin but mostly south of that city. General Haig was not sure that the Germans' confidence would not lead to an attack

southern third of this front was weakly held, that its rear defences were not completed and that the bulk of the British reserves were well to the north behind a vital portion of the line while the bulk of the French reserves were well to the east in the region of Rheims where the French were awaiting an onslaught. He argued that if he could make a huge breach in the allied front at the point where the British front ended and the French front began, the German armies

could push well through, turn, and then roll up the lines of the separated allied armies, driving the British northwestward towards the Straits of Dover and the French southeastward towards the Swiss frontier, in which case Paris would be gathered in without trouble and the allied armies be destroyed at leisure.

During her last bid for victory, made on the western front in 1918, Germany used 3,000,000 men. Of these 2,500,000 were on hand and available when the great opening attack was made upon the British on March 21st. The British armies at that time held a front of 125 miles stretching northward from the Oise river in France, to a point just beyond Ypres in Belgium. The order of the British armies from south to north was Fifth, Third, First and Second, their commanders, in the same order, being Generals Gough, Byng, Horne and Plumer. Although the British held but little more than one-fourth of the entire battle-front between Switzerland and the North Sea they really were playing a much more important part than the length of line indicated for opposed to them were two and a half times as many Germans to the mile as were to be found elsewhere. This was true even before the Germans massed their troops for the final offensive.

The methods the Germans would use in their attack were known to the allies. The British army headquarters frankly published a statement in the middle of February in which the British officers said that the Germans, after training their troops for a dash over destroyed trenches and for open fighting beyond were already bringing their men forward towards the line and that after a few hours' violent bombardment the assault troops, which would stealthily enter the front trenches during the night after a long march, would "go over the top." It was expected that powerful tanks, shells combining high explosives and gases and vast numbers of mobile guns that would keep pace with the advancing infantry, would feature the German onslaught. This whole program was carried out as anticipated by the intelligence corps of the British army with the exception that the German tanks played a very unimportant part.



Premier Nikolai Lenine of the Bolshevik Russian Government.

All through the winter of 1917-18 the British army prepared for a defensive in the first half of the 1918 fighting season or until sufficient troops from America were ready for offensive operations. It was considered quite possible that a retirement from St. Quentin to the Somme bend at Peronne might be forced, and the bridgehead at Peronne was very powerfully fortified and the whole line of the Somme prepared as a defensive position. It was felt that more ground could be yielded safely here than farther north and it was in the Arras region that the strongest measures were taken to check an enemy advance. Along the whole front, the first two or three miles back

from No Man's Land constituted an outpost line studded with redoubts and machine gun nests. It was hoped that the Germans, after their preparatory bombardment, would suffer staggering losses in trying to overwhelm the survivors of this thinly-held outpost area and that when they reached the main battle-positions on the far side their assaults would collapse.

All the weather conditions favored the German attack. The season was exceptionally advanced and extraordinarily dry but the enemy waited until he was sure that a heavy morning mist would overhang the battle area. Then after a bombardment exceeding in fury anything the world ever had known the storm troops dashed forward. On the first day they broke well into the outpost positions but made no alarming progress. The next day, seeing signs of weakness in the St. Quentin region, the enemy redoubled his efforts in that quarter and broke clean through and immediately it became necessary for the forces on either side to retreat in order to avoid being hopelessly outflanked.

To say that the world was astounded and thrown into a state of consternation by this German success is to state the truth mildly. The average person had come to believe that siege warfare would be continued until the end of the war. People had been told so many times that it was beyond the power of either side to break through and the slow variation of the battle-line in other years had so destroyed their hopes that they looked for nothing very spectacular on land and certainly not a war of movement. The fact that for years the British had not lost a gun and that in 1916 and 1917 the British had conducted repeated offensives against the enemy with ever-increasing success, had lulled them into a sense of security which even the desertion of Russia with one-half of all the allied soldiery

Flight of Russians. The camera caught a handful of the thousands as they fled in disorder from the foe.

and the disastrous defeat of the Italian army a few months before had not swept away.

The German success in the closing days of March were most impressive. Two days after the battle began Berlin claimed the capture of 16,000 British soldiers and 200 guns. These figures soon grew to 70,000 British prisoners and 1,200 guns captured. The efforts of General Gough to stay his retreat at the Somme were not successful. The fortified British defences on a 60 mile front soon were obliterated. The dryness of the season enabled the Germans to break across at unexpected points and fearing that his somewhat disorganized army was in no condition to make a stand and that a debacle might result from a rash attempt to hang on, General Gough ordered the abandonment of the great Peronne bridgehead.

As the enemy advanced, gap after gap opened in the living battle-front the allies tried to present to the foe. The British, aided by the French, had the utmost difficulty preventing the enemy from getting far to the rear of their main forces. Cavalry had not shown to advantage on other occasions but the British commander-in-chief himself bears testimony to the fact that on this occasion but for the heroic sacrifices made by the cavalry that dashed forward to fill the gaps as they appeared, it is hard to see how the tide of defeat could have been stayed. Labor units under Generals Grant and Carey, Canadian and American engineers who happened to be in the line of advance, and even Chinese coolies were thrown into the breaches. These, with the aid of troops hurriedly detached from the nearest French armies and of Canadian cavalry, and some light tanks, performed invaluable services. Without them, Amiens could not have been saved.

Advancing at the rate of seven miles a day for six days, the Germans by March 28th, were 43 miles beyond their starting point at St. Quentin and their guns near Montdidier were shelling the most important of the allies' lateral lines of communication, which ran through Amiens. At the same time projectiles from a marvellous cannon were dropping on Paris from a point more than 80 miles away in the forest of St. Gobain, near Laon.

Real head of the Greek government and the commander of the Allied forces in Greece. Left to right: Eleutherius Venizelos, the prime minister of Greece, and the real head of the Greek government, with General Sarrail, French commander of the Allied forces in Greece.

It was hoped by the Germans that this new form of frightfulness, and the exaggerated stories of panic-stricken civilian refugees, would cause the complete collapse of the morale of France. In this the enemy was disappointed. Premier Clemenceau rose to the occasion by a display of sublime courage. The French army never showed to better advantage. It quickly put into effect plans for mutual co-operation that already existed, and took over ten miles of British front which, by the determined advance of the enemy soon was stretched to a length of fifty miles, extending easterly and westerly and

Ferdinand, King of Roumania.

not northerly and southerly as before.

Innumerable deeds of gallantry performed by individuals and by units which were performed in the path of the German advance never will be chronicled. Only a few have been recorded. One of these is told by General Haig in his official report. The enemy had swept over Roisel, Peronne, Ham, Nesle, Bray, Chaulnes and Roye and 100 men of the 61st Brigade, 20th division, were told off under the command of Captain E. C. Combe, M. C., to make a stand at Quesnoy and cover the retreat of their division. From early morning until six at night this little detachment fought against terrible odds until finally the order came for it to retire. By that time only eleven of the gallant one hundred survived. The other eighty-nine had sacrificed themselves that their fellows might effect their retirement and that the Great Cause for which the allies fought might prevail.

Within ten days the enemy's drive south of the Somme river definitely was checked, notwithstanding the fact that General Gough's Fifth Army virtually had been destroyed, and its commander assigned to the task of preparing field defences.

On March 26th, the British and French government appointed General Foch as governments appointed General Foch as in the western arena. Two days later General Gough was transferred and General Rawlinson was placed in command of the British forces south of the Somme river. At this time the Fourth British Army, that Rawlinson previously had commanded, was in reserve. North of the Somme the battle-front stabilized following the crushing defeat of an attack launched against Arras on March 28th. Byng's Third Army had come through the ordeal with flying colors, although on several successive days it was dangerously menaced by German troops that kept filtering through and opening up new gaps. At last every hole was plugged up and every outflanking movement baffled and the enemy was forced to turn elsewhere in the hope of gaining a new success.

It always will be a matter of controversy how much, if at all, General Gough was to blame for the British reverse in March. His commander-in-chief emphasizes the fact that while Byng with his Third Army held only 27 miles of front, with an average of one division to 4,700 yards, Gough with his Fifth Army held a front of 42 miles, with an average of one division to every 6,750 yards of front. In other words, relative to its task, the Fifth Army was one-third weaker than the Third Army. On the opening day of the attack the enemy launched 64 divisions against 29 British divisions, of which only 19 actually were on the firing line, the others being in reserve. Before this first drive spent itself in front of Amiens, the enemy had used 73 divisions and the British 42 divisions.

The critical situation facing the allies in the first week of April easily can be

Montenegrin Standard Bearer.

imagined. The Fifth British Army virtually had been destroyed by the German attack. Probably between one-half and two-thirds of its numbers had been killed, wounded or captured. The remainder were in no condition for immediate fighting and had to be sent to quiet parts of the line or to reserve camps for rest and reorganization. Even the Third Army was in a serious state, from fighting night and day without sleep and sometimes for days at a stretch without food. Thus one-half of the entire British forces in France had been destroyed or had its fighting efficiency dangerously impaired. At the same time the length of battle-front that had to be defended, in the open and without the aid of elaborately fortified systems, had increased from fifty to one hundred miles. Obviously, the British were in no condition to take care of all the new front, and the French army under General Fayolle rapidly extended its front westward, and with the aid of other French troops concentrated 300,000 men on the southern half of the huge salient made by the German advance. This drain on the French reserves and the weakening of the French front along the Aisne and elsewhere offered the enemy the alternative of making a drive southward towards Paris against the French or westward towards the Channel ports against the British. As the British were in much the more serious condition, the enemy elected to resume his offensive operations by a smash westward from the Aubers ridge on April 9th.

Before the German drive in Flanders developed it became clear to most observers that the decisive struggle then progressing would continue throughout the spring and summer and that victory would depend on the speed with which the belligerents put their last reserves into the fray. The enemy, having failed to gain complete success in March, was sure to scour all Central Europe for men. The allies, on their part, sent out messages for help to the outermost parts of the earth. In one of these appeals, the British premier said to Canada's governor-general "Let no one think that what even the remotest of our Dominions can now do can be too late." The allies also made the most urgent representations to the United States to speed up the transportation of troops to Europe. It was found that the United States was making elaborate preparations for war in 1919 and 1920 and was far behind in its program for providing airplanes, guns and munitions in 1918. The American army was without adequate divisional organization for the troops when they landed in France and the training of the troops could not be hurriedly completed on the continent. The allies, however, persuaded the United States to rush forward troops without their full equipment, promising to make up all deficiencies, themselves, so far as possible, and to assist in the training. General Pershing splendidly co-operated by offering to permit trained American troops to be brigaded for service with British and French troops and President Wilson agreed that if the

Prof. Thomas G. Masaryk, President of Czecho-Slovakia, Signing the Declaration of Independence of Czecho-Slovakia, in Independence Hall, Philadelphia.

allies would find sufficient vessels, American troops would go forward at the rate of 250,000 a month.

By the opening of April the Germans already had overrun 1,200 additional square miles of French soil and the hearts of the French people, who had been hoping for nearly four years to see the enemy expelled, nearly stopped beating. It appeared to be likely that the second drive would be made in the north, and that the ports of Calais and Boulogne. By April 3rd the world knew that trained American troops were marching down the roads of France to share in the great ordeal on the German offensive front. The total number of American troops ready for service at that time was about 200,000.

A number of circumstances favored the German drive in Flanders in April. Part of the front to be attacked was manned by Portuguese who had been

Latest photo of Ex-King Constantine, Queen Sophie and their children at their castle in Switzerland. In the family group sitting from left to right are Ex-Crown Prince George, Ex-Queen Sophie, Ex-King Constantine and Princess Helene. Standing are Princess Katherine, Prince Paul and Princess Irene.

enemy would try to crowd the allies out of the 300 square miles of Belgian soil that they had managed to hold since the beginning of the war. Colonel Repington, the London Times' correspondent, had expressed the opinion that "grave strategic decisions may not be only due but overdue", by which he meant that perhaps the allies already should have abandoned Ypres and the rest of Belgium and northwestern France and the Channel long without a rest period, who never had experienced a real offensive and who were in course of removal from the trenches when the attack was launched. Another part of the front was held by hard-tried veterans who had been put in this supposedly quiet sector after being terribly decimated in the March fighting. Here, too, the dryness of the season made possible a quick advance over the usually muddy lowlands on both sides of the Lys

Japan honors late American ambassador, provides cruiser to carry body to United States. The first-class Japanese cruiser Azuma steaming from Tokio with the body of the late George W. Guthrie, American ambassador to Japan. The body was brought to San Francisco. Solemn ceremonies marked the sailing of the vessel.

river. At a point so far north, also, it was much harder for the French and American troops to render assistance. By keeping after the overworked and partly exhausted British army, the Germans hoped to break the backbone of the allied resistance and gain a triumph that would repay them for all their losses in the colossal struggle.

The fact that the British were anticipating an attack on the Flanders front or in the Artois did not save them from a second serious setback. The Germans smashed forward on a 35-mile front to a depth of 13 miles and in the first three days of the attack captured more than 20,000 men and 200 guns. The line opposite the Portuguese was completely pierced and only by the most desperate gallantry of various British units was the gap closed. The fact that the Australian troops some weeks before had been moved south to the Ancre river region made it the more difficult to redeem the situation. The enemy drove up the Lys valley and turning northward menaced the line of retreat of the British forces in the Ypres salient. As they moved northward up the slopes of the ridge on which Mount Kemmel stood out like an island, it became evident that the British had not the power to wage an immediate counter-offensive and that it was advisable to reduce the famous Ypres salient so as to be in a better position to prevent a breakthrough that would give the enemy the Channel ports. Then on April 17th, eight days after the enemy's drive began, it was announced that Messines, Passchendaele, Zonnebeke, Hill 60 and Hollebeke, and all the high ground that the British, Canadian and Australasian troops had taken at the cost of 150,000 casualties in 1917 had been abandoned to the foe. It is known now that this was in accordance with plans drawn up some time before. These were carried out with remarkable success, so that the enemy was full of chagrin when he learned that the enemy had eluded his grasp even before

Japanese Officers Representing Japan at Allied Councils.

he stretched out his hand. By dodging the blow the enemy was preparing in Belgium, General Plumer threw the enemy off his stride and made it necessary for him to go several miles over shell-mutilated ground and prepare all over again for a great advance.

At this time General Maurice, the director of British military operations, an official located in England, was so concerned about the course of operations and possibly so prejudiced against the appointment of a generalissimo in the person of Foch, a military officer of a foreign nation, that he broke into print with the question "Where is Blucher?", thereby intimating that the allied commander-in-chief was not properly and promptly supporting the British forces in the field. For this extraordinary piece of presumption he was removed from office. It would have been impossible to retain him and preserve sympathetic relations

with the sorely-tried French republic. The answer to General Maurice's question came in a few days when French troops went into the firing line north of the Lys river and made vigorous local counter-attacks.

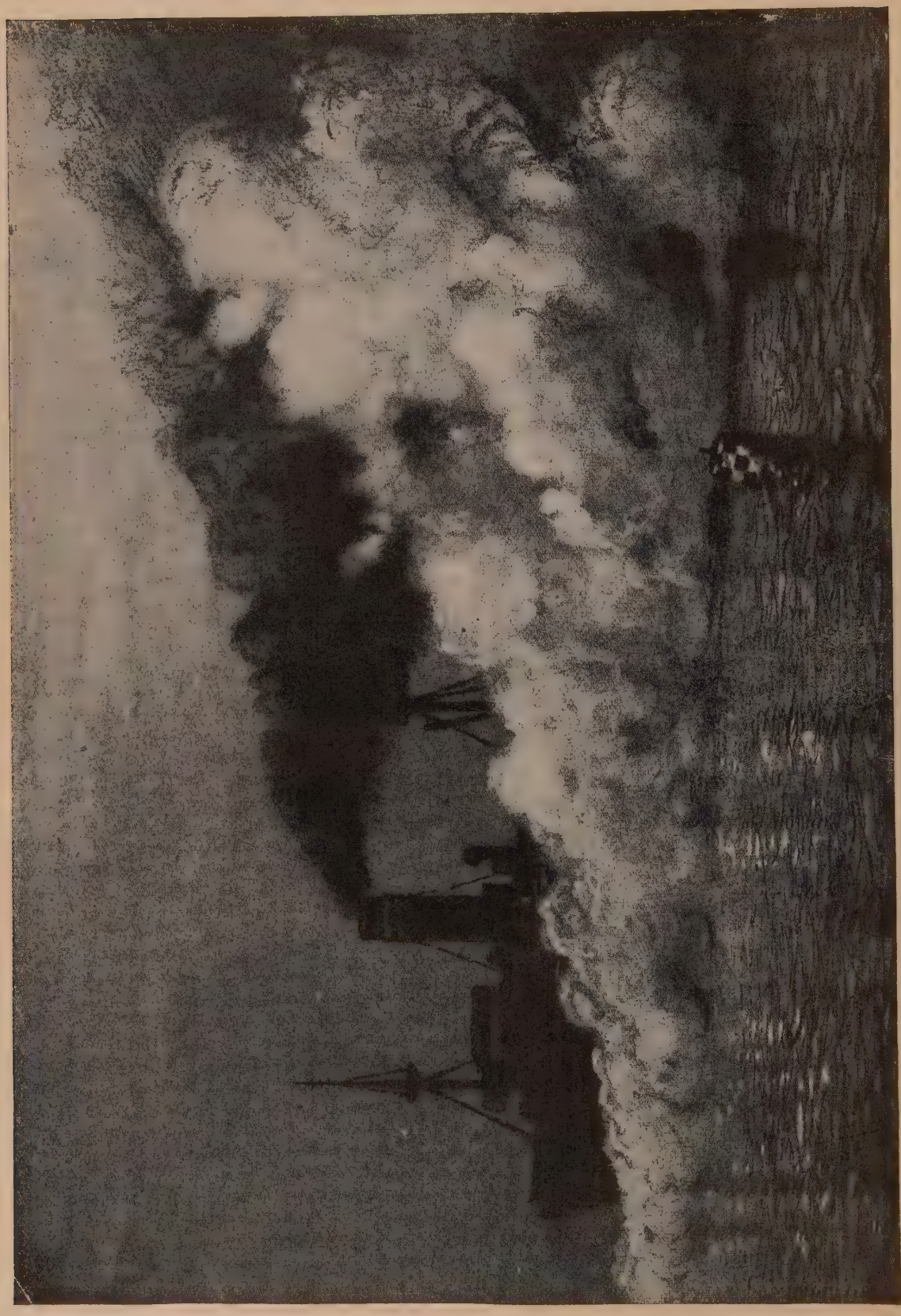
A month after the enemy had begun his spring campaign against the British the enemy still was going strong, but in reality he had shot his bolt against the British. Although here and there evidences of demoralization had been seen, on the whole the British army never had fought better against terrible odds. Small groups of men stood their ground stubbornly when hopelessly outnumbered and died to the last man after taking an awful toll of the advancing enemy. The enemy knew that this year's campaign was his last great gamble, with World Power or Downfall as the stakes, and that having gone into the venture there could be no halting betwixt two opinions, or counting of the cost. He was conscious of the fact that his own people and those of his allies were weary of the strain of war and that unless a complete triumph were secured at once they would refuse to go on with the struggle. And so the enemy frantically spurred on his devoted soldiery.

The marvellous effectiveness of the steps taken by the British government to baffle the enemy's offensive campaign was evident within thirty days of the initial attack. Perhaps the British setback would not have been as great if the same degree of energy, combined with vision, had been shown earlier in the year. At all events, the British were well supplied with reserves of young and partly-trained troops, and with reserves of ammunition, guns and airplanes, all kept in England, and by miracles of transportation it was possible to say that within a month 200,000 fresh troops had been put into France and the numbers and equipment of the British army brought quite up to what they were before the German offensive campaign began. By that time, also, it

Roumania's Queen Marie, a staunch supporter of the Allied cause.

became known that the Germans had used 1,600,000 men in the attacks during the month, of whom more than 1,000,000 had been used against the British, 300,000 against the French and another 300,000 against mixed forces of British and French.

On April 25th Mount Kemmel was in the hands of the Germans but their progress had become painful and very slow. They held positions in a narrow salient against which a punishing fire could be brought to bear from north, west and south, and it seemed likely that their mad rush again was restrained and that they would be forced elsewhere to obtain a spectacular success. During the seven weeks between March 21st and April 30th, the armies of Britain were harder pressed than ever before in their history and they came through with flying colors. Not in the days of Wellington or Marlborough had they shown greater tenacity



Smoke Screen for Protection Against Attack.

or more conspicuous gallantry. Fifty-five British divisions had fought to a standstill no less than 109 German divisions.

It was about this time—on April 23rd—that the British navy essayed to do what the British army in 1917 had attempted, namely, to prevent the enemy from using the German submarine bases on the Belgian coast at Ostend and Zeebrugge. Actually there was but one submarine base and that was at Bruges, at Ostend. Later, the best known of the vessels used in the raid at Zeebrugge, the Vindictive, which had put the landing party on the Mole, was sunk as a blockade vessel off Ostend. These brilliant performances by British seamen were undertaken because of the evidence that for months the British land forces would be in no position to deny the enemy the use of his submarine bases. Their success did much to stimulate the resolution of the British people to persevere until

Roumanian army reorganized, ready to strike death blow against Germans. The Roumanian army had been reorganized by the French, and made ready to fight again.

some miles inland, from which canals ran to Zeebrugge and Ostend. The spectacular raids made on the canals at these places, in which 150 vessels participated, were very successful and for five months denied to the enemy the use of the Belgian coast for the purposes of submarines. Three obsolete British cruisers, filled with concrete, were sunk in the shifting sands at the mouth of the canal at Zeebrugge and two at the mouth of the canal German militarism was destroyed, no matter what the sacrifices.

When May was reached conflicting opinions were expressed by various authorities as to the war outlook. It was reported that Lloyd George was almost irritated by the quiet confidence of General Foch and that turning to the allied generalissimo he asked whether he meant to be understood as saying that he would be rather in the position of the allies than

in the position of the Germans. It is said that the allied generalissimo answered in the affirmative. That may have been the case, but General Foch undoubtedly was looking at general conditions, the vast reserves that were hurrying towards the allies from America and to the final outcome of the war rather than to the prospects for the immediate future. General Robertson of the British army was complimented by the English press at this time for warning the British people that they must expect a long war, which was an unfortunate view to express because it was the very one that had prevented the United States from being ready for the fray in the spring of 1918 and the one, which, if acted on, was most likely to cause the allies to leave undone those extreme things that needed to be done to baffle and defeat the enemy once and for all during the season's campaign. When the middle of May was reached, the view of the British headquarters staff, as semi-officially uttered through the Associated Press was that "for the whole summer the situation must continue to be an anxious one."

By the middle of May the world learned that General Foch had been placed in command of all the allied forces between the Adriatic and the North Seas. Serious as matters were on the French front, there was no certainty that they would not become worse because of the British and French having to increase the aid they had extended to the Italians towards the close of 1917. The Italian army was so weakened by the Isonzo disaster that the allies during the trying days of the following March, April and May had to ever bear in mind that the Italian armies, although much improved in morale and equipment, might not be able to stand alone. It was clear that the moves made on the western and southwestern fronts really would be part of one great campaign and that the allied cause was almost as much concerned with one front as with the other. On that account it was desirable that the reserves of all the allied nations should be pooled and be located and used in the way calculated to give the best results. When Foch took over supreme command of the Italian forces, it was understood that he had under his control 1,200,000 British troops, 1,500,000 French, 250,000 Americans and 1,000,000 Italians. These figures, particularly of Americans and Italians, did

Last chapter in the famous Dumba incident. Goodbye, Doctor Dumba. Doctor and Madame Constantin Dumba aboard the S. S. Nieu Amsterdam, which carried the former Austrian Ambassador and his wife back home on the request to his government by the United States that he be recalled.

not represent all the troops in reserve and in training.

On the 27th of May the German commander-in-chief turned from the British to attack the French. He had been amazed to find that the British had 200,000 men whom they speedily could bring over from England to the battle-front and the fact that the British had made good a large proportion of their losses and that the Germans had suffered casualties estimated at 550,000 as against the British 360,000 casualties, was quite had been weakened appreciably by the extension of its front westward and that the only place where the French were prepared and awaiting attack was east of Rheims. They also may have emphasized the fact that the numerous spurs running from the Aisne ridge down to the river would facilitate the German plan of infiltration and permit large forces to pass in comparative shelter behind the spurs into the valley and the bridgeheads beyond, thus cutting off the allied troops remaining on the high ground. Another

"Herzog Karl," Austrian Battleship Surrendered to Italy.

disconcerting. There are some indications that the Kaiser Wilhelm and Von Hindenburg were disposed to continue all their efforts against the British but that Ludendorff, Von Hindenburg's quartermaster-general and chief lieutenant, sided with the crown prince in demanding that a terrific drive be made against the French on the Aisne heights.

In support of their views, the crown prince and Ludendorff probably urged that the French front north of the Aisne consideration was the fact that near the point where the battle-front curved away from the ridge and passed southward across the Aisne, some overworked British troops had been put in for a rest.

Whatever led the German leaders to change their plans, the fact is that after pounding the British for two months and six days they gave the British a much-needed rest and turned their attentions to the comparatively fresh French armies. They were then sixty miles away from

Paris and fifty miles from the Channel ports. Obviously the allies had much more freedom of movement when the Germans turned southward than they had when the waters of the Channel were so close behind them. An advance of twenty miles westward at almost any point and of ten miles at some points probably would have made it advisable for the allies to abandon Dunkirk, Belgium and the Channel ports and take up a front along the lower Somme river.

in March did not indicate that the morale of the British troops, which had been good throughout four years of war, had deteriorated, and whether the generalship was not even worse. It may be that this feeling was weakened by the developments following the German drive beginning on May 27. On that day the German troops swept across the Ailette river, stormed the Aisne heights on the far side and sweeping southward reached the Aisne river in the rear of many thou-

The Great German Battle Cruiser "Moltke" among those surrendered to the Allies.

On the whole it appears that the Germans were guilty of a first-class blunder when they gave the British a breathing spell that lasted for nearly two months or until the allies were able to return to the offensive. The best that can be said for their tactics is that they hoped by a sudden change of front to catch the allies off their guard.

Up to this time there were some people in France who were wondering whether the great reverse suffered by the British

sands of allied troops. The British troops sandwiched in among the French were put in a particularly precarious position by the collapse of the French front immediately west of them. The troops of both nations, however, fought gallantly. They were attacked by forces outnumbering them by at least two to one.

Four days after the Aisne attack began the enemy was in full possession of the famous Chemin Des Dames (Ladies' Walk) and the territory taken by the

French at the cost of well on to two hundred thousand casualties in the abortive Nivelle offensive in April of the previous year. Not only so, but the enemy was 30 miles beyond his starting point, having driven a mighty wedge into the allied front that reached all the way to the Marne river. The front of attack was more than forty miles wide. During the first three days of his advance the victorious enemy captured more than 400 guns and more than 45,000 prisoners, and Marne river, sixteen miles apart. The check to the enemy administered by the Americans came at a critical moment. The enemy for the second time in the war was across the Marne river, and heading for Paris. The Americans, with some French troops, tackled the enemy at Chateau Thierry and at Jaulgonne, on the east, and hurled the enemy back to the north bank. The enemy was not in great strength, fortunately, but his loss of the bridgehead held up his advance

Types of Austrian Troops That Invaded Roumania.

British papers printed statements to the effect that the whole war situation had become one of "the utmost gravity." During their advance to the Marne the enemy crossed two important lateral lines of communication, including the railway running to Verdun from Paris through Rheims.

June the 4th saw some signs of improvement from the allied viewpoint. On that day troops from the United States came into action at two points on the and made it necessary for him to make elaborate preparations for forcing the river. The general situation still caused uneasiness and Premier Clemenceau, whose frequent visits to the front did much to inspire confidence on the part of both civilians and military, took the precaution of ordering the creation of a Committee for the Defence of Paris.

It has not been made clear as to what extent, if at all, the defeat on the Aisne heights was due to the faulty staff work

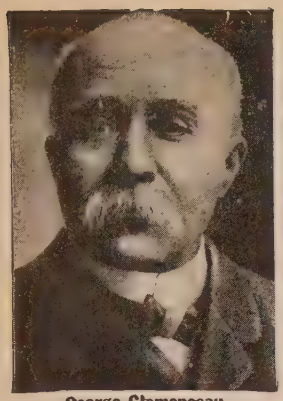
A United States Soldier Completely Equipped for Service. On his back this American fighting man carries his blanket roll, small shovel, bag, etc. His canteen is at his belt. He is armed with a 30 calibre U. S. Army rifle. Minimum weight for maximum efficiency is the principle upon which his whole outfit has been designed.

of the local commander. There are some indications that the defensive measures were not of the best. The measures put into effect two weeks later when the enemy tried to widen his offensive front and merge the new Marne salient with the Montdidier salient by attacking on both sides of the Oise river were extraordinarily successful and the local counter-attacks were much more powerful and effective than on any previous occasion. American troops near Montdidier had some part in delivering these counter blows. While the enemy advanced a maximum distance of six miles on a front of thirty miles he did not gain a spectacular success, a fact which was not covered up by the declaration of the Prussian War Minister that as a result of the two blows a large part of the French army had been defeated.

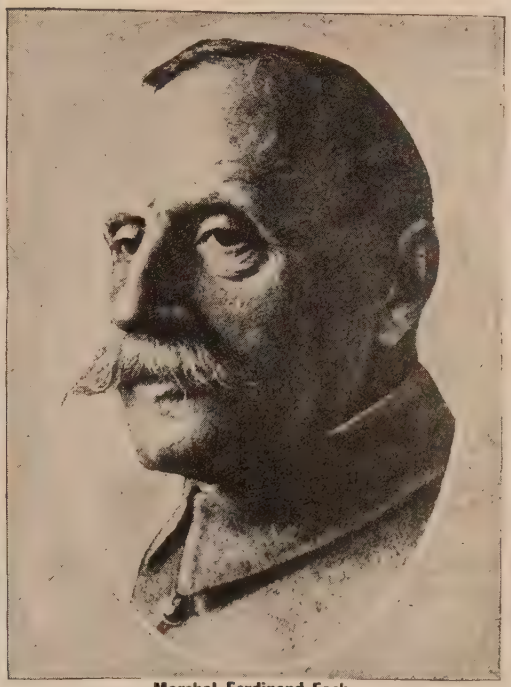
The Aisne attack was a most spectacular victory, bought at a very low price, but the attack on the Oise sector undoubtedly cost the enemy more casualties than it cost the French and the enemy made no appreciable progress towards his goal, which was the destruction of the British and French armies before the power of the United States could be made to tell. American troops continued to arrive at the rate of a quarter of a million a month and already those that had preceded them were rendering aid of some consequence.

The severe check administered to the Germans early in June at the Oise gave the enemy something to think about. It forced him to take time to make more careful preparation for his next attack which, in view of the advance in the season, necessarily had to be much more successful than any that had preceded it. This delay was imposed on the enemy when it was only too plain to him that speed was the essence of victory. The situation for the enemy was most exasperating. He was tantalizingly near to the Channel ports and tantalizingly near to the French capital, possession of either of which would have given him a powerful lever in securing peace. No doubt he

# The Victorious Allied Leaders



George Clemenceau, French Premier.



Marshal Ferdinand Foch, generalissimo of the allied armies.

David Lloyd-George, British premier.

Gen. John J. Pershing, commander in chief of the American expeditionary forces.

Woodrow Wilson, President of the United States.

King Albert I. of Belgium, also commander of armies.

Gen. Sir Douglas Haig, c'd'r. in chief of the British armies

Col. E. M. House, personal adviser to President Wilson.

Raymond Poincare, President of France

Premier Venizelos, the man who did most to bring Greece in on the side of the allies.

King Victor Emmanuel of Italy.

Gen. Diaz, commander in chief of the Italian armies.

Crown Prince Alexander of Serbia, commander of the Serbian army.

also felt he was tantalizingly near to overpowering the hard-pressed allied armies which, however, always seemed to have just enough strength left to baffle his efforts to deliver the coup de mort.

A circumstance that added to the irritation of the enemy was the tardiness of the Austrians in striking on the Italian front. The German warlords felt that a triumph on the Italian front, where the allies held vulnerable positions, would help materially their campaign in France.

Cheered by these developments, Lloyd George declared that "there is not the slightest doubt in my mind, surveying the whole facts, that our victory will be complete." A few days later, Von Kuehlmann, the German Foreign Minister, was dismissed for stating that a military victory was beyond the reach of either side, a view he probably was put up to express in the hope of evoking a favorable response from the allied side, and a view that the Kaiser and Von Hindenburg are

The great Teutonic drive into Russia. Austrian troops with arms stacked enjoying a brief rest in the mountains.

In the middle of June the Austrians did attack, but after an opening success of considerable dimensions, nature opened the floodgates of heaven and severed communication with the far bank of the Piave river, and the Austrian offensive collapsed. Almost simultaneously the Germans made a minor attack, with 40,000 men against the acute salient around Rheims, and this, too, was a dismal failure.

supposed to have shared. The extremists among the warlords were furious at this moderate statement, which was not unreasonable considering that the German losses of nearly a million men in less than four months had not brought a decisive success.

An estimate of the German and allied casualties in the four drives of the German offensive campaign taking place before the first of July is as follows:

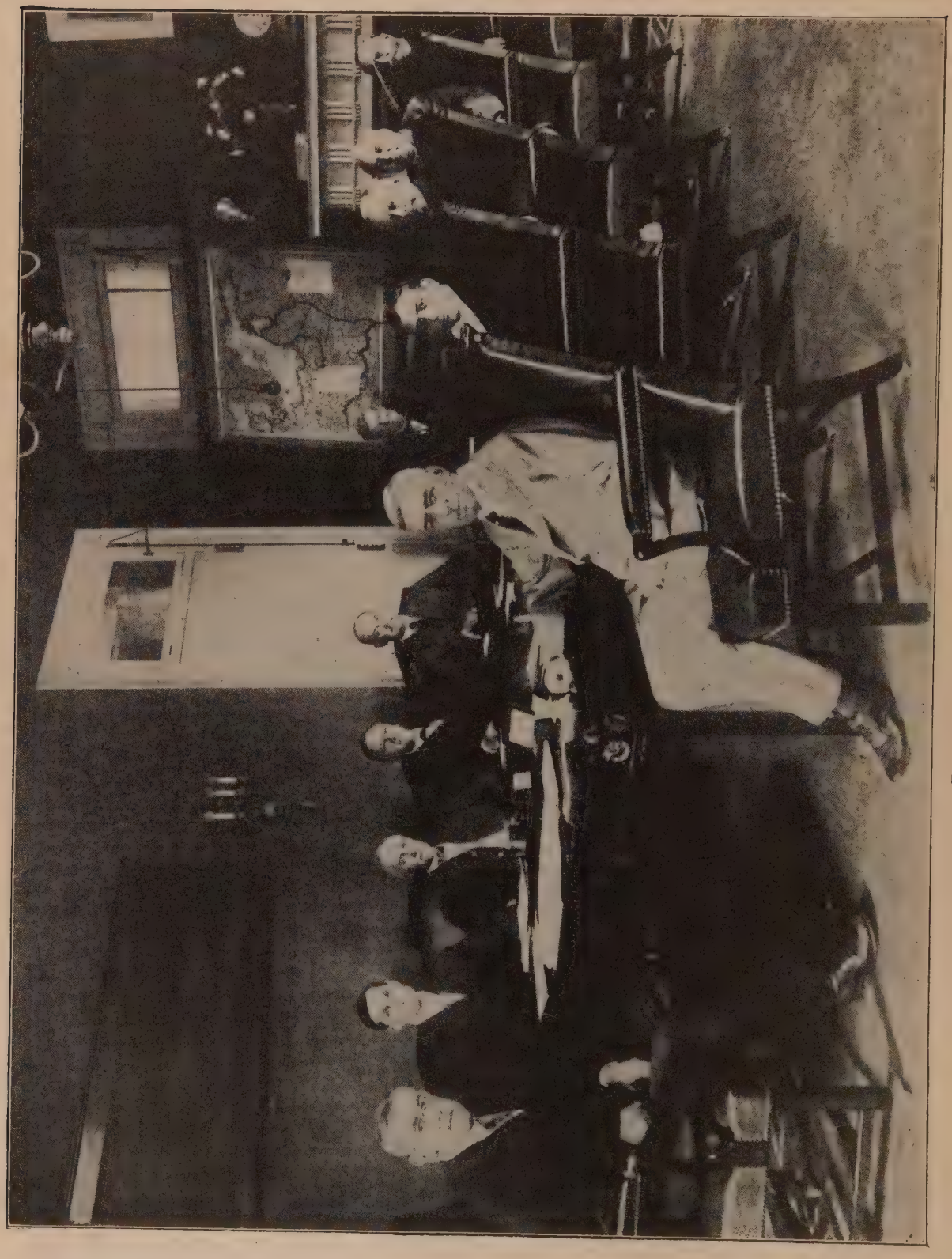
| Offensive. | German casualties. | Allied casualties. |
|---|---|---|
| March 31 | 350,000 | 200,000 |
| April 9 | 200,000 | 160,000 |
| May 27 | 125,000 | 150,000 |
| June 9 | 225,000 | 150,000 |
| Total casualties Mar. 31-July 1 | 900,000 | 660,000 |

The fifth and last of the drives of the German offensive campaign in 1918 began on July 15. The allied battle-front, which formerly had stretched in a general direction northerly to the North Sea from the Aisne, now appeared as a bent and twisted thing. It bagged alarmingly in three places as a result of the driving forward of the German battering-ram. These huge salients were west of Lille in the Lys valley, between Arras and Soissons and between Soissons and Rheims, the last two being referred to sometimes as the Montdidier and Marne salients. Between these two salients in the German line the allied line curved sharply away from Paris around the forests of Villiers-Cotterets and Compiegne. On the south end of this salient, between the Marne and the Aisne, French and American troops applied persistent pressure during June and drove the enemy back two or three miles but without reducing the Marne salient to a degree dangerous for the Germans.

The enemy, as we have seen, was very anxious to merge the Marne and Montdidier salients and acquire a broad front opposite Paris from which he could maintain a continuous bombardment of the city with a multitude of guns capable of firing forty miles, but the allied resistance here was too strong, and he determined to wage east of Rheims the offensive he had prepared earlier in the season, attacking southward, at the same time as he tried to move southward and southeastward from the east side of the Marne salient. He was aware that Foch had massed troops between the Marne front and Paris and he hoped that by eluding these by going round them on the east, he could surround Rheims and sweep over Epernay and Chalons with ease, and three days later be forty miles from his starting point and far to the southeast of Paris. Such a success would have placed the allied armies in a more serious position than they were in the opening month of the war.

A United States Naval Militia Bugler Sounding a Call "To the Colors"

The last German offensive in the war was doomed to failure from the outset.



President Wilson and his Cabinet.

The enemy used half a million men in this effort and would have put in more had his initial attack obtained success. He made the cardinal error of putting into the Marne salient, which was 25 miles deep and only 25 miles across, hundreds of thousands of men with the vast supplies of material required for a great drive. His lines of communication within the salient were vulnerable to shellfire from three directions and his thickly-massed troops were sure to encounter a better. Under the skilful leadership of General Gouraud, they withdrew from the heights of Moronvilliers, evaded the blow dealt at them and terribly decimated the enemy as he advanced across the shattered outpost positions. The enemy's advance here averaged only a mile and a half on a 25-mile front. The enemy was in such apparent difficulty in his isolated position south of the Marne and he had suffered such heavy losses at all points without compensation, that General Foch

Canadian and French troops resting around a high velocity gun captured by the Canadians.

punishing fire. The consequence was that the best the enemy could do west of Rheims was to advance a maximum distance of five miles on a 25-mile front, the average being only three miles. This advance enabled him to gain a precarious foothold or bridgehead south of the Marne. Here the Americans did exceptionally well and they and the French always were masters of the situation.

East of Rheims the French did even concluded that the time had come for snatching the initiative from the enemy. And so on July the 18th, three days after the opening of the Germans' final offensive effort, the allied generalissimo let loose the allied thunderbolt and French and American troops began the first allied offensive of the year by attacking the 25 miles of German front nearest to Paris. In this onslaught the allies used 200,000 troops.

Photo by BRITISH & COLONIAL PRESS, TORONTO

OFFICIAL PHOTOGRAPH TAKEN ON THE BRITISH WESTERN FRONT

A "Fatigue Party" clearing the road through a newly captured village on the Western Front. Note the stacked guns in the foreground.

The allied attack was successful beyond all expectations. As the German storm troops facing eastward battered themselves in vain against the allied defences on the east side of the Marne salient the allied offensive troops, also facing eastward, smashed in the western side of the salient on which the Germans were standing on the defensive. Thus an attacking allied army was moving in the same direction, roughly, as the German attacking forces on the far side of the salient and at a distance of only 25 miles in their rear, a situation seldom seen in warfare. In the first two days of their attack the allies advanced eight miles, capturing 17,000 Germans and 360 guns. Within two weeks, notwithstanding the most frantic opposition, they had advanced 16 miles, the Marne salient had been reduced, 500 square miles of the soil of France had been redeemed, and 30,000 Germans and 500 cannon had been captured.

The turning back of the tide of German invasion in 1918 was due to the same causes as explain the ebbing of the tide of German militarism in 1914. The enemy was overconfident and underrated the offensive powers of the allied forces, and as a result, made inadequate provision for the protection of the right flank of his advancing armies. And so when the allied shock troops attacked on July 18 under General Mangin they turned the flank of Von Boehm's army as General Manoury four years before, at the previous battle of the Marne, had turned the flank of Von Kluck's army. On each occasion the enemy was taken at a serious disadvantage and had to retreat. By tremendous effort and at great sacrifice immediate disaster was averted, but the setback in both battles deprived the Germans of their chance of victory and doomed them to ultimate defeat. In 1914 the commander-in-chief of the German armies was Von Moltke; in 1918 it was Von Hindenburg.

No greater mistake can be made than to imagine that General Foch had lured

Getting Ready to Pay the Boys at Camp Meade. No less than $300,000 is in sight here.

the Germans on to the Marne by pretending weakness and that he was sure of victory when he struck back. The whole period from March 21 to July 15 was one of genuine anxiety for the allied military leaders and statesmen and as late as the middle of June the allies were discussing whether it would be better to evacuate Paris or the Channel ports. When the Germans began their last offensive on July 15, they had a superiority of half a million men on the western front or three times the numerical superiority they had on March 21st. A much larger proportion of their men, however, had become battle-worn owing to unparalleled exertions. There is not the slightest doubt that General Foch was gravely concerned about the degree of success the enemy might gain in July. He felt that the allies could not afford to give more ground as any considerable German advance would imperil the integrity of the allied armies or at least put the enemy in a position where he could bring great pressure on the allies to make peace.

General Foch took terrible risks in July in preparing to prevent a German advance on Paris. He concluded that the enemy meant to make an attack in that direction and therefore he withdrew 200,-

ITALY
AND SAN MARINO
SCALE OF MILES
0 20 40 60 80 100
NAPLES
GULF OF NAPLES
GULF OF SALERNO
SCALE OF MILES
0 2 4 6 8
SWITZERLAND
HUNGARY
BOSNIA
HERZEGOVINA
ITALY
ADRIATIC SEA
LIGURIAN SEA
TYRRHENIAN SEA
MEDITERRANEAN SEA
IONIAN SEA
SICILIAN N SEA
Malta Channel
SICILY
SARDINIA
CORSICA
AFRICA
TUNIS
Gulf of Tunis
Gulf of Hammamet
Gulf of Genoa
Gulf of Venice
Mouths of the Po
Gulf of Orosei
Gulf of Salerno
Gulf of Taranto
Gulf of Cattaro
Strait of Bonifacio
Strait of Messina
Mt. Etna
Mt. Vesuvius
Naples
ROME
R. Tiber
VENICE
Florence
Milan
Turin
Genoa
Trieste
Palermo
Catania
Syracuse
Messina
Reggio
Taranto
Brindisi
Bari
Ancona
Pescara
Leghorn
Pisa
Siena
Perugia
Rimini
Ravenna
Bologna
Verona
Padua
Trento
Udine
Trieste
Zara
Ragusa
Spalato
Seravejo
Malta
Valletta
Tripoli
Bizerta
Algiers
Marseilles
Nice
Monaco
Cannes
Corsica
Sardinia
Elba
Capri
Ischia
Sicily
Aeolian Islands
Stromboli
Ustica I.
Pantelleria I.
Linosa I.
Gozo
Maltese Islands
Corrents I.
Lampedusa
Gerba I.
Kerkenah Is.
Souk Ahras
Bona
Hammamet
Tunis
Cape Bon
Cape Negro
Galita I.
Sardinia
Corsica
Elba
Capri
Ischia
Procida
Sorrento
Amalfi
Salerno
Pompeii
Vesuvius
Capua
Gaeta
Terracina
Anzio
Civitavecchia
Orbetello
Piombino
Leghorn
Pisa
Lucca
Florence
Arezzo
Perugia
Assisi
Rieti
Aquila
Pescara
Chieti
Foggia
Bari
Brindisi
Taranto
Lecce
Otranto
Strait of Otranto
Gallipoli
Cape Leuca
Cape Spartivento
Cape Passero
Cape Bon
Cape Carbonara
Cape Corso
Cape Testa
Cape Feno
Cape Muro
Cape Rosso
Cape Negro
Cape Guardia
Cape Boeo
Cape Colonne
Cape Rizzuto
Cape Stilo
Cape Vaticano
Cape Palinuro
Cape Circeo
Cape Miseno
Cape Campanella
Cape Gallo
Cape Zafferano
Cape Gallo
Cape Mongerbino
Cape Gallo
Cape Gallo
Cape Gallo

000 men from positions north of the Somme and held them in readiness in the region between Paris and the nearest point on the battle-front. Superior German forces under Prince Rupprecht of Bavaria still were menacing the vital northern sector and had the German strategists learned of the secret movement southward of allied reserves they might have made another dash forward towards the mouth of the Somme and imperilled all the allied troops in Flanders and the Artois. The enemy appears to have been ignorant of the secret concentration of allied reserves opposite Paris at the expense of the northern allied front and when at comparatively low cost the allies on the Marne and in the Champagne baffled the enemy's blow on July 15, without employing the bulk of their reserves, an obvious opportunity to upset his plans and secure the initiative developed.

We have the authority of General Foch for the statement that he had in his mind no grandiose plan for winning the war when he turned to the offensive. In self-defence he had to strike back at the Marne and later on he found opportunities for waging a genuine offensive campaign. The enemy's stupidity in putting his head into the Marne salient noose gave Foch his first chance, and finding his first drive so successful, Foch thought he would try another, and the second led to the third, and the offensive front gradually widened out until the attack extended to the whole 200 miles of front between Verdun and the North Sea. The main idea of General Foch in the early weeks of the offensive was to put the enemy into a new hole just before he succeeded in getting out of another hole. On each occasion the enemy had to engage additional portions of his reserves until finally he lost his offensive power and even the ability to defend himself. The factor that contributed most to the success of the successive allied drives was the extraordinary secrecy of concentration against the sectors to be attacked. This, also, was the real explanation of the advantages gained by the enemy in his four-months' offensive campaign. At one time it was thought that the huge quantities of war material and the masses of men required for an offensive could not be brought up to any front without being seen by the enemy in time to give ample warning. It also was thought that weeks of bombardment were necessary to reduce the enemy's fortified positions. But as the quantities of munitions and the number of guns along the entire front multiplied, their significance became less obvious, as indicating the nearness of an offensive, and in time it became apparent that a bombardment of but a few hours would suffice to obliterate the strongest fortified systems. Consequently, all that remained to do to obtain the tremendous advantage of surprise and bring about a war of movement was to have hundreds of thousands of men ready to hurl through the breach before the enemy could discover the plan and make a similar concentration opposite the breach. It was this new element of surprise due to the artillery of the offensive mastering the fortified systems of the defensive that revolutionized warfare on the western front and that distinguished the campaign

Soldiers charge German dummies for Red Cross benefit at Fort Hamilton. Besides the event shown in this picture, there were artillery and machine gun drills by the soldiers.

Photo by BRITISH & COLONIAL PRESS, TORONTO

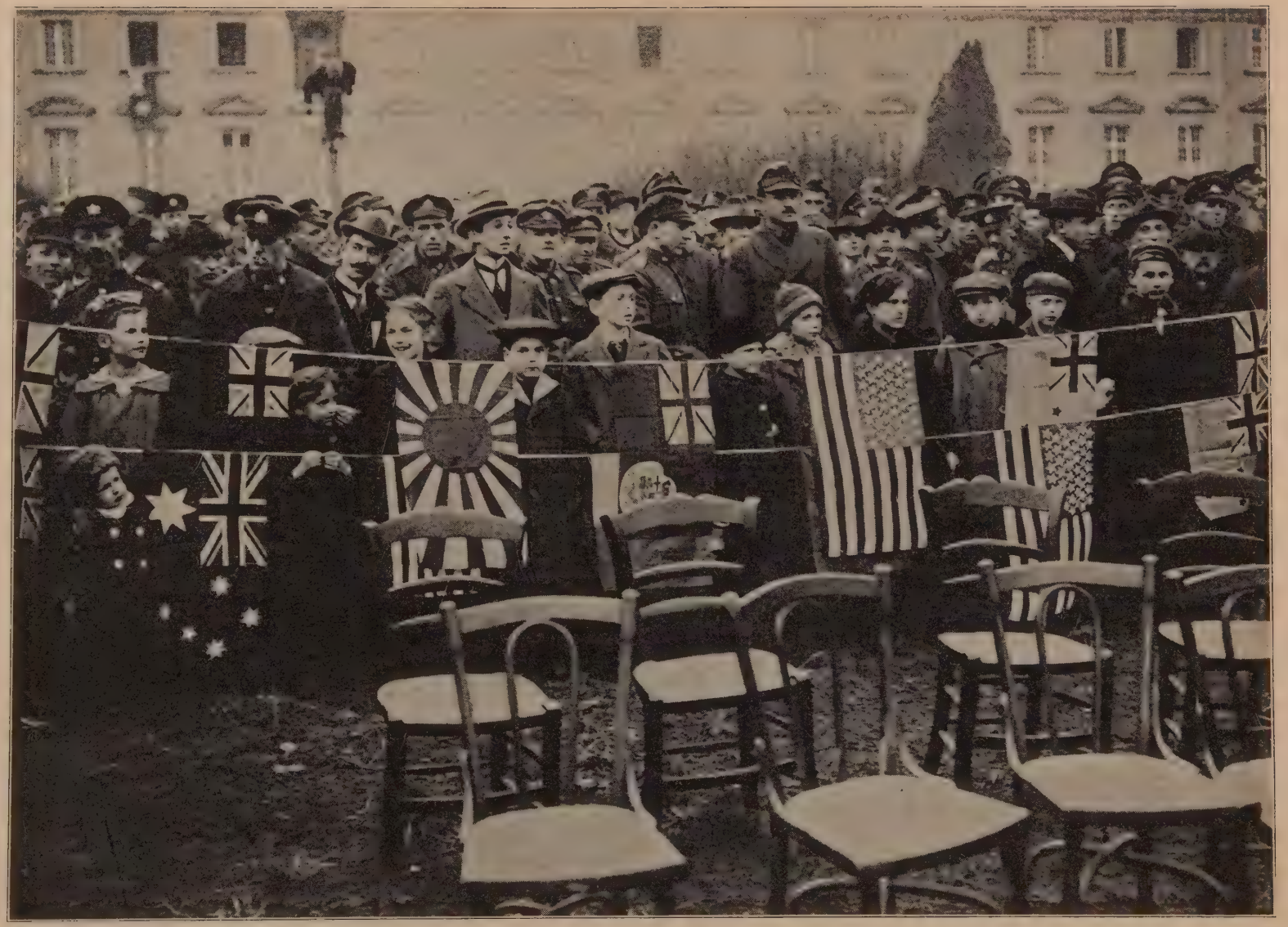
BRITISH OFFICIAL PHOTOGRAPH FROM THE WESTERN FRONT

Digging a communication trench through what was once Delville Wood. This gives one a very good idea of the devastating effect of modern artillery.

of 1918 from those that preceded it.

Foch's second blow, delivered with a view to retaining the much-prized initiative, was struck by British and French troops south of the Somme river on August 8th. In this attack most of the glory went to the Canadian and Australian troops, which with the 51st British division and a few others comprised the best assault troops in the British army. The Canadian army corps had been on the Vimy front in March and then were taken out and moved south so as to be ready to cope with the enemy in the event of a deadly break through. The crisis passing without it being necessary to employ them, the Canadians were given a special course of training back of Arras. When the time came for the attack on the Somme front, Foch gave orders for the strictest secrecy and for elaborate measures for deceiving the Germans. While the bulk of the Canadian troops were smuggled under cover of night to the Amiens region, some battalions were moved northward to Belgium, where they moved down the roads in broad daylight with colors flying and bands playing, and were put into the firing line near Mount Kemmel. Here telephone conversations

Battleship Pennsylvania, Super-Dreadnaught.



"CANADIAN OFFICIAL" PHOTOGRAPH

A great sports day was held in Bonn between the Canadians and Americans when an abundance of military and civilians were present. Canadian massed bands and American bands played selections and enlivened the proceedings. Picture shows the enthusiastic children of Bonn glancing between the flags.

were put on for the express benefit of the German listeners and enemy spies. A few American troops and British shock troops also went through movements suggesting that an attack was about to be made. Then when the enemy was taking steps to meet a tremendous attack on the Mount Kemmel front, the camouflage troops were rushed back to their own units and the mighty drive up the Somme valley began.

13 miles on a front of 25 miles taking 14,000 prisoners and hundreds of guns during the first day of their advance. Many units took more prisoners than the total number of their casualties. By the end of the first day the main line of communication and retreat for the enemy within the Montdidier salient was gravely threatened and the enemy was under the necessity of evacuating it at a much faster rate than he abandoned the apex of the

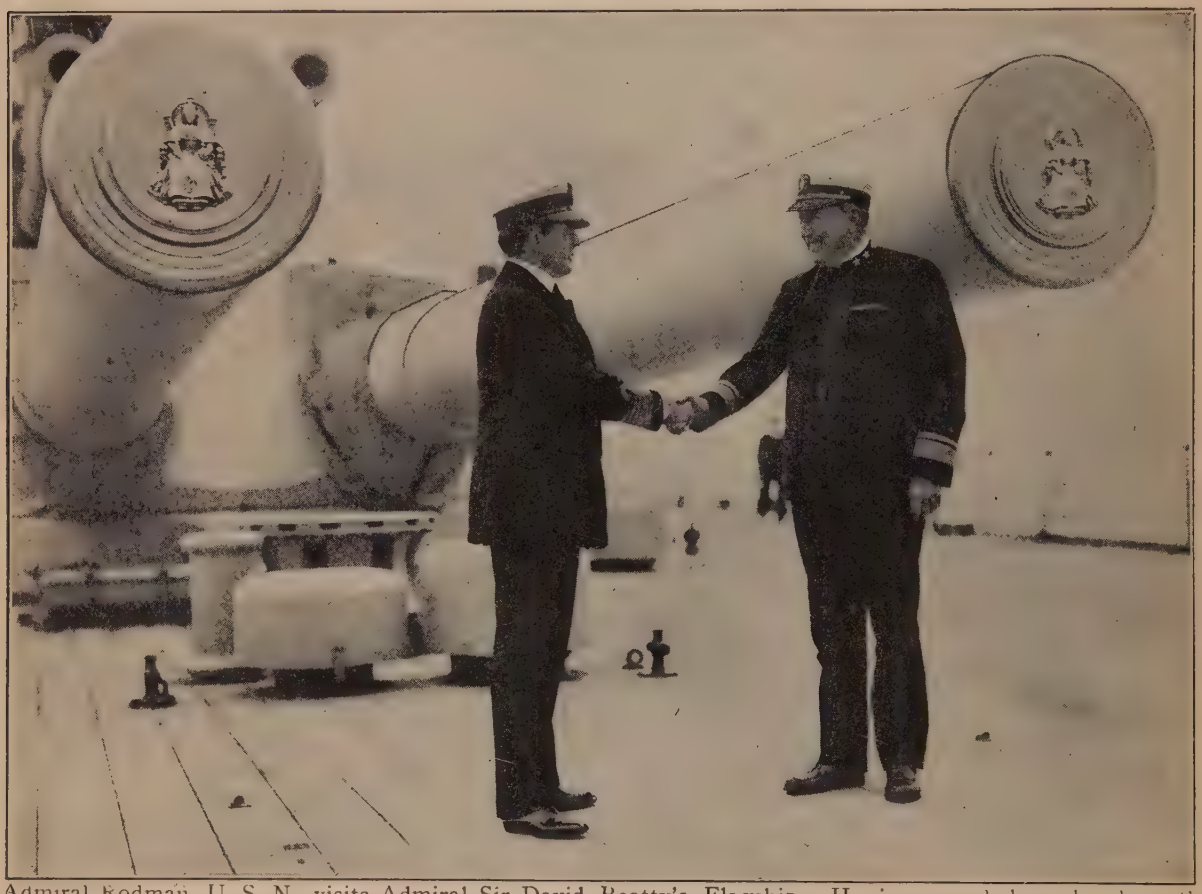
Battleship Nevada, Super-Dreadnaught, on Speed Trial.

The second battle of the Somme was a splendid victory for the British and French. The Fourth Army under General Rawlinson represented the British. The enemy was completely surprised and swept off his feet. With the aid of tanks and thousands of mounted troops, the allies advanced a maximum distance of

Marne salient. By August 12, the enemy was retreating on most of the 100-mile front between Amiens and Rheims. Instead of being in Paris as he had fondly hoped less than a month before when he attacked on the Marne the enemy was retiring towards the Hindenburg line after suffering at least 325,000 casualties

—80,000 of whom were captives in the hands of the allies—and losing 1,400 guns and 850 square miles of French territory.

It must not be thought that the world by this time had formed the opinion that the enemy would lose the war in 1918. The public simply felt that the period of the most intense anxiety probably was past. Some of the highest military authorities reminded the public that the Germans had sprung a come-back after the Byng tank attack near Cambrai in November of 1917 and that the same thing might happen again. Colonel Repington of the London Times expressed the opinion that the Germans might resume their offensive and he advised General Foch not to be imprudent and try for a knockout in 1918. Frank Simonds, the great American war expert, also intimated that the enemy retirement to the Hindenburg line might be unfortunate for the allies as it had been the year before, that the allies would have to slowly advance through innumerable fortified lines before they reached victory, and that the threat to German home territory in possible thrusts by the American army "will hardly be grave." He even went so far as to say that "our enemy has too many reserves and too many prepared positions behind his present front to be in danger of disaster this year and probably next." It is clear that at this time some of the experts did not sense the real situation.



Admiral Rodman, U. S. N., visits Admiral Sir David Beatty's Flagship. He is seen shaking hands with the Commander in Chief.

On August 19 the French attacked on the front east of the Oise river. Their

advance here linked up the allied offensive fronts north of the Marne and east of Amiens. At this time the Germans still clung to Roye and Chaulnes and held positions in the old battle zones of 1915-16 west of the upper Somme. Two days later the British Third Army under General Byng drove forward to the south of Arras, advancing five miles on a 17-mile front and securing 10,000 prisoners. Here the British were moving at right angles to their battle-front in the first battle of the Somme. The ease with which they filtered down the Bapaume ridge between the numerous fortified lines of the previous battle quickly discredited the views then in circulation about the impregnability of the positions they were about to attack.

Arrival of President and Mrs. Wilson in Brest, France, on Board S. S. George Washington.

Opinions differ as to which particular allied attack in the 1918 campaign was the first to signify that the German armies would be overthrown in the fighting season of that year. Some mention the attack made on October 8, when the Hindenburg line was breached between Cambrai and St. Quentin. It is more likely that the attacks made by the Canadians and other British troops east of Arras in the week beginning August 27th really determined that the enemy would have to submit. In the drives of July 18 and August 8 the allies surprised an enemy who virtually was out in the open, protected by only improvised defences and occupying ugly salients. On August 27th, however, he was expecting an attack and felt confident in the strength of the permanent fortified systems he had prepared with the utmost

Photo by BRITISH & COLONIAL PRESS, TORONTO

General Smuts with Colonel Parcival, officer in charge at the South African camp, arriving for an inspection. General Smuts, although a former Boer leader, is now a staunch British citizen. He is credited with having played an important part in connection with the drafting of the Constitution of the League of Nations.

care during the preceding two years. These included the famous Drocourt-Queant switch line, with a section of the Hindenburg line in front of it and another line behind it. The Canadians, who had been taken out of the Somme front a few days after that drive began and by a wide detour of more than fifty miles had been brought up to the Arras front, were supposed by the enemy to be taking a rest, whereas they were sent hurling through the Hindenburg line on August 27 and a few days later through the even more powerful Drocourt line. Each of these so-called lines consisted of several series of entrenchments, with elaborate underground tunnels and innumerable redoubts and machine gun posts. The wonderful success of the Canadians, with little or no help from tanks, against the positions relied on by the enemy to check the allied advance, convinced the high German command that it had no artificial defences that could give its overworked armies the rest that alone could stave off disaster. German officers have admitted that the smashing of the lines east of Arras by the Canadians dashed any lingering hopes they had of averting defeat.

The grand work of the Canadians had appreciable results both north and south. It hastened a German retirement from the Lys river salient which already had begun and it speeded up the retirement north of the Somme. On August 29 Bapaume and Combles were taken, Mount Kemmel was abandoned to the British and the enemy was in retreat on the 70 miles of front between Ypres and Peronne. The general situation made it inevitable that the enemy also should withdraw on the 80 miles of front between Peronne and Rheims.

American Artillerymen on the Marne Front.

By September 12 it was evident that the Germans were losing ground much faster than they had gained it in the spring campaign. That day was made famous in history by the army of the

**A Depth Bomb need not actually hit a submarine to destroy it.**

United States launching its first independent offensive effort. The work assigned to it was the elimination of the St. Mihiel salient which had resisted the pressure brought against it by the French during four years of warfare. The salient was in the shape of a foot. It had been there since September, 1914, when German militarism tried to stride across the Meuse south of St. Mihiel and trample over prostrate France. The foot was arrested at St. Mihiel when poised for the next step. The First American Army under General Liggett, acting under the supervision of General Pershing, attacked this salient from the north and from the south, and crushed it in as though it were an eggshell, taking well on to 15,000 prisoners and more than 100 guns. The French troops co-operating with the Americans, took 7,000 prisoners. In August as many as 322,000 American troops landed in France and the number of men available for the front was in the neighborhood of half a million. The wiping out of the St. Mihiel salient permitted General Foch to go on with plans for attacks on the all-important German lateral line of communication running through Sedan and Montmedy or for an attack in Lorraine, south of Metz.

On the day in which the Americans struck first as an independent army, the German Vice-Chancellor, Von Payer, announced that "Strong and courageous in the consciousness of our own invincibility, we laugh at the idea that we should first penitently ask for mercy before we are admitted to peace negotiations." This speech was made to give the allies an idea of the terms the Teutons would want if the allies agreed to the request Austria-Hungary was making at that moment for a peace conference in some neutral country while hostilities continued. The main provision was that Germany should be allowed to retain her conquests in the East while abandoning her spoils in the West and restoring Belgium. A few days later, the Serbians broke the Bulgarian front in

General Sir Edmund Henry Hyman Allenby who commanded the British forces that have won successes in the campaign against the Turks in Palestine.

"The Train, Deprived of Its Guiding Hand, Hurtled Along to Its Final Destruction"; a British Aeroplane Attacking An Enemy Supply-Train With Bomb and Machine-Gun. Our daring air-fighters no longer remain always at great heights to attack their objectives, but fly low whenever opportunity offers, and use their machine-guns as well as bombs. One recently attacked an enemy anti-aircraft gun thus. The exploit here illustrated is described as follows: "This incident occurred on the Eastern Front. The illustration shows two naval airmen attacking a train laden with stores. Bombs were dropped from a height of 150 feet, and fell close to one side of the train. The machine then came down to 50 feet, and from this height the observer fired a tray of ammunition into the cab of the engine, killing the driver. The stoker jumped out in panic, and the train, deprived of its guiding hand, hurtled along to its final destruction." Similar feats are frequently performed by our airmen.

THE "VICTORIOUS RETREAT" BACK TO THE RHINE.

Huns struggling, not hopefully forward to Victory, but dejectedly backward to defeat, under bombing planes ceaselessly showering death upon them.

BIG GUNS AT CHATEAU THIERRY. THE ARTILLERY SUPPORTED THE INFANTRY AND MADE THE GREAT VICTORY POSSIBLE

Stretcher-Bearers Bringing Wounded Under Fire From the Enemy.

Macedonia and the British overwhelmed the Turkish army in Palestine. Before October opened Bulgaria, finding Germany was unable to give her help, surrendered unconditionally.

The closing days of September saw allied victories all up and down the western front. Within three days the American forces west of the Meuse smashed forward 10 miles on a 20-mile front; the French to the west of them in the Champagne advanced 7 miles on a 20-mile front, taking 10,000 prisoners; the British on the Cambrai front advanced 7 miles on a 35-mile front, taking 22,000 prisoners and 300 guns, and reaching the outskirts of Cambrai, and the British and Belgians on both sides of Ypres advanced 10 miles on a 20-mile front, capturing Dixmude, Passchendaele, Roulers, Menin and Langemarck, 10,000 prisoners and 100 guns. At that time the enemy was retiring on the whole front between Verdun and Nieuport with the exception of ten miles of front next the coast.

The outlook now became so alarming for Germany that on Saturday, October 5, Germany intimated to President Wilson that she desired an armistice and a peace conference in which the 14 points of President Wilson would be the basis of discussion. The allies saw that Germany preferred to talk rather than to fight and they insisted on Germany binding herself more specifically and also that during negotiations she conduct warfare according to the laws of nations and otherwise give evidence of good faith. In the meantime they redoubled their efforts to destroy the German armies, and on October 8, with the aid of many thousands of American troops, the British crashed through the powerful Hindenburg defences north of St. Quentin and in two days advanced into open country beyond to a depth of 12 miles on a 20-mile front, taking 200 guns and 20,000 prisoners. This success precipitated an enemy retirement from the Chemin des Dames, the Champagne and the northern Argonne. In the north the Canadians captured Cambrai. A few days later new Belgian and British attacks led to the capture of Lille, Ostend, Bruges, Roulers and Menin. Retreating on the south, the enemy surrendered Laon, La Fere and Vouziers.

On October 22, Germany gave the pledges required by the allies and the United States agreed to forward Germany's request for an armistice. Already the allies had redeemed 6,000 square miles of French soil and 900 square miles of Belgian soil. According to one estimate the German and allied offensives in 1918 up to this time, compared as follows:

| | *German Offensive 119 days March 21-July 18* | *Allied Offensive 98 days July 18-Oct. 24* |
|---|---|---|
| Ground captured in square miles | 2,770 | 7,300 |
| Guns captured | 2,200 | 4,600 |
| Prisoners taken | 200,000 | 300,000 |
| Casualties inflicted by attacking army | 700,000 | 1,000,000 |
| Casualties suffered by attacking army | 1,000,000 | 700,000 |

According to this estimate the total allied casualties from March 21, were 1,400,000 and those of the Germans 2,000,000. The allied losses had been made good by the increase of the American forces which now comprised two armies, the Second being under General Bullard. Including troops in training the United States had 2,000,000 men across seas.

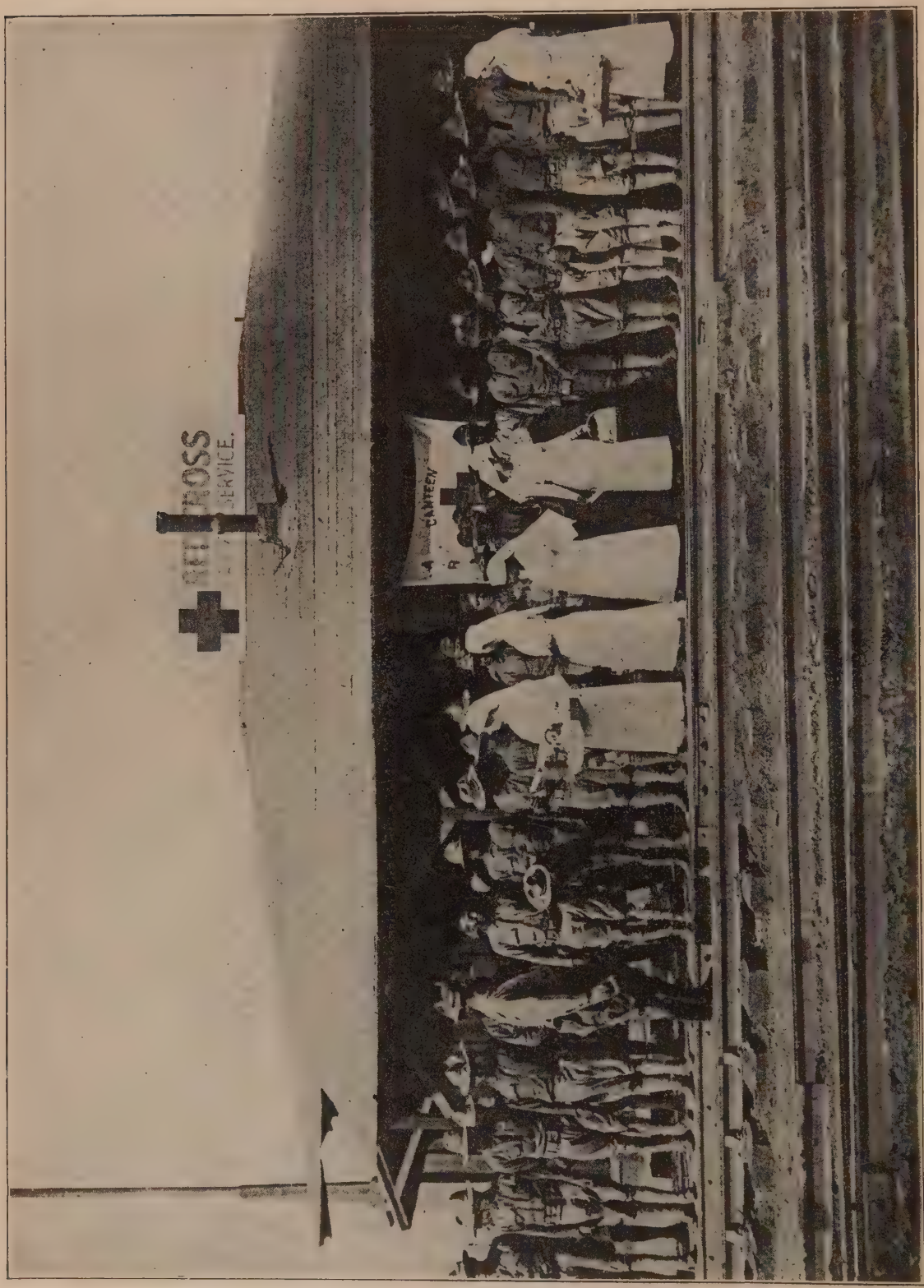
The events during the last week of October suggested that the war was hurrying to an end. The Italians attacked on the Piave front and with British storm-troops and a small American force playing an important role, broke through the Austrian army, capturing 100,000 men and 600 guns, and placing the remainder

Americans in Shell Holes in "No Man's Land," Preparing for the Gas Waves Coming Toward Them.

French entering Village after Armistice locating bomb traps

of the Austrian forces, which were handicapped by revolutions in Bohemia and Jugo-Slavia, at the mercy of the allies. On November 4 the Austrians signed an armistice that represented absolute submission. When this armistice went into effect 1,000,000 Austrians and 6,000 guns —in reality the whole Austrian army— were in the possession of Italy.

During the first week in November the allies dashed forward 11 miles, south of the Dutch frontier, and reached Ghent. One hundred miles away on the southeast the French and Americans did magnificent work. The enemy, in trying to retreat to his own country, had to pass through two "funnels," the one running eastward through Liege and the other southeastward through Sedan and Montmedy. The Ardennes forest and hills lying between these funnels prevented hasty




Colored Troopers Embarking for the Front Are Receiving Refreshments and Tobacco from the Red Cross.

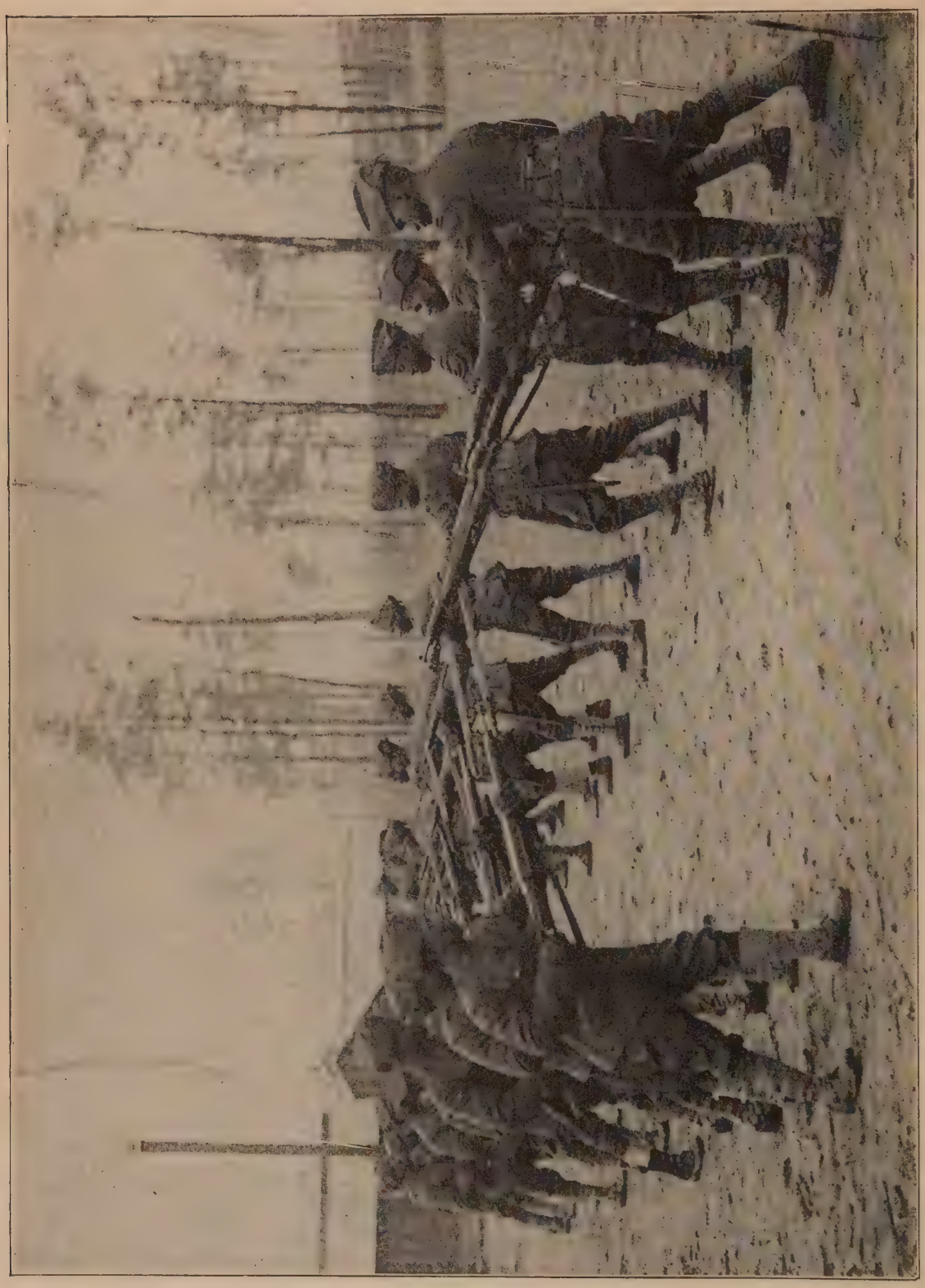
withdrawal there, and the two funnels were quite unequal to the demands made upon them. Matters, therefore, were made doubly critical for the enemy when the Americans advanced 14 miles on a 25-mile front west of the Meuse and reached points only 10 miles from Montmedy and 15 miles from Sedan

Recognizing that the jig was up, Germany on November 8 applied on the battlefield to General Foch for an armistice, as directed to do by President Wilson. This did not put an immediate end to hostilities. The British went on and captured Maubeuge. From Germany came reports that the fleet, as a last resort, had been ordered to give battle to the British grand fleet and that the German crews had mutinied and joined a revolutionary movement that speedily swept over Germany. The Kaiser and Crown Prince had refused to sign documents of abdication but on the advice of their generals had fled from their army headquarters at Spa to Holland where they were interned. Yet still the allied troops pressed on. The French and Americans reached Sedan and Mezieres and got astride one line of retreat. Italian troops, which earlier in the summer had fought in the Rheims salient, captured Rocroi. During the last two days of fighting the allies advanced 15 miles on a front of 100 miles. And then the delegates of revolutionary Germany submitted to the humiliating conditions by which Germany secured exemption from further attack.

It was on the morning of Monday, November 11, that Germany admitted herself beaten and placed herself at the mercy of the allied and associated powers. When the fighting stopped her armies had been forced across the frontier of France on a front of 120 miles stretching southeastward from the North Sea. The enemy still was west of the French border along a stretch of 160 miles. The area he occupied in France then was of varying width embracing about 1,500 square miles. He also retained more than 9,000 square miles in Belgium. Had he not cried quits, however, his armies would have been overwhelmingly defeated within a few weeks, for they were nearly in a helpless condition and Foch had a tremendous offensive in Lorraine south of Metz ready to launch. Monster British airplanes also were under orders to bomb Berlin when orders arrived to cancel all such undertakings. By a peculiar coincidence of history, Canadian troops, acting with the British army, who had taken Denain and Valenciennes, captured Mons the morning that the armistice ended hostilities, thus bringing the British back to the point in Belgium where they began fighting more than four years before.

W. R. P.

Armistice Parties Meeting---Germans Approaching.



This Company in Cantonment Headquarters was Made Up of Good Colored Fighting Men, Who Later Distinguished Themselves on the Marne.

# The Aftermath of The Armistice

## CHAPTER XIII

ARMISTICE TERMS NOT SEVERE — GERMAN NAVAL SURRENDER IMPOSING SPECTACLE — OCCUPATION OF GERMANY BEGUN — EBERT BECOMES GERMAN LEADER — LLOYD GEORGE SUSTAINED — PRES. WILSON HEARTILY RECEIVED — POLISH INVASION OF GERMANY — LEAGUE OF NATIONS RESOLUTIONS.

The armistice terms imposed on Germany by the allied and associated powers were severe but not more so than was necessary to ensure that Germany should not resist any longer the will of the allies. The most humilating feature was the provision requiring the surrender of the best fighting ships of the German navy without their firing a shot as a protest against the onerous terms of the peace settlement. The world never has witnessed a more pathetic spectacle than that afforded on November 21st, ten days after the signing of the armistice, when fourteen German Dreadnoughts, seven scout cruisers and fifty destroyers steamed across the North Sea under the direction of their own crews and tamely surrendered to the allied fleet fifty miles to the east of the Firth of Forth. These surface warships later were interned in the Scapa Flow, in the Orkney Islands. Almost simultaneously scores of German submarines were surrendered to the British off Harwich. In the course of a few weeks the number was increased to more than 120 and it became known that the number of underwater boats that Germany would be required to give up would exceed the original limit set of 160. Uncompleted submarines and surface warships not being surrendered were required to dismantle and the crews of the latter to be paid off. To see that the terms were thoroughly fulfilled, the British Dreadnought Hercules, accompanied by torpedo boat destroyers, visited the German naval strongholds after the Germans, themselves, had swept away the mine barriers. Of 48 German warships capable of entering the line when war began, Germany was left with only 13, as she had found it necessary to scrap 20 pre-Dreadnoughts after the Battle of Jutland. An additional Dreadnought was given up in December.

The original armistice terms were amended from time to time. In most cases the changes made with each monthly renewal rendered Germany more helpless before the allies. The number of machine guns the enemy had to surrender, however, was reduced by 5,000 to 25,000 and the number of airplanes by 300 to 1,700. The number of motor lorries was reduced from 10,000 to 5,000. The reason for these changes was that the Germans had less equipment than had been estimated. On the other hand the enemy was called upon to turn over 150,000 railway cars or three times the number originally fixed. Without these the German army could not conduct serious military enterprises or the country be fed except by grace of the allies. The allies also stipulated that they should be free to occupy the so-called neutral strip east of the Rhine, north of Mainz, if they so desired, and a small bridgehead east of Strassburg.

On November 14 American and French troops crossed the Lorraine frontier in the rear of the evacuating German forces. Four days later Belgian troops were in Brussels and Antwerp, and French troops in Mulhausen and Colmar. Not a living German soldier remained on French soil with the exception of prisoners. By November 25 British troops had reached Namur in Belgium and all Alforces. Ten days before Christmas the sace-Lorraine had been occupied by allied

Coast Defense. These giant guns guard New York harbor and represent the types used on the entire coast including the Panama Canal. A hostile fleet would be checked miles from our shores

allied troops were safely entrenched in their three great bridgeheads at Cologne, Coblenz and Mainz, the British at Cologne, the Americans at Coblenz and the French at Mainz.

By the end of November a considerable number of Canadian prisoners-of-war had reached Metz from prison camps in the Rhineland. American troops had passed beyond Metz in their movement eastward and joyfully greeted the American and Canadian prisoners whom they had met tramping wearily towards the west. Nearly 18,000 British prisoners had reached England. Of these 8,794 arrived at Hull from Holland; 8,271 at Dover and 500 at London. The British Government sternly warned Germany that she would accept no explanations for the ill-treatment or criminal neglect of the prisoners while on their way to the German border. One wonders what possessed the German rulers that they should show heartlessness towards hundreds of thousands of allied prisoners at the very time that their country needed mercy at the hands of the allied peoples. The explanation under the circumstances probably was stupidity and distraction rather than deliberate cruelty—stupidity because for selfish reasons the Germans should have made the care of their prisoners their first concern; distraction because Germany was in a terrible condition and her new rulers were overwhelmed with the multitude of great tasks requiring urgent attention.

Czecho-Slovaks at Vladivostok ready to leave for the Russian Interior. The armies of the Czecho-Slovaks that attempted to free Siberia from the Bolsheviki.

A correspondent with the British forces states that he was in Huy, 12 miles beyond Namur, when the Canadian vanguard entered the place. One of our men was asked where was the front line and answered, "In the centre of the high street, sir." The boys from Canada must have looked with great interest at the forts of Namur, perched on precipitous

Actual Photo of American Machine Gun Troops Operating From German Second Line in Great Cantigny Advance.

cliffs, which quickly succumbed to the fire of the mighty German 42-centimetre howitzers in August of 1914, bringing about the fall of a great bastion in the allied front. It was at Huy, on the south side of the Meuse, that the Germans forced a crossing to the north and began their surprising advance north-westward on Brussels and then south-westward on Lille and Mons, where the British, who awaited them found themselves hopelessly outflanked on the left, their right exposed by the unannounced retirement

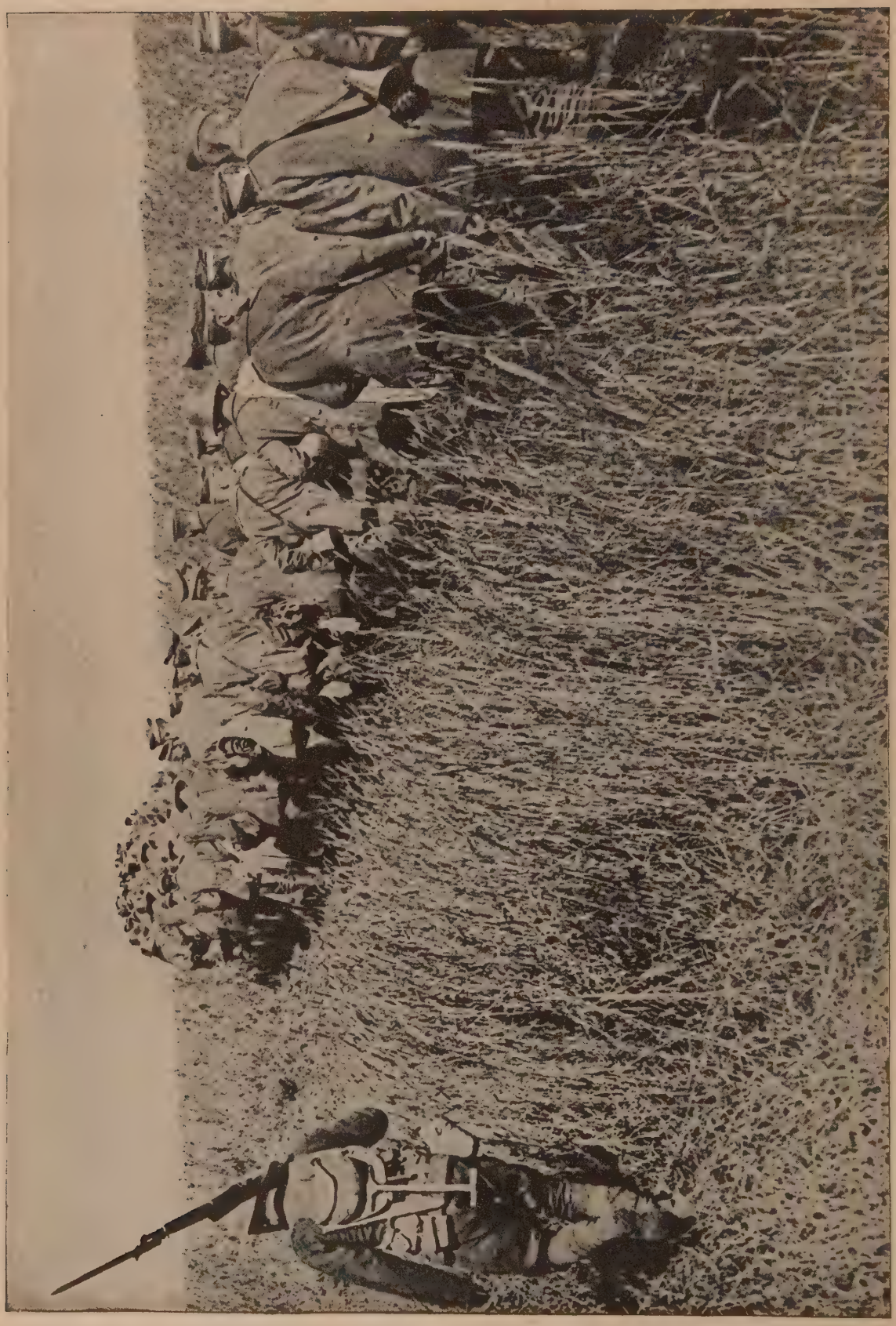
greeting a released comrade. All were footsore and weary and some were very bitter over the inhuman treatment of which they had been victims, but their passage through Belgium was made easier by the plaudits and comforts heaped on them by the grateful Belgian people.

The time limit for the evacuation by the Germans of Belgium, Luxemburg, and Alsace-Lorraine expired on November 27. All German soldiers not out of those regions by that time were liable to capture and internment. It was amaz-

Canadian Pioneers carrying split logs across a stream. A trench mat is used as a bridge. Each man wears steel hat and gas mask, near Vimy Ridge.

of the French from Charleroi and their front menaced by forces superior by three to one. All the way up the Sambre and Meuse valleys from Mons to Liege the Canadians met multitudes of allied prisoners pouring homeward from the hateful prison camps of the Hun. The majority of them were French, English, Italian, and Russian soldiers, some of them wearing parts of uniforms of nations other than their own, but here and there, no doubt, the Canadians had the pleasure of

ing, therefore, that the Dutch Government should have allowed 68,000 German troops to pass through the peninsula of Dutch territory that prevented their quick return to their homeland. The excuse that the Belgians wanted to get rid of them and that the Germans were deprived of their arms at the border was not sufficient. Holland was guilty of an unneutral act in allowing troops of a belligerent country to cross her territories to escape the consequences of warfare.



A Single Allied Soldier is Acting as Guard for the Whole of this Long Column of German Prisoners Who are on Their Way to Prison Camps at the Back of the Allied Lines. The photo was taken during the Battle of Marne.

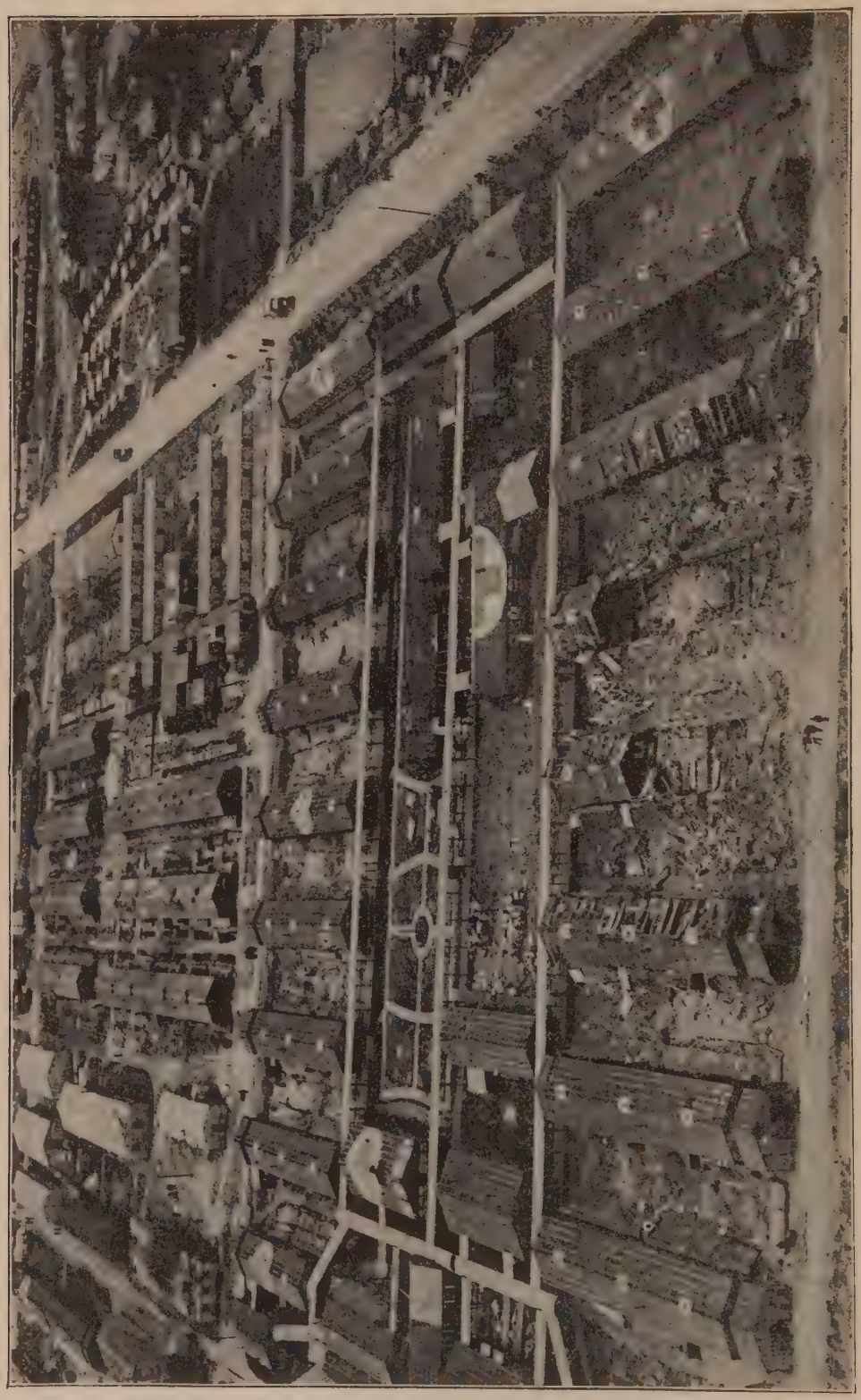
As a consequence she had to agree to allow the allies to send supplies across her territories to the allied army of occupation in Germany.

In Germany serious political trouble developed early in 1919. The Ebert government that had displaced the short-lived government of Prince Maxmilian of Baden, had been composed of three Majority Socialists and three Independent Socialists. The latter resigned or were dismissed from the government and a wing of the Independent Socialists combined with the Spartacans, or German Bolsheviki, and tried to prevent the holding of elections for a National Constituent Assembly. They knew that the vast majority of the people were against them and they attempted to put into operation their view that the manual workers of the country should disenfranchise and despoil all the other citizens of the country. Thousands of men and women were shot down during the disorders in Berlin and elsewhere but finally the government secured the upper hand and the elections were held. In these the Majority Socialists made considerable gains and, although not having a majority of the seats, secured their position as the strongest party in the House.

Knights of Columbus Overseas Relief Hut. This hut is a copy of a relief camp close to the lines, constructed of the driftwood of the battle area. The hinges and latch are made of shoe and harness leather. In it the secretary gives free to American or ally tobacco, cigarettes, chocolate, first aid, etc.

Premier Ebert set forth his position about this time in a striking address to soldiers who had returned to the capital from the front. This is what he said:

"Your deeds and sacrifices are unexampled. No enemy overcame you. Only when the preponderance of our opponents



Red Cross Hospitals Destroyed by German Bombing Raids. No Other Buildings Were Bombed.

in men and material grew ever heavier did we abandon the struggle. You endured indescribable sufferings, accomplished incomparable deeds and gave, vear after year, proofs of your unshakeable courage. You protected the homeland from invasion, sheltered your wives, children and parents from flames and slaughter and preserved the nation's workshops and fields from devastation. With deepest emotion the homeland thanks you. You can return with heads erect. Never have men done or suffered more than you.

"The German people have shaken off the old rule. On you, above all others, rests the hope of German freedom. The hard requirements of the victors are heavy upon us but we will not collapse. We will build a new Germany. With the strength and unshakeable courage you have proved a thousand times, see to it that Germany remains united and that the old misery of a system of small states does not overtake us again. The unity of the German nation is a work of religion, of socialism. We must work with all our strength if we are not to sink to the state of a beggar people. You are laying down the arms which, borne by the sons of the people, should never be a danger but only a protection for the people whose happiness your industrious hands must build up from new foundations."

There were few signs of repentance in these words.

Two days before the German general elections were held Dr. Liebknecht and Rosa Luxemburg, the leaders of the Spartacans, were arrested and killed under very suspicious circumstances. Liebknecht was shot down as he was trying to escape and Rosa Luxemburg was taken from her guards and beaten to death. At least that is the official explanation. The circumstances strongly suggest that the officers of the guards connived at their assassination. During the weeks following the deaths of these two leaders comparative quiet prevailed in Germany and the men who had been called the Kaiser-Socialists, because they had voted for war credits and condoned war outrages, remained in power.

Before the Peace Conference assembled general elections also were held in the United Kingdom. Here Lloyd George was overwhelmingly sustained so far as the number of seats was concerned although the popular vote showed that his Coalition government only received 5,028,345 votes against 4,330,600 secured by the anti-Coalition candidates. The old Liberal party of H. H. Asquith was eliminated in this election and the Labor group became strong enough numerically to be entitled to rank as the official Opposition. The election results were a great personal tribute to Lloyd George as the man who had led the British people to victory. They also seemed to indicate that the British people desired that Germany should be made to pay the penalty for her criminal responsibility in beginning the war and waging it with extraordinary barbarism.

In France there were reports that Premier Clemenceau would be outvoted but when he had explained his attitude towards the peace settlement and intervention in Russia he scored a great triumph in the House, his budget going through with a majority of 246.

The visit of President Wilson to Europe to attend the Peace Conference caused controversies both at home and abroad as to the wisdom of this unprecedented move but the heartiness of his reception in the various capitals before the Conference met seemed to indicate that the masses largely were in sympathy with his dream of establishing peace on a permanent basis. Later on his work in behalf of the League of Nations further justified his prolonged absence from Washington.

Pending the decisions of the Peace Conference, Jugo-Slavia and Czecho-Slovakia set themselves up as indepen-

dent states and the troops of both clashed with Italian forces, particular those of Jugo-Slavia in Dalmatia which had been promised to Italy when she entered the war on the side of France and Britain but which was populated mainly by Slavs. The Czecho-Slovaks also clashed with the sian Bolshevik government advanced westward for nearly two hundred miles, boasting as they came that they would overrun all Europe and tear up any peace treaty the allies might dictate. The allied nations became much perplexed as to the course to take towards the Russian Bol-

First photograph showing the reading of the Terms of Armistice to the British troops immediately after hostilities ceased.

Germans on the west and the Poles on the north, while Lemberg changed hands more than once as Poles fought bitterly with the Ruthenians of the surrounding country. In German Poland, fighting took place between Poles and Germans and east of Poland the army of the Rus-

shevik government as their peoples had had enough of war without interfering in purely Russian affairs, and so at the suggestion of Premier Borden of Canada they invited the Bolsheviki and all the other Russian factions to meet in conference on the Princes' Islands near Con-

Interallied Naval Leaders at Versailles—Front row left to right: Admiral Sims, America; George Dygues, French Secretary of Navy; Admiral Wemyss, England, and Di Rivell, Italy.

THE FAMOUS "LOST BATTALION" IN THE ARGONNE FOREST.

The artist depicts the instant when Lieut.-Col. Charles Whittlesey roared his historic "Go to Hell" when offer to surrender was made.

THE FIRST AMERICANS IN PARIS ON THEIR WAY TO TRAINING TRENCHES IN FRANCE

The Royal Family of England. From left to right are Prince Henry, Prince Albert, Prince of Wales, King George, Princess Mary. Sitting, Queen Mary.

stantinople in the sea Marmora.

A great political figure in the war, one better known to Europe than to this continent, passed off the scene early in 1919 in the person of Count Von Hertling. This man was Chancellor of Germany, a position equivalent to that of Premier, but vested with greater powers, from November of 1917 to October of 1918. In other words, he controlled Germany's destinies from the time the colossal disaster to the Italian armies took place until the counter-offensive of General Foch forced Germany to seek an armistice on the western front. Before and after he became Chancellor he did his best to cause dissension between the allies and to trap them into peace discussions. He professed to favor peace without annexations or indemnities but in February of 1918 he put the screws on Russia and Rumania, stripped them of territory and economic independence and made them Germany's vassals. In his day he taught the divine right of military officers as well as the divine right of kings and absolute submission to religious authority. He pretended that Britain was waging the war for selfish purposes in which she was making a tool of France, and that Germany in resisting the growing power of the United States, was really the champion of all Europe. Von Hertling formerly was Premier of Bavaria and was a Roman Catholic. He displaced Michaelis as Chancellor, Michaelis being a bureaucratic stop-gap. Von Hertling was chosen to succeed Michaelis because it was hoped he would detach the Centre or Clerical party from the Majority Parties who were demanding a democratic peace and because he was influential with the Vatican and likely to check the tendency of Bavaria to break away from Prussia. More than once he said that the question of Alsace-Lorraine was the only barrier to peace. He favored adding Lorraine to Prussia and Alsace to Bavaria, but was bitterly opposed to returning the Provinces to France. He did not give up his office as Chancellor until Prince Maximilian assumed power on behalf of the revolution. Prince Maximilian shortly thereafter became Prince Regent and left the Chancellorship to Ebert, who was termed premier.

Barbed Wire Entanglements Failed to Stop Our Boys in the Great Drive. Allied Troops Here Seen Going Through German Wire.

Heavy Guns at Chateau-Thierry Made Victory Possible.

French general thanking the American soldiers for their bravery under fire.

The death of Colonel Roosevelt synchronised with that of Von Hertling and removed a warm friend of Great Britain and one who never ceased to champion the justice of the allied cause in the war. It cannot be said that the United States would not have intervened without the stimulating effect of "Teddy's" propaganda, for President Wilson secured a free hand when he was returned to power as the man who had kept his country out of the great struggle. Nevertheless, the writings and speeches of Colonel Roosevelt were a real factor in convincing the best elements in the United States that their country should throw all her resources into the scales against Germanic barbarism. So far as the military aspect of the allied cause is concerned the allies had no stouter champion. Perhaps the redoubtable colonel was too virile or too domineering a character to subscribe to the idealistic features of the allied cause. He probably believed that mankind gained something out of the rivalry and strife between nations and that life would become too insipid were a League of Peace to straighten out all serious international disputes without recourse to arms. In one sense the Colonel belonged to the old school. He was a true friend, a formidable foe and a man of honor. He represented the best type of statesmen in the days when rivalry between nations was keenest. It cannot be said that he was peculiarly adapted for the work of laying a new foundation for the society of nations based on co-operation for the good of all.

On Saturday, January 18, the first session of the Peace Conference was held in Paris. Forty-eight years previously, at Versailles, just outside Paris, the German Empire was proclaimed by the victorious King of Prussia, following the war of 1870. The Peace Conference of 1919 was called to determined the conditions ending The Great War and to veto the treaty of Versailles, restore Alsace-Lorraine to its rightful owner and write "Finis" across the inglorious history of the German Empire.

The first series of resolutions adopted by the Conference were as follows:
On the League of Nations.

"That it is essential to the maintenance of the world settlement which the Associated Nations are now met to establish that a League of Nations be created to promote international obligations and provide safeguards against war. This league should be created as an integral part of the general treaty of peace, and should be open to every civilized nation which can be relied on to promote its objects.

"The members of the league should periodically meet in international conference, and should have a permanent organization and secretaries to carry on the business of the league in the intervals between the conferences.

"The Conference, therefore, appoints a committee representative of the Associated Governments to work out the details of the constitution and the functions of the league."
On Responsibility.

"That a commission composed of two representatives apiece from the five Great Powers and five representatives to be elected by the other powers be appointed

to enquire and report upon the following:

"First—The responsibility of the authors of the war;

"Second—The facts as to breaches of the laws and customs of war committed by the forces of the German Empire and their allies on land, on sea, and in the air during the present war;

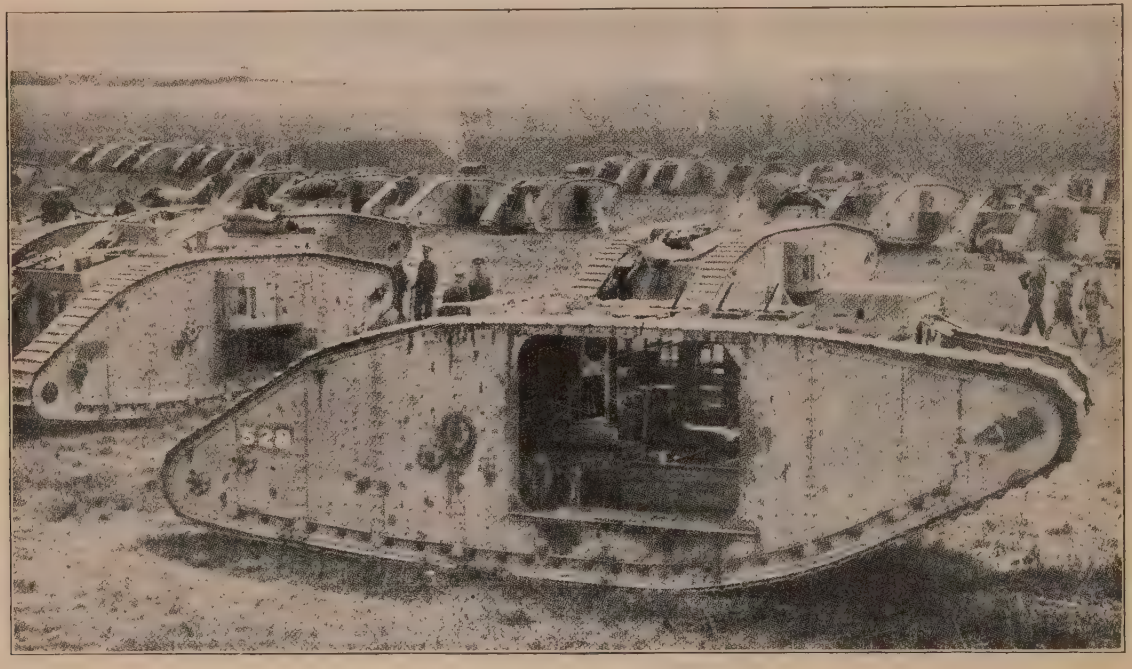
"Third—The degree of responsibility for these offences attaching to particular members of the enemy's forces, including members of the general staffs and other individuals, however highly placed;

Great Powers and not more than two representatives apiece from Belgium, Greece, Poland, Roumania and Serbia, to examine and report:

"First, on the amount of reparation which the enemy countries ought to pay; second, on what they are capable of paying, and, third, on the method, the form and time within which payment should be made."

On International Legislation.

"That a commission composed of two representatives apiece from the five Great



Looking at First Sight Like a Group of Antediluvian Monsters Squatting in the Open Before Starting on Their Prowl. At a "Tankdrome" on the Cambrai Front.

"Fourth—The constitution and procedure of a tribunal appropriate to the trial of these offences;

"Fifth—Any other matters cognate or ancillary to the above which may arise in the course of the enquiry, and which the commission finds it useful and relevant to take into consideration."

On Reparation.

"That a commission be appointed which shall comprise not more than three representatives apiece from each of the five

Powers and five representatives to be elected by the other powers represented at the Peace Conference be appointed to enquire into the conditions of employment from international aspect and to consider the international means necessary to secure common action on matters affecting conditions of employment and to recommend the form of a permanent agency to continue such enquiry and consideration, in co-operation with and under the direction of the League of Nations."

On International Control.

"That a commission composed of two representatives apiece from the five Great Powers and five representatives to be appointed by the other powers enquire and report upon the international regime for ports, waterways and railways."

The delegates of the Great Powers on the Committee to plan for the League of Nations were: For the United States, President Wilson and Col. Edward M. House; Great Britain, Lord Robert Cecil and Gen. Jan Christian Smuts; France, Leon Bourgeois and Ferdinand Larnaude, dean of the Faculty of Law of the University of Paris; for Italy, Premier Orlando and Vitterio Scialioa; Japan, Viscount Chinda and K. Ochiai.

France, Britain, the United States, Italy and Japan were given five representatives each in the Peace Congress. The British dominions were represented apart from Great Britain, Canada, Australia, South Africa and India each being allowed two representatives. The size of the representation of each nation was decided upon not, as proposed by the French plan, in accordance with the part played by the nation in the war, but following the American and British plan, in proportion to the extent of the interest of each nation in the peace settlement. Brazil, Belgium and Serbia were given three representatives. Greece, Poland, Czecho-Slovakia, Roumania and China were assigned two representatives each. Portugal, and the states which did not declare war upon Germany but merely broke off diplomatic relations with her, were given one delegate each. Brazil owes her treatment to her historic position as a former empire and her population of more than twenty millions which worked against placing her secondary to nations much less peopled.

W. R. P.

One of the various kinds of machine guns that were used against the Germans on the Western Front. This gun was invented by an American.

Photo of the Blowing Up of Railroads in Belgium by Retreating Germans.

# The Price of Victory

## CHAPTER XIV

A COLOSSAL TOLL — LARGE PERCENTAGE OF LIVES LOST — HALF OF ENLISTED NUMBER WOUNDED OR KILLED — VALUE OF DESTROYED PROPERTY ENORMOUS — TOTAL WAR DEBT IMMENSE — LOSSES IN SHIPPING TONNAGE — RUSSIAN PROBLEM — VICTORY DUE TO COMBINED AID.

The terrible price paid by humanity in blood and tears and money to save Civilization from the Hun cannot be told in words. The struggle was of so colossal a nature, spread over so wide an area and affected human life in such a multitude of ways that it is impossible to record with any degree of accuracy or in great detail the sum total of misery that it entailed. Most of the estimates of the number of soldiers who died from wounds and disease are under rather than over the actual figures. It is an extremely conservative estimate that eleven million men in uniform lost their lives, that civilians to a number almost equally large were massacred or died from famine and want, and that many other millions of potential lives were lost. As to the money cost of the war, a rough and ready way of putting it is to say that it used up more than one-third of all the wealth of the world.

Combining official with semi-official and unofficial statements we get the following estimate of the numbers of men enlisted, the lives lost and the total casualties of the principal belligerent countries:

| | Men Enlisted | Lives Lost | Total Casualties |
|---|---|---|---|
| United States | 3,764,700 | 72,738 | 262,693 |
| British Empire | 10,000,000 | 975,000 | 3,049,991 |
| France | 7,000,000 | 1,500,000 | 4,500,000 |
| Italy | 5,000,000 | 500,000 | 1,500,000 |
| Russia | 14,000,000 | 3,000,000 | 8,000,000 |
| Belgium | 500,000 | 100,000 | 350,000 |
| Serbia | 500,000 | 125,000 | 375,000 |
| Rumania | 600,000 | 150,000 | 400,000 |
| Total for Allies | 41,364,700 | 6,422,738 | 18,437,684 |
| Germany | 12,000,000 | 2,750,000 | 8,500,000 |
| Austria-Hungary | 7,500,000 | 1,750,000 | 5,000,000 |
| Turkey | 1,750,000 | 300,000 | 1,000,000 |
| Bulgaria | 1,100,000 | 200,000 | 550,000 |
| | 22,350,000 | 5,000,000 | 15,050,000 |
| Total for all belligerents | 63,714,700 | 11,422,738 | 33,487,684 |

The casualties of the Canadian forces, which were included in the above totals for the British empire are officially given as follows:

| | Officers | Other Ranks | Total |
|---|---|---|---|
| Killed in action | 1,842 | 33,824 | 35,666 |
| Died of wounds | 614 | 11,806 | 12,420 |
| Died of disease | 220 | 5,185 | 5,405 |
| Wounded | 7,130 | 148,659 | 155,799 |
| Prisoners of war | ..... | ..... | 3,575 |
| Presumed dead | 142 | 4,529 | 4,671 |
| Missing | 41 | 384 | 425 |
| Deaths in Canada | ..... | ..... | 2,221 |
| Totals | 9,989 | 204,397 | 220,182 |

The total deaths were 60,383.

The Australian losses were slightly heavier than those of Canada although the Commonwealth's population is much smaller.

The casualties for the United States are given as follows:

| | |
|---|---|
| Killed in action | 28,363 |
| Died of wounds | 12,101 |
| Died of disease | 16,034 |
| Died from other causes | 1,980 |
| Missing in action | 14,260 |
| Total dead for U. S. | 72,738 |
| Wounded slightly | 92,036 |
| Wounded | 43,168 |
| Wounded severely | 54,751 |
| Total U. S. wounded | 189,955 |
| Total U. S. casualties | 262,693 |

The number of men in the British navy who lost their lives was 33,361. The number in the British merchant marine which were lost totalled 14,661, making a grand total of 48,002 British lives lost at sea.

The British casualties in the various arenas were made up thus:

| Arena | Total Casualties | No. Dead | Percentage of dead in total losses |
|---|---|---|---|
| France and Belgium | 2,070,000 | 560,000 | 20 |
| Dardanelles | 119,000 | 33,000 | 28 |
| Mesopotamia | 97,000 | 31,000 | 30 |
| Egypt and Palestine | 58,000 | 16,000 | 27 |
| Macedonia | 27,000 | 7,600 | 28 |
| East Africa | 17,000 | 9,100 | 51 |
| Italy | 6,700 | 1,020 | 15 |

The above figures for the western arena do not include the missing or the dead who died from wounds sometime after being wounded.

Bulgaria claimed her losses reached the amazing figure of 1,353,000 made up as follows:

| | |
|---|---|
| Killed | 101,000 |
| Wounded | 1,152,000 |
| Prisoners | 100,000 |
| Total | 1,353,000 |

This total was easily double that of most estimates. The number of wounded also showed an unusually high rate as compared with the number of dead. Bulgaria's casualties in The Great War probably were under 600,000.

The war expenditures of the various belligerents have been estimated as follows:

| | |
|---|---|
| Britain | $ 60,000,000,000 |
| United States | 50,000,000,000 |
| Russia | 30,000,000,000 |
| France | 40,000,000,000 |
| Italy | 15,000,000,000 |
| Rumania | 3,000,000,000 |
| Serbia | 2,000,000,000 |
| Total Expenditures by Allies | $200,000,000,000 |
| Germany | $ 52,000,000,000 |
| Austria-Hungary | 30,000,000,000 |
| Turkey | 5,000,000,000 |
| Bulgaria | 3,000,000,000 |
| Total Germanic Expenditures | $110,000,000,000 |
| Expended by all belligerents on the war | $310,000,000,000 |

In nearly every case the war debt of the belligerents involves interest charges of from two to three times the government revenue before the war. The 1919 French budget called for an expenditure three and a half times greater than the pre-war expenditures or for an amount supposed to be equal to one-half of all the earnings of the French people for the

year. The billions of dollars Germany has to pay in reparation of course should be added, properly speaking, to the German cost of the war.

During the great allied offensive on the western front in 1918, the allied armies captured 362,355 prisoners, including 7,990 officers, as well as 6,217 cannon, 38,622 machine guns and 3,907 mine throwers, or more than one-third of the enemy's artillery.

The allies during the month of October captured 108,343 prisoners, including 2,472 officers, as well as 2,064 cannon, 13,639 machine guns, and 1,193 mine throwers. The American forces in France during the strenuous campaign of 1918 captured 44,000 Germans and 1,400 guns.

The official British figures of air fighting upon the British Western front from January 1, 1918, to the date of the armistice show that the number of enemy machines destroyed in aerial combats by the British totalled 3,060, while enemy machines driven down out of control numbered 1,174. Germany is known to have lost well over six thousand airplanes destroyed and surrendered during the year. On the other hand, the resources of the allies were reinforced by 1,700 German machines of modern type and in good serviceable condition.

Great Britain was pre-eminent in the air at the close of the war, when the British air force was the largest in the world. In August, 1914, the British naval and military air services together mustered planes, 45 seaplanes and 7 airships, while at the close of hostilities she had 21,000 airplanes, 1,300 seaplanes and 103 airships. Besides this there were 25,000 airplanes and seaplanes being built and 55,000 airplane engines under contract.

In this photograph are seen the American Artillery before Metz, the capital of Alsace, firing into the German lines.

American Poles March to the Front in France.—The regiment was raised and trained in the United States and all the men and officers are citizens of the United States.

In 1914, 45 bombs were dropped on Paris. In 1915, 70 bombs, 62 of them on March 20, fell on the city. In 1916, the 185 officers and 1,853 men of other ranks. In November, 1918, there were 30,000 officers, 264,000 men. At the outbreak of the war Great Britain had 166 air-enemy employed 61 bombs against Paris, and in 1917, 11. During the last ten months of the war there were 1,211 casualties from 396 bombs. Airplanes and Zeppelins dropped 228 bombs on August 6, killing two persons and injuring 392. The long-range cannon fired 168 shells into Paris, killing 196 and wounding 417. On Good Friday, 1918, more than 100 persons were killed.

Trophies Captured by the Americans from the Huns at the Battle of Leichfrey. Among the other trophies in the picture may be seen a Boche gun, gas mask, wire-cutter and canteen.

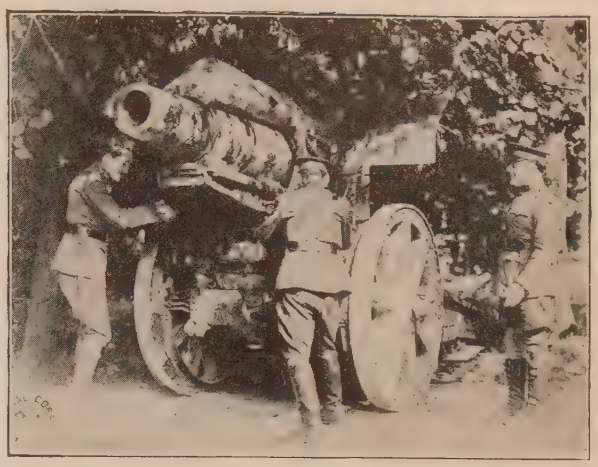
British merchant tonnage losses were 9,031,828 gross tons from the beginning of the war to Oct. 31, 1918. New construction in the United Kingdom in the same period was 4,342,296; purchases abroad were 530,000 tons and enemy tonnage captured was 716,520. The net loss was 3,443,012 tons. In the last seven months of the war the output exceeded the world's losses by more than 1,000,000 tons. In the case of Great Britain, although the output had not overtaken the losses, yet if purchases abroad were taken into account, the losses of the last five months were balanced by the gains.

The losses in merchant vessels by enemy action and marine risk from the beginning of the war to the end of October, 1918, was 15,053,786 gross tons. In the same period 10,849,527 tons were constructed and 2,392,675 tons of enemy vessels captured. This makes the net loss of tonnage during the war 1,811,584 tons. One hundred and two ocean going steamships of 330,336 gross tons, were built by American shipyards during November. In addition 63 smaller vessels of 18,108 gross tons were constructed during the same period.

The triumphant close of the war waged on behalf of civilization by the allies provided enough glory to go all around. Each of the allied nations could afford to show a generous appreciation of the part played by the others. The truth is that individually all of the five first-class powers that fought on the side of the allies rendered service that was essential to the final success. These five included Russia, which made a most valuable contribution until she broke under the terrific strain of war. Several small powers rendered most valuable service. For instance, Belgium, whose little army for a brief period stayed the advance of the German hordes and gave the British and French a chance to assemble their forces. Rumania and Serbia also interfered so seriously with the enemy's plans as to attract the attention of large Teutonic forces which might have been used elsewhere with great effect. Had the British Empire, France, Russia, Italy or the United States not participated in the struggle, had any of them failed to give the help they afforded, it is hard to see how Germany would have been brought to her knees by the fall of 1918. It is by no means certain that the non-participation of any one of them would not have permitted the Central Powers to acquire greater prestige as a result of the conflict.

At present Russia is under a cloud. The allied peoples feel that she treacherously deserted them in a crisis, imperilling their victory, increasing their sacrifices and prolonging the war. That feeling is natural and justifiable. Never-

theless, it is a fact that the educated and business classes in Russia bitterly deplore the degradation of their country and are the most unfortunate victims of the rule of the Bolshevik. The masses of the people, ignorant, easily duped, grief-stricken with their losses in the fighting, on the verge of starvation, freed from the despotism of Czarism only to pass under the hateful despotism of Bolshevikism, are bewildered and distracted and groping blindly towards the light. What Russia has done she did not mean to do. Russia will emerge from the bog and the blackness and take a leading place among the great democratic nations. To-day she is to be pitied much more than she is to be condemned. To-morrow, for our own sake as well as for hers, we must aid her to the full extent of our ability. In the meantime, we should recognize that when the war began the great military power of the allied side was not Britain, France or Italy, but Russia, slow-moving but terrible in her might; that the enemy planned to overthrow the French and British in 1914 so that he would be able to cope in 1915 with the deadlier peril on the east; that Russia struck in East Prussia during August of the first year of war and caused the enemy to rail enough divisions from the west to permit the allies to win the first battle of the Marne —the only truly decisive battle in the war; that Russia struck again in 1916 when Italy was hard pressed, won tremendous victories and brought appreciable relief to the Italians, and that in 1917, after the revolution, Kerensky succeeded in inducing the Russian army to undertake an offensive which had magnificent success until treachery developed at one part of the front. Russia quit because her morale was broken and because her people, having rid themselves of the Czar, thought the war in which the Czar had taken them should come to an end. It is not unreasonable to assume that Russia inflicted one-third of the casualties suffered by the enemy powers in the war and endured as many casualties as the total suffered by Britain and France, or about eight millions.



American officers examining captured German howitzer. Officers of the 26th Division examining a German 210 howitzer captured by the 102nd Infantry, 26th Division in France.

Gen. Plumer Reviews His Yanks at the Front. Gen. Plumer is seen in this photo reviewing his own "Yanks" who participated in the big British offensive.

The part played by Italy is much underrated. In 1915 the British and French were almost helpless before the enemy's fortified line in the west and in

the east the German army was riding roughshod over Russia. The intervention of Italy drew half a million of the enemy to the south-western arena, and may have prevented the loss of the war then and there. Italy's casualties are one-third of those suffered by all the nations of the British Empire. She certainly inflicted much heavier casualties on the Central Powers.

There is no occasion to emphasize the essential part paid by France in the war. In proportion to population and wealth France's sacrifices are much greater than those suffered by any other allied power, and the damage to her richest industrial areas runs up into the billions.

The aid given by the United States was of the utmost value in hastening the end of the war. The issue in this year's campaign was whether the allies should win the war at an early date or suffer such a disaster as would protract the war for years. The speeding-up of the shipment of American troops when the scales were in the balance enabled the allies to frustrate the enemy's designs and by releasing veteran French troops from quiet sectors and by providing good American shock troops in the later stages of the campaign, brought Germany to her knees. The low casualties suffered by the millions of the American armies, but one-twelfth of those of the British Empire, do not adequately represent the exceedingly valuable contribution of the United States. In financing the allies when Britain's resources were sorely tried and in supplying devices for curbing the enemy's submarine activities which at times were greatly worrying the British authorities, the United States gave invaluable help.

Photo showing lone French solidier in an enemy's trench signaling to his comrades.

As in the Napoleonic wars a hundred years ago Britain was the mainstay of the forces of liberty. During the struggle her military power caught up with and passed well beyond that of France. Without the aid of her armies, or the work of protection and supply so gallantly performed by her mighty navy, or the self-sacrificing performances of her merchant marine, or her loans of billions of dollars to weaker allies, the cause of humanity would have been defeated. During the war the United Kingdom provided no less than eight million men, and her Dominions overseas and India raised another two millions.

W. R. P.

# How The Central Powers Fell

## CHAPTER XV

GERMANY WEAKENS — BULGARIA SURRENDERS — TURKEY SURRENDERS — AUSTRIAN ARMISTICE AND SURRENDER FOLLOW — GERMANY SIGNS ARMISTICE — KAISER ABDICATES AND FLEES — MILITARY AND NAVAL FORCES SURRENDER — ALLIES OCCUPY GERMANY — CASUALTIES.

The iron defense of the Central Powers and their allies once pierced, the collapse of the coalition came with a swiftness which surprised even the most optimistic among the councillors and leaders of the entente nations and the United States. And strangely enough, while the eyes of the world were turned toward the great struggle in France, where it was believed the issue would be settled, the first breaks which brought the end came from all the other fronts. Within six weeks after the first hint had come that the hour of victory was about to strike, the war was ended. In the chronological order in which they were forced out of the war, the Teutonic allies surrendered as follows:

BULGARIA—Armistice signed just before midnight on September 29th, 1918.

TURKEY—Armistice went into effect in the afternoon of October 31st.

AUSTRIA—Armistice, signed on November 3rd, went into effect in the afternoon of November 4th.

GERMANY—Armistice went into effect 11 o'clock A. M., November 11th.

Bulgaria, the little autocracy in the Balkans, whose czar had heeded the promises made by Germany of a large share in the territorial loot of conquest, was the first to surrender. Driven back, then crushed, the first of the Allied invading army on his own soil, Czar Ferdinand was quick to sue for peace. His people never had favored the war. The Kaiser had withdrawn nearly all of the German troops which had supported the Bulgarians. Even the Austrian troops, menaced earlier in the summer by the Italian campaign which had cleaned them out of the greater part of Albania, had withdrawn from the Macedonian front. Bulgaria fought it out alone.

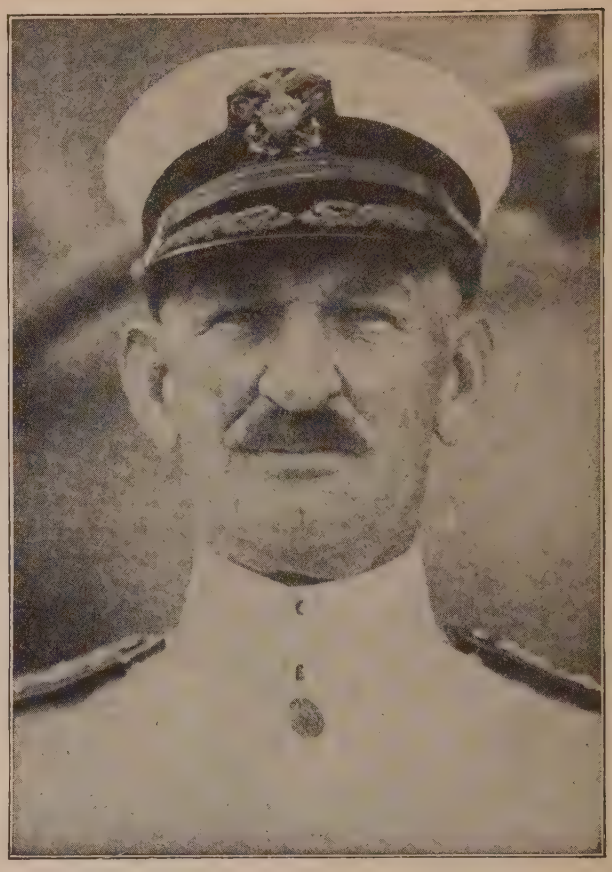
About the middle of September the Allies' lines extended from Saloniki on the east to southern Albania where they were in contact with the Italian forces. Under Gen. Franchet d'Esperey, a force of French, British, Italians, Serbs and Greeks began the drive northward. To the Serbs fell the honor of the first victories. They were advancing to hurl the enemy from their native land and supported by French and Greek units, they drove northeast of Monastir. Victory was almost immediate. The first day of the drive the Serbs advanced several miles and freed scores of villages. Within a few days they were threatening the chief railroads and lines of communication and the Bulgar right was nearly cut off.

On September 24th, Prilep, one of the chief bases of the enemy, was taken and the Bulgars faced annihilation. So rapid had their retreat been, that Prilep was entered by French cavalry operating far in advance of the main French and Serbian forces. In the meantime the British and Greek army operating in the Lake Doiran region, had advanced and had effected a juncture with the French and

Serbians and a united attack moved rapidly toward the Bulgarian border itself. Within two days more the Bulgarian army had been split into several groups and each one of these was in flight. The government at Sofia admitted they were facing disaster. Far in the vanguard—fighting their way back home—the Serbs pursued the fleeing Bulgars across trackless mountain wastes and through the once cultivated valleys that had been laid waste by war. On September 25th, the British reached Bulgarian soil opposite Kosturino and the next day Strumnitza fell. The Serbs now were well toward the great Bulgarian base of Uskub and Ferdinand's troops were fleeing in disorder, hopelessly beaten.

Nothing could save Sofia from possible bombardment and the Bulgarian government sought peace. A commission bearing the white flag of surrender entered the allied lines. The Allied commanders left Gen. d'Esperey to impose the terms. The Bulgarians submitted to unconditional surrender. They agreed to evacuate all territory they still held in Greece and Serbia, to completely demobilize their army; to give up all their railroads, and, what was most important of all, to allow the Allied forces a free passage through Bulgaria.

Thus was the first big gap cut into the Berlin to Bagdad project. The road to Vienna was open. Austria was in what was almost a panic and Vienna signified willingness to discuss peace, though holding to the statement that they would stand by Germany on terms. The stock market in Berlin felt the effects of the Bulgarian disaster and in both Berlin and Vienna the socialists began open discussion of constitutional reforms. The Teutonic Alliance was crumbling. With Bulgaria out and the Macedonian region free from danger, the Allies could now turn their attention to Constantinople from the north while the British were advancing through the Holy Land on the south. Serbia was being evacuated and Austria would soon be attacked from across the Danube. King Ferdinand of Bulgaria had abdicated in favor of his son, Boris, and the Allies were in control of the Balkans.

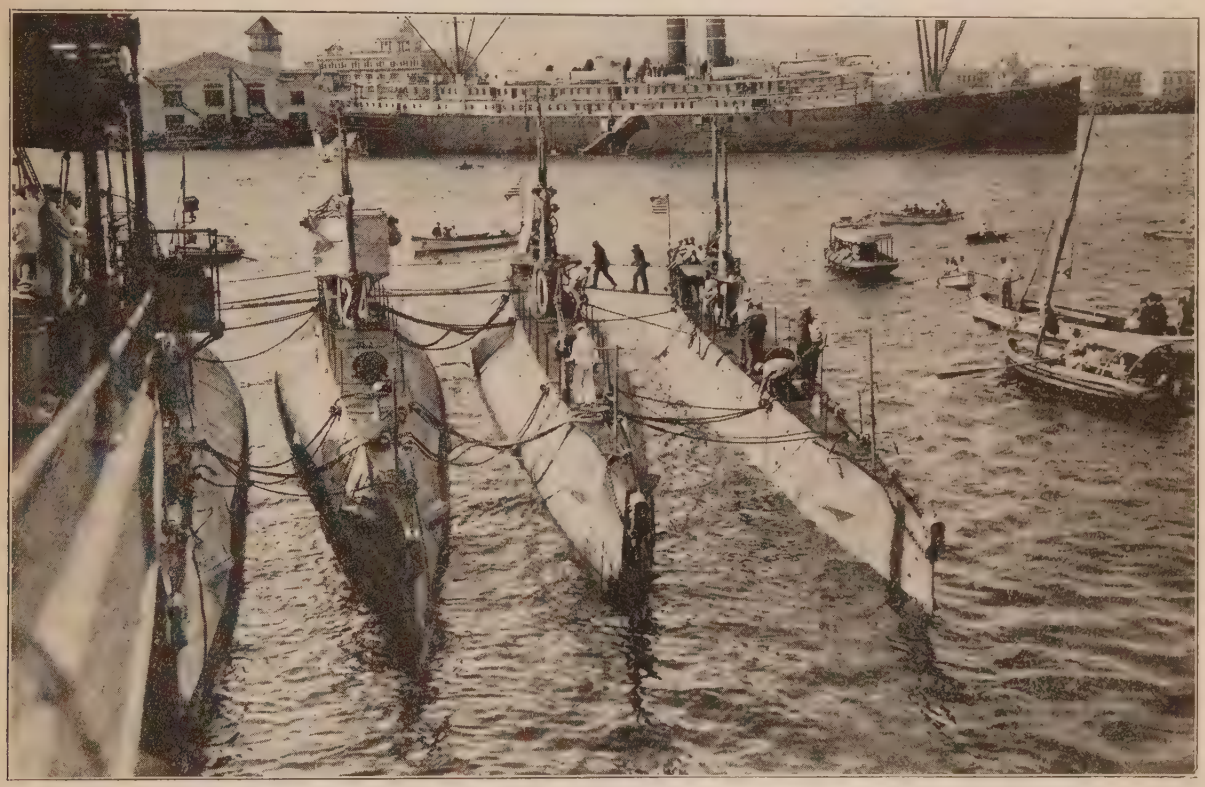


Frank Mayo, Rear Admiral, United States Navy.

The developments in the Balkans had surprised the Allies, but the victories in the Orient and the smashing of the Turks came with even greater suddenness. Since his occupation of Jerusalem, Gen. Allenby, with a force of British and Indian troops, reinforced by French and friendly Arab tribesmen, had moved slowly northward until in the latter part of September they occupied a line from the River Jordan westward to the Mediterranean. The great stroke was delivered on September 18th, 19th, 20th and 21st. Over a front of sixteen miles Gen. Allenby struck the Turkish forces and in less than a day they were fleeing in full rout. They pushed through between Rafat and the sea for nineteen miles on the first day and took

3,000 prisoners. Bodies of cavalry were advancing so rapidly that they threatened to completely cut off the Turks' retreat. Railway communications were cut and the Turkish forces were trapped. Huge stores of guns and supplies were taken and the Turk dead blocked the roadways. Caught in the valleys and lowlands, they were at the mercy of the British artillery, and airplanes, flying at low altitudes, raked the fleeing forces with machine gun fire.

By September 25th, British cavalry had pressed along the coast for sixty miles and taken Haifa and Acre, two important ports. Step by step the Allies were rushing forward along the entire line, practically without opposition except from straggling bodies of the routed enemy, and the prisoners now numbered nearly 50,000. The Fourth Turkish army also had been caught in the trap and surrounded. The British had advanced to the sea of Galilee which region they now



U. S. Submarines Played an Important Part in the Guarding of American Coasts.

By September 21st, the captured Turks numbered 20,000. An entire Turkish column, attempting to escape into the Jordan valley, was cut off and taken. The whole valley was commanded by Allied artillery and two Turkish armies were in the trap. The British cavalry captured Nazareth and the plains of Armageddon with more stores and guns. The Seventh and Eighth Turkish armies were practically annihilated. Six miles piled deep with their bodies bore testimony to the deadly accuracy of the British artillery.

dominated. Field Marshal Liman von Sanders, who had been in command of the Turks around Nazareth, had fled to Constantinople.

By October 1st, Damascus was surrounded and taken. French detachments were speeding toward Beirut. This port they took a few days later. Palestine had been completely cleared of the enemy and it was officially announced in London that Gen. Allenby had bagged 71,000 prisoners. The Allies kept advancing northward and a Turk column north of Damas-

A German Liquid-Fire Attack Against British Troops.

A Scene on a No-Man's-Land "Quagmire" on the Western Front.

This French Official photograph was the first to be received in this country of the actual drafting of the Armistice terms by the Allied plenipotentiaries at Versailles. While this conference was in progress the world waited with bated breath for the word that would seal the fate of German autocracy.

cus was cut off and taken. British and French warships began cooperating along the coast. The Arab chieftain reported the capture of 10,000 Turks in their share of the campaign and of the Ottoman armies involved it was stated that only 17,000 had escaped to the northward.

Thenceforth the Allied advance was rapid. Mosul, on the road to Constantinople, was reached by one expedition, and other columns moved along the coast to Smyrna where they cooperated with the fleets. Rioting had broken out in the capital and the uprising was directed at the German officers and leaders of the Young Turk party. Turkey was crushed. Facing destruction from the south, west and north, with open revolution threatening, the Porte sued for an armistice under terms which meant surrender. The Dardanelles were surrendered. The remainder of the Turkish forces were demobilized except for enough to serve for policing purposes. The few vessels of the fleet were dismantled. Within a short time British and French vessels had sailed through the Dardanelles to Constantinople. The thousands of British prisoners captured when Gen. Townshend was forced to surrender at Kut-el-Amara, were liberated. It was Gen. Townshend himself who had been sent to the Allied commanders with the first plea for an armistice.

American Soldiers arriving at port of embarkation for overseas duty.

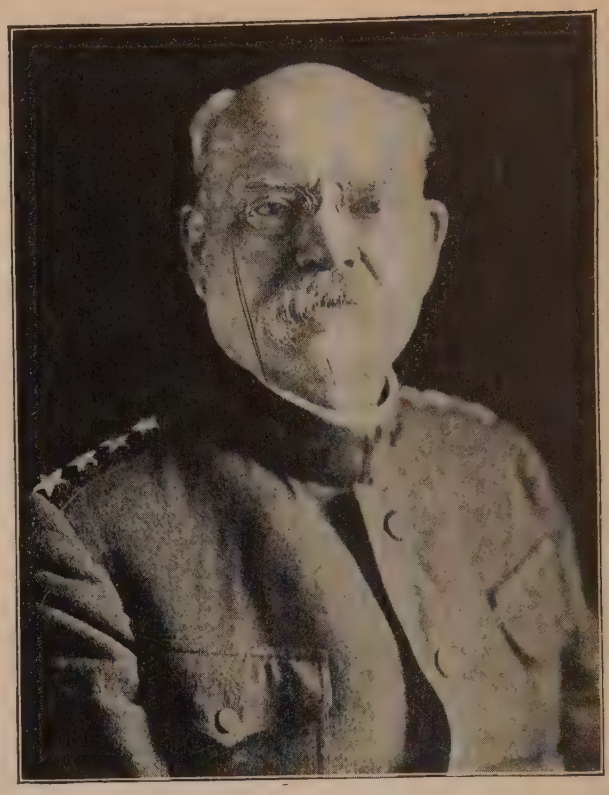
In June, her drives in France lagging to a halt, Germany goaded Austria-Hungary into making an attack and on June 15th, the Teutonic Allies began a great offensive over a front of 100 miles from the Asiago plateau to the sea and along the lines on the Piave river. The first force of the drive carried the enemy across

the Piave in places and the Italians, who had now been reinforced by a considerable force of British and French and some American troops, lost 30,000 prisoners. But any initial success was quickly offset by a counter offensive. Within three days the Austrian drive both in the mountainous region of the north and in the lowlands north of Venice had been brought to a complete halt. The Austrians hurled division after division into the battle, regardless of heavy losses. Driven on by the German high command, Austria was staking all on the final effort.

Nature had intervened in behalf of the Italians. The Austrian and German forces had crossed the Piave on pontoons, bringing up with them many heavy guns. Torrential rains had fallen after their advance and Allied airmen had bombed and destroyed the bridges behind them. Cut off, they were slaughtered in thousands. The only means of reaching them with food was by airplane and the Allies held the superiority in the air. Along the entire Asiago plateau the Austrians met defeat. It was estimated that they had thrown half a million men into action and of these probably 200,000 were numbered among the casualties.

The Italians followed up with a victorious advance. Positions along the Brenta river were taken and the heights in the Mont del Rosso and Di Val Bello region were scaled and taken. Fresh army corps were rushed to aid the Austrians, for the determined advance threatened to carry the Italians back to their lines held before the disaster of months before. But steadily the Italians and British and French pressed forward, improving their lines and strengthening their positions during July and August. Height by height the enemy was pushed back in the north.

In October, the Italian effort developed into a heavy drive. Every available unit was sent in against the Austrians, who had been somewhat weakened by the withdrawal of German forces back to the front in France. The influence of the Separatists had begun to be felt seriously and revolt was threatening to disrupt the Dual Monarchy. Through Holland, Emperor Charles had asked for mediation to secure the meeting of a peace conference. Back across the Asiago plateau the Austrians were driven, losing thousands in dead and prisoners. Austria was now extremely hard pressed, many of her troops were unreliable and she pleaded with Berlin for reinforcements. Crossings of the Piave were won by the Italians and British and the big push northward was rapid. On October 30th, American troops under Maj. Gen. Treat, operating with the British army, crossed the Piave. Vittorio, the great Austrian base, was captured and a hundred other towns freed along a front of 100 miles.



General Tasker H. Bliss, former Chief of Staff of the United States Army, one of the American delegates to the Peace Conference.

The offensive now had developed until it reached all along the Piavé. In the Mont Grappa region the enemy was beaten at Segusino in a sanguinary battle and Mont Gesen was taken.

Full disaster had overtaken Emperor Charles' armies by late in October. Fifty thousand prisoners had been taken and hundreds of the heaviest guns. The Austrians were pouring across the mountains in rout and the Allies were pushed to their utmost even to keep in contact in places. The Tagliamento river was crossed by the Italians. Other columns reached the towns of Azzano, Decimo, Portugruaru and Concordia. The Italians were now within less than eighteen miles of Udine, where the Italian headquarters had been established when the disaster at Caporetta overtook them. Their total advance had been thirty miles.

On November 1st, with nearly 100,000 of their armies prisoners, 200,000 more cut off and surrounded in the Brenta and Piave regions, emissaries from the Austrian commanders entered the Italian lines under a white flag, bearing a plea for an armistice. The Allied war council in Versailles began drawing up the terms. In the meantime, with the announcement that he would rather drive the Austrians out than accept their surrender, Gen. Diaz kept up his hammer blows. The Austrians were in full rout and their casualties were mounting into the hundreds of thousands. Their entire army in the Trentino district had been cut off.

On November 3rd, the Allies' terms were presented to Austria and the armistice was signed. Germany's last prop had been kicked out from under her. Fighting in a death grip on the west front, her eastern borders were now exposed to the enemy's attack. The armistice terms left Austria powerless. She was forced to evacuate all territories under occupation. Her fleet had to be given up to the Allies. Her army had to be totally demobilized and all her troops fighting with the Germans in France had to be withdrawn. The armistice terms practically granted what Italy had fought for, the occupation of the Trentino district, which she had lost to Austria, as well as the peninsula of Istria. The armistice provided magistrational powers over this territory and troops also began occupation to ensure the keeping of the terms in good faith.

Brigadier General Peyton Conway March, Commander of all United States Artillery in France.

Germany made her first direct request for an armistice on October 6th, but for the purposes of narration the peace negotiations which resulted in the complete dissolution of the Teutonic Allies and the surrender of Germany are here reviewed in chronological order, along with the internal disturbances which accompanied the defeats at the front and which have resulted in a political upheaval of the greater part of Europe:

As early as September 15th, the Kaiser had offered a separate peace to Belgium, one that was scorned by the little kingdom. This was taken as the first indication of a "peace drive", started to weaken the Allies and bring discord. The offer was vague except in that it asked Belgium's neutrality until the close of the war and guaranteed her political identity.

On the same day Austria, through the Swiss government and the other neutral nations, sent a proposal for a parley of the powers to accomplish peace. It proposed that the hostilities not cease during the discussions, which were to be carried on by delegates from the belligerents to bring out the ideas of eventual terms for the ending of the war. The conference was to be "nonbinding and confidential discussion on the basic principle for the conclusion of peace".

Though the Allies regarded this simply as a ruse, President Wilson sent the following curt reply:

"The government of the United States feels that there is only one reply which it can make to the suggestion of the imperial Austro-Hungarian government. It has repeatedly and with entire candor stated the terms upon which the United States would consider peace, and can and will entertain no proposal for a conference upon a matter concerning which it has made its position and purpose so plain."

King George Salutes the Stars and Stripes When United States Soldiers March Through London.

Austria-Hungary was known to be facing dissolution. The Czecho-Slavs and the Jugo-Slavs were already declaring for separate republics and Bohemia was threatening a similar step.

On October 6th, Germany, with the

American Soldiers Who Returned on the "Leviathan" Impersonating Fritz in His "Kamerad" Stuff.

new chancellor, Prince Maximilian of Baden, in power as the representative of the coalition government, which had been formed to still the threatened disturbances by adherents of the Social democrats, sent the first direct appeal for an armistice. On that day Prince Maximilian, through the Swiss government, sent the following note to President Wilson:

"The German Government requests the president of the United States to take in hand the restoration of peace, acquaint all the belligerent states of this request and invite them to send plenipotentiaries for the purpose of opening negotiations.

"It accepts the program set forth by the president of the United States in his message to congress on January 8 and in his later pronouncements, especially his speech of September 27, as a basis for peace negotiations.

"With a view to avoiding further bloodshed, the German government requests the immediate conclusion of an armistice on land and water and in the air."

Baron Burian, of Austria, made known the similar wish of Austria, and in his subsequent utterances to the Reichstag, Prince Maximilian supplemented his declaration of the government's position by indicating the wish to change the constitution, to accomplish democratization and to form a league of nations to protect the peace of the world.

The message of President Wilson men-

Boxing contest viewed by 20,000 soldiers. It was one of the most picturesque boxing tournaments ever held at Camp Upton. The ring was raised about eight feet from the ground and draped with the flags of the Allies.

tioned in the German note occupies a place in a previous chapter as the basis upon which all peace negotiations must rest. His liberty loan speech on September 27th, to which the German chancellor also referred, follows:

"We are all agreed that there can be no peace obtained by any kind of bargain or compromise with the governments of the central empires, because we have dealt with them already and have seen them

deal with other governments that were parties to this struggle, at Brest-Litovsk and Bucharest.

"They have convinced us that they are without honor and do not intend justice. They observe no covenants, accept no principle but force and their own interest.

"Get out first—then talk armistice and peace," was the sense of the reply sent to Germany by President Wilson on October 8th. He stated that there could be no compromise with autocracy and demanded to know in unequivocable language if Germany would accept the uncompromising terms laid down by him. The Allied nations saw in the German note another trap, one by which the German chancellor hoped to involve the United States in a long diplomatic discussion, which, when peace finally was denied, would strengthen the flagging strength of the German people's faith in the government by showing them that the Allies sought not a just peace but were bent upon a war of slaughter and conquest. But every faith was placed in President Wilson, and his reply, which follows, was ample assurance that he would handle the situation:

"Before making reply to the request of the imperial German government, and in order that that reply shall be as candid and straightforward as the momentous interests involved require, the president of the United States deems it necessary to assure himself of the exact meaning of the note of the imperial chancellor.

"Does the imperial chancellor mean that the imperial German government accepts the terms laid down by the president in his address to the congress of the United States on the eighth of January last and in subsequent addresses, and that its object in entering into discussions would be only to agree upon the practical details of their application?

"The president feels bound to say with

Capt. Raoul Lufbery, premier "ace" of the Lafayette Escadrille, who earned undying fame in his many combats with German aviators.

regard to the suggestion of an armistice that he would not feel at liberty to propose a cessation of arms to the governments with which the government of the United States is associated against the central powers, so long as the armies of those powers are upon their soil. The good faith of any discussion would manifestly depend upon the consent of the central powers immediately to withdraw their forces everywhere from invaded territory.

"The president also feels that he is justified in asking whether the imperial chancellor is speaking merely for the constituted authorities of the empire who have so far conducted the war. He deems the answer to these questions vital from every point of view."

Americans on Aisne Sector. American troops on active service in the Aisne sector: boarding motor-lorries for a journey.

From all over the United States, from the people and from Congress came demands for the unconditional surrender of the Central Powers. The Germans were being driven back and every day registered another defeat for their arms. There was scant faith placed in the sincerity of their peace aims. On October 14th, Germany's further expression of acceptance of President Wilson's terms came by wireless. The message follows:

"In reply to the question of the president of the United States of America the German government hereby declares:

"The German government has accepted the terms laid down by President Wilson in his address of January the eighth, and in his subsequent addresses, on the foundation of a permanent peace of justice.

"Consequently, its object in entering into discussions would be only to agree upon practical details of the application of those terms.

"The German government believes that the governments of the powers associated with the government of the United States also take the position taken by President Wilson in his address. The German government, in accordance with the Austro-Hungarian government, for the purpose of bringing about an armistice, declares itself ready to comply with the propositions of the president in regard to evacuation.

"The German government suggests that the president may occasion the meeting of a mixed commission for making the necessary arrangements concerning the evacuation.

"The present German government, which has undertaken the responsibility for this step towards peace, has been formed by conferences and in agreement with the great majority of the reichstag.

"The chancellor, supported in all of his actions by the will of this majority, speaks in the name of the German government and of the German people."

This note was signed by Solf, the new state secretary of the foreign office, and brought forth a new cry for unconditional surrender both here and in the allied nations of Europe. Further evidence of a "peace trap" was seen in the suggestion for discussion of the terms, and on October 15th President Wilson sent a reply

which left no doubt as to the uncompromising attitude of the Allies and the United States. He stated that the terms of evacuation and reparation were those which must be determined wholly by the Allies and in which Germany could have no hand. He called attention to the continued activities of submarines and the burning of cities during the German retreat and other inhuman acts, all being committed while the Germans sought to discuss terms for the cessation of hostilities. He left no doubt that the deposing of the Kaiser was one of the chief aims of the nations fighting against Germany. In the following language he told of the blow aimed at autocracy:

"It is necessary, also, in order that there may be no possibility of misunderstanding, that the president should very solemnly call the attention of the government of Germany to the language and plain intent of one of the terms of peace which the German government has now accepted. It is contained in the address of the president delivered at Mount Vernon on the fourth of July last. It is as follows:

" 'The destruction of every arbitrary power anywhere that can separately, secretly, and of its single choice disturb the peace of the world; or, if it cannot be presently destroyed, at least its reduction to virtual impotency.'

"The power which has hitherto controlled the German nation is of the sort here described. It is within the choice of the German nation to alter it. The president's words just quoted naturally constitute a condition precedent to peace, if peace is to come by the action of the German people themselves. The president feels bound to say that the whole process of peace will, in his judgment, depend upon the definiteness and the satisfactory character of the guaranties which can be given in this fundamental matter. It is indispensable that the governments associated against Germany should know beyond peradventure with whom they are dealing."

American and French Soldiers Searching for Concealed Self-explosive Bombs.

Affairs in Austria were going from bad to worse. The discussion of splitting the Dual Monarchy into four states was going on. These new nations on the map were to be a Germanic Austria, the republic of the Czecho-Slavs and the Illyrian and Ruthenian republics. On October 18th, the Czecho-Slavs revolted and raised their own flag. Prague was seized and a republic was declared with no doubt that its national policies would be against Germany and all other forms of autocracy. From Berlin came the first indications to the world that open rebellion was threatened. The Socialists rioted and a display of force was made to quell them.

The Allies were placing great faith in President Wilson's ability to keep out of diplomatic tangles with Berlin and Vienna and to avoid traps in peace negotiations. But with the consent of the

Heavy Artillery on the French Front Used by the Americans to Advantage.

United States, it was agreed that all peace proposals should go to the Allied war cabinet. The British, with the taste of victory, with the end of four years of conflict and suffering almost in sight, were determined in their demands that absolutely no compromise be reached.

From Austria had come a plea for a separate peace, but it was not made public until October 19th, the day on which President Wilson sent his reply. Austria, like Germany, agreed to the famous "fourteen articles", but likewise, suggested "negotiations of the details". The President's curt reply voiced the same uncompromising attitude he had adopted toward Germany and Vienna was told that evacuation must come first, then talk of peace.

Another note was received from Berlin on October 21st. This reiterated assurances that the overthrow of autocracy would come with peace and that it was the voice of the German people speaking through the negotiations, not that of the Kaiser. It protested against the view that atrocities were being committed and assured President Wilson that these acts were against the strictest orders and the guilty were being punished. But the note, like its predecessors, made no suggestion of quick and absolute surrender on the terms the Allies would impose. At the same time Great Britain made her position plain as regarded evacuation of territory. Hints at new demands regarding the freedom of the seas were made and the British press asked for terms which would impose the fullest reparation and indemnities for the ravaged countries.

President Wilson's reply to this latest advance was the strongest of his exchanges with Germany and deserves full space here. The note closed the doors to any further discussion without a guaranty of surrender and made it plain that the Allied military command would dictate the terms of an armistice in the field and that Germany must apply directly there. It also dealt in unqualified terms with the record of pledges broken by Germany and stated that the United States and the Allies would in no way deal with the Hohenzollern dynasty or with a cabinet who represented them. The President's memorable note follows:

"Having received the solemn and explicit assurance of the German government that it unreservedly accepts the terms of peace laid down in his address to the congress of the United States on the eighth of January, 1918, and the principles of settlement enunciated in his subsequent addresses, particularly the address of the twenty-seventh of September, and that it desires to discuss the details of their application and that this wish and purpose emanated, not from those who have hitherto dictated German policy and conducted the present war on Germany's behalf, but from ministers who speak for the majority of the reichstag

and for an overwhelming majority of the German peoples; and having received also the explicit promise of the present German government that the humane rules of civilized warfare will be observed both on land and sea by the German armed forces, the president of the United States feels that he cannot decline to take up with the governments with which the government of the United States is associated the question of an armistice.

"He deems it his duty to say again, however, that the only armistice he would feel justified in submitting for consideration would be one which should leave the United States and the powers associated with her in a position to enforce any arrangements that may be entered into and to make a renewal of hostilities on the part of Germany impossible.

"The president has, therefore, transmitted his correspondence with the present German authorities to the governments with which the government of the United States is associated as a belligerent, with the suggestion that, if those governments are disposed to effect peace upon the terms and principles indicated, their military advisers and the military advisers of the United States be asked to submit to the governments associated against Germany the necessary terms of such an armistice as will fully protect the interests of the peoples involved and ensure to the associated governments the unrestricted power to safeguard and enforce the details of the peace to which the German government has agreed, provided they deem such an armistice possible from the military point of view.

"Should such terms of armistice be suggested, their acceptance by Germany will afford the best concrete evidence of her unequivocal acceptance of the terms

Three soldiers wearing different types of gas masks. At an exhibition they realistically went through their drills and maneuvers and won applause from the great crowd that gathered to see them.

and principles of peace from which the whole action proceeds.

"The president would deem himself lacking in candor did he not point out in the frankest possible terms the reason why extraordinary safeguards must be demanded. Significant and important as the constitutional changes seem to be which are spoken of by the German foreign secretary in his note of the 20th of October, it does not appear that the principle of a government responsible to the German people has yet been fully worked out or that any guarantees either exist or are in contemplation that the alterations of principle and of practice now partially agreed upon will be permanent.

"Moreover, it does not appear that the

Minister Whitlock returning to his post in Belgium. U. S. Minister Brand Whitlock aboard the S. S. Rotterdam.

heart of the present difficulty has been reached. It may be that future wars have been brought under the control of the German people, but the present war has not been; and it is with the present war that we are dealing.

"It is evident that the German people have no means of commanding the acquiescence of the military authorities of the empire in the popular will; that the power of the king of Prussia to control the policy of the empire is unimpaired; that the determining initiative still remains with those who have hitherto been the masters of Germany.

"Feeling that the whole peace of the world depends now on plain speaking and straightforward action, the president deems it his duty to say, without any attempt to soften what may seem harsh words, that the nations of the world do not and cannot trust the word of those who have hitherto been the masters of German policy, and to point out once more that, in concluding peace and attempting to undo the infinite injuries and injustices of this war, the government of the United States cannot deal with any but veritable representatives of the German people.

"If it must deal with the military masters and the monarchial autocrats of Germany now, or if it is likely to have to deal with them later in regard to the international obligations of the German empire, it must demand, not peace negotiations, but surrender. Nothing can be gained by leaving this essential thing unsaid."

Events were transpiring in the domains of the Central Powers which were having a strong influence. The people's party and the Social Democrats, openly committed to an early peace, were making their demands heard in Berlin. The Germans were being cleared from Roumania and the eastern gates of Austria were now threatened by the Allies. Hungarian soldiers were openly joining the peace

mobs in Budapest and other cities in the Dual Monarchy. And, most serious of all, the militarists, who had committed Germany to the great war, had lost their last shreds of power. Ludendorff, who, more than Hindenburg, was the embodiment of the military policy, was forced out after a bitter controversy. The first quartermaster general, up to the last moment, even with the iron military machine falling about his ears, is supposed to have stood firm against surrender. Hindenburg, with others, had met the Kaiser and the new chancellor and his ministry in to it.

Austria again asked for separate peace terms and on October 29th she made her direct plea for an armistice at once, the details of which have been recounted above.

The action of the Allies was quick in regard to Germany's last plea. The Allied war cabinet met at Versailles and framed the terms of armistice. These were transmitted to Gen. Foch and on November 5th, President Wilson communicated to Berlin the fact that the terms might be had by applying to the Allied

Americans Before St. Mihiel Salient. Before opening artillery fire on the Germans in the St. Mihiel salient these American boys are seen with gas masks on awaiting to receive the final word.

conference. There were rumors that he frankly told his sovereign that all was lost. And with this news to the outside world, came authoritative evidence that the German army at the front was disbanding in revolt even as it retreated.

Berlin, convinced that the Allies and the United States would countenance no more quibbling, on October 27th, made a direct request for the terms of an armistice. To President Wilson, Berlin addressed the information that the government was now by the people and that the military authority had been subjected high command on the field of battle.

Germany, pushed to extreme straits, did not delay. Gen. Foch was notified by wireless that a German armistice commission sought to enter the lines and confer with him at headquarters, and on November 7th, firing was stopped at the point in the lines where the commission was to arrive and they were taken to Gen. Foch's headquarters. Gen. E. G. W. von Gruenell, Germany's delegate to the Hague peace conferences; Gen. H. K. A. von Winterfeld, former military attache in Paris; Vice Admiral Meurer, and Ad-

miral Paul von Hintze made up the German commission.

And even as they were entering the lines, great events making for the collapse of Germany and Austria were transpiring. Along a front of a hundred miles the Allied armies were advancing in an assault which in savageness surpassed anything that had gone before. Ghent had capitulated as Queen Elizabeth of Belgium watched; Sedan was in flames and the first American troops had advanced to its outskirts; the Italians now numbered their prisoners at 1,000,000 men and they had taken 6,000 big guns and 200,000 horses. And in Germany there remained no doubt that autocracy was toppling. German sailors on some of the battleships at Kiel had revolted and seized the vessels in the name of the revolution. The first outburst of the workers and soldiers movement came when 20,000 workers gathered at Stuttgart and waved the red flag and shouted the slogan "Down with the war and long live the social republic". Dispatches which found their way out of Austria revealed that a state of chaos existed there. Cities were flooded by the soldiers returning in disorder. The demoralized troops were plundering and rallying to the banners of a score of incipient revolts. Of food there was little and the returning soldiers seized what little of that there was.

On November 8th, from the German commission within the French lines, there was sent a courier who bore the terms of the Allies to the German council at Spa. Germany was given seventy-two hours in which to answer, but the request that fighting cease until that time was refused by Gen. Foch. The wily French commander refused to be tricked and his victorious troops kept on in their rush Rhinewards.

Emperor Wilhelm II, the world's greatest autocrat, abdicated the throne and renounced the rights of succession for the Crown Prince on November 9th and

Lieut. Eddie Rickenbacher, America's greatest "Ace," standing by his machine at an American Aviation field, France. Lieut. Rickenbacher brought down twenty-six enemy planes.

the overthrow of autocracy and militarism was complete. This was followed by the announcement a few hours later that the first of the German states to announce a republic was Bavaria and that the diet of that little kingdom had overthrown the Wittelsbach dynasty and deposed King Ludwig and his heir, Prince Rupprecht. The German chancellor's announcement of the Kaiser's abdication follows:

"The German imperial chancellor, Prince Max of Baden, has issued the following decree: 'The kaiser and king has decided to renounce the throne.

" 'The imperial chancellor will remain in office until the questions connected with the abdication of the kaiser, the renouncing by the crown prince of the throne of the German empire and of Prussia, and the setting up of a regency shall have been settled.

"'For the regency he intends to appoint Deputy Ebert as imperial chancellor, and he proposes that a bill shall be brought in for the establishment of a law providing for the immediate promulgation of general suffrage and for a constitutional German national assembly, which will settle finally the future form of government of the German nation and of those peoples which might be desirous of coming within the empire.'"

Henry P. Davison of the Red Cross.

Thus ended the reign of the man whose dreams of dominion had plunged the world into war. With some of his staff and members of his personal household, he left main Headquarters at Spa on Nov. 10th, crossed the Dutch frontier and sought refuge in the house of Count Bentinck at Amerongen. His presence in Holland was a great source of embarassment to that country. The people of Holland, influenced by the wave of democracy—and in some instances bolshevism—that was sweeping Europe, feared that his pres-

ence in their country might be used as an excuse to demand the removal of royalty and the setting up of a socialistic form of government.

In the meantime the political disturbances in Germany were growing. The strikes of workers extended through all the cities of northern Germany. More ships had been seized by the rebels at Kiel and there had been fighting between them and the scattered royalists. With the abdication of the Kaiser, Berlin had been seized by the workmen's and soldiers' council. The revolutionists held sway in Wurtemburg and Brunswick and the monarchs of those principalities stepped down from their thrones.

On November 10th, the red flag was flying everywhere in Berlin and a republic was declared to exist by the social democrats. Friedrich Ebert, with the resignation of Prince Maximilian, had become chancellor and head of the provisional government. Among his cabinet he numbered Dr. Liebknecht, recently released from prison, and Philip Scheidemann, both worldwide known leaders of govern-

Remarkable View of Exterior Y. M. C. A. Canteen Dugout Situated 150 Yards from the Boche Lines.

mental reform. A general strike had been called and within seven hours, with no bloodshed except for a few deaths in clashes with German army officers, the overthrow of the imperial government had been accomplished and another republic added to the free nations of the world.

The world war ended at 11 o'clock

A. M. (Paris time) on November 11th, 1918. This continent received the news in a dispatch sent from Washington stating that at 2:45 o'clock A. M. the state department had announced that the armistice terms had been signed and that they would become effective at the hour given above. Gen. Foch had conveyed the news to all his commanders and promptly to the minute firing ceased at the time set.

The terms imposed in the armistice left no opportunity for Germany to resume military operations. With the signing of the agreement the new government in Berlin, in effect, placed itself absolutely in the hands of the Allies. The following is a summary of the terms of the armistice:

## MILITARY SURRENDERS

The Germans, within fourteen days, must evacuate all of Belgium, France, Alsace-Lorraine, and Luxemburg. All German troops remaining after that time will become prisoners of war.

The Germans must surrender 5,000 cannon, half heavy and half field artillery; 30,000 machine guns, 3,000 mine throwers, and 2,000 airplanes, fighters, bombers—firstly D. seventy-threes—and night bombing machines.

Interior View of Replica of a Jewish Welfare Board Hut in France on the Fighting Lines

The Germans must surrender in good condition 5,000 locomotives, 50,000 wagons, and 10,000 motor lorries. They also must turn over all the railways in

Alsace-Lorraine and their coal and metal supplies.

All Germans in East Africa must surrender in one month.

## NAVAL SURRENDERS

The Germans must surrender 160 submarines, including all cruiser and mine laying submarines. They also must give up the following naval craft, the individual ships to be designated by the allies: Fifty destroyers, six battle cruisers, ten battleships, eight light cruisers.

The other submarines and all the other surface vessels are to be disarmed and dismanned and concentrated in German ports to be designated by the Allies. All auxiliary vessels (trawlers, motor vessels, etc.) are to be disarmed.

All ports on the Black sea occupied by the Germans are to be surrendered, together with all the Russian vessels captured by the Germans.

All merchant vessels belonging to the Allies now in the hands of the Germans are to be surrendered without reciprocity.

The Salvation Army Hut and Cooking Station on the Fighting Lines in France.

## OCCUPATIONS

The allies will occupy all of the country on the left (west) bank of the Rhine and the principal crossings at Mayence, Coblenz, and Cologne, together with the bridgeheads (twenty miles in radius) on the right bank.

The Germans must withdraw and create a neutral zone on the right bank forty kilometers wide from the Holland border to the Swiss border.

The allies will occupy the German forts on the Cattegat to insure freedom of access to the Baltic.

## RESTORATION

Besides France, Belgium and Alsace, the Germans must retire from all territory held by Russia, Roumania, and Turkey before the war.

The treaties of Bucharest and Brest-Litovsk are abrogated.

The allies are to have access to the restored territories in the east either through Dantzig or the River Vistula.

## RESTITUTION

Full restitution for all damage done by the German armies.

Restitution of the cash taken from the National Bank of Belgium.

Return of all of the gold taken by the Germans from Russia and Roumania, this gold to be turned over to the allies as trustees.

## REPATRIATION

All allied prisoners in Germany, military, naval or civilian, to be repatriated immediately without reciprocal action by the allies.

The territory west of the Rhine which the Germans were to evacuate is roughly 20,000 square miles in extent, with a population of about 9,000,000. It includes some of the most important mining and manufacturing districts of Germany, and such great centers as Cologne, Strassburg, Metz, and Coblenz.

The territory consists of Alsace-Lorraine, the Palatinate, the Rhine province, Birkenfeld, and about one-third of Hesse.

The Rhine province is the largest of these districts. Its area is 10,423 square miles and the census of 1910 gave its population as 5,759,000. It contains great coal and metal deposits and some of the largest iron and steel manufacturing centers of Germany. There also are textile industries on a vast scale as well as extensive farming and wine growing regions.

Two Salvation Army Lasses, Prize Winners in Doughnut and Pie Making.

The most important cities are Cologne, Coblenz, Bonn, and Aix-la-Chapelle. The Rhine province is the most westerly province of Prussia, by which it was acquired in 1815.

Next in size is Alsace-Lorraine. Torn from France after the Franco-Prussian war, its restoration to the mother country has been one of the chief points upon which the allies have insisted in outlining their terms. Its area is 5,600 square miles, and its population about 1,875,000.

The principal towns are Metz, Strassburg, Muehlhausen, and Kolmar. It contains the great iron ore district of Briey, one of the principal sources of German supply, and the extensive Saar coal fields. Its textile industries are among the most important in Germany.

The Palatinate is 2,372 square miles in extent, and has about 950,000 inhabitants. It is chiefly a farming and wine growing country, although there are some large

manufacturing industries. The capital is Speyer.

Birkenfeld is a principality belonging to, although detached from the grand duchy of Oldenburg. It is inclosed in the Rhine province. Its area is 194 square miles, and its population about 45,000.

The total area of the grand duchy of Hesse, about one-third of which lies west of the Rhine, is 2,965 square miles, and its total population is 1,300,000. The capital of Hesse, which is on the west bank of the Rhine, is Mainz, one of the principal fortresses of Germany.

declined by 45 per cent. while that of the allies was as great at the end as at the beginning of the campaign, thanks to the extraordinarily rapid reinforcement of the American army. The British bore the brunt of the fighting of the final campaign and their strength was reduced by 27 per cent. during the season while that of the French declined by only 21 per cent. When the fighting ceased the retreating German armies, outnumbered by the ratio of 25 to 17, terribly exhausted and short of munitions, were being split in two by the forest of the Ardennes,

The interned Austrian transport "Danube," used to carry food to the starving people of Belgium.

Evacuation of this territory also freed from German control the nominally independent grand duchy of Luxemburg, which, invaded by Germany at the beginning of the war, had been completely under its control since that time.

That the Germans gave up the struggle on November 11th because the allies were about to destroy the German armies is beyond peradventure. During the course of the sanguinary 1918 campaign the strength of the enemy's field armies de-

which would have prevented mutual support being quickly given by the northern and southern German armies. Foch would have covered himself with glory by administering the coup de mort to the stricken German armies, but he yielded to the view that it would be a crime to sacrifice thousands of additional lives on the allied side when every essential of peace could be secured without such a sacrifice. The only regrettable feature about that decision is that multitudes of

German people did not sense the fact that their armies were defeated.

Figures suggesting in detail the changes in the relative strength of the combatants as the German offensive waned and the allied offensive progressed to final victory were given by General Maurice, who appears to have had access to semi-official information. Taking the strength of the Belgian army as the unit, which means that a unit represents slightly more than 100,000 men, the following appears to have been the standing of the belligerents on March 21st, when the supreme German effort to win the war began.

| Strength of Allied Armies | | Strength of German Armies |
|---|---|---|
| British | 10½ | |
| French | 12¾ | |
| American | ¾ | |
| Belgian | 1 | 26 |
| | 25 units | 26 units |

Thus the actual strength of the Germans at the front at the beginning of the campaign was little more than 100,000 greater than that of the four allied nations, but the Germans had 13 other units, or more than 1,300,000 additional troops, on the way across Europe, which they could use and had available in the west before they attacked the French north of the Aisne on May 27th. In spite of all his losses in attacking the British, the enemy's attacking strength in May had increased from 26 to 31 units, giving him an advantage of more than half a million men. In the first weeks of the campaign the allies were unable to make the best use of their several and distinct armies because of the lack of a supreme commander. Had the wisest use been made of the pooled resources of the allies it is doubtful that the reverses between March and July ever would have been suffered. The enemy, with undivided control, was able to concentrate such overpowering strength against a 50-mile sector of the British front as gave him the initiative over all the allied armies and got them "in bad." A long and anxious time was spent before the allies freed themselves from their painful disadvantage.

The writer has stated his belief that Foch had little idea, himself, what would be the effect of a counter-thrust on July 18. The most he counted on, probably, was that the enemy's offensive would be held up until the reinforcements from the United States would permit a genuine offensive campaign to proceed. This view is supported by the fact that in July the enemy still retained a great advantage in numbers though his troops were more battle-worn. The relative strength of the combatants when the allies struck back was:

| Allied Strength | | German Strength |
|---|---|---|
| British | 9½ | |
| French | 11½ | |
| U. S. | 3 | |
| Belgian | 1 | 30 |
| | 25 | 30 |

It will be noticed that the strength of the British and French had fallen off by 2¼ units, which were made up by the Americans. The German strength, since March, had increased by 4 units.

The rapidly-increasing American reserves justified Foch in striking and in keeping striking. Having snatched away the initiative he kept the enemy reserves dashing about madly to plug up holes in the line and wore them down rapidly. And so when the Germans made their submission in November the relative strength of the opponents was as follows:

| Allied Strength | | German Strength |
|---|---|---|
| British | 8 | |
| French | 10 | |
| Americans | 6 | |
| Belgians | 1 | 17 |
| | 25 | 17 |

In effect, the 1918 campaign ended in the allies gaining the greatest victory ever recorded in military history.

W. R. P.

Americans Going Forward to Occupy Front Trenches in France.

# Marvels of the War on Land, Sea and Air

## CHAPTER XVI

TANKS GREAT INVENTION — AIRSHIPS IMPROVED GREATLY — GERMAN SUBMARINE MOST FORMIDABLE — NAVAL COMPARISONS.

The most remarkable invention developed for military purposes during The Great War was the tank. It was an idea adapted from the tractor machine and various persons in England and in America were credited with first giving the suggestion to the British War Office. It was used with considerable success in the battle of the Somme in 1916 but later the anti-tank guns of the Germans proved effective and many officers on both sides were disposed to regard the tank as a failure. Consequently, a complete surprise was sprung by General Byng late in 1917 when hundreds of tanks rushed forward, beating down or carrying away the elaborate wire entanglements protecting the German trenches opposite Cambrai, opening the way for an advance of nine miles by the British infantry. Had General Haig been well supplied with reserves to hurl through the breach thus made by the perambulating fortresses, a different ending to the campaign of that year might have been written into history. Thereafter the tank was greatly feared by the German army but it was too late then for the Germans to go into the manufacture of them on a large scale. They had only a few tanks in their spring offensive in 1918. The British and other allied armies, however, had many hundreds of them and used them as brigades in a most spectacular manner. In the Somme offensive of August, 1918, the tanks did very fine work.

In the air wonderful progress was made in the development of heavier-than-air machines which proved to be much more effective for army purposes than the German dirigibles or Zeppelins. These huge flying monsters were used in making several raids on England but with disastrous results to themselves. Finally the Germans confined the operations of Zeppelins to scouting for the Fleet. When the war began the British army had only one hundred airplanes but at the end of the war they had tens of thousands. On Ostend and Zeebrugge alone the British bombing planes dropped an average of four tons of bombs daily over a period lasting for five months. By that time three-decker airplanes capable of flying thousands of miles and of carrying as many as forty men had been used. The third day after the armistice was signed had been set as the date for a great raid on Berlin by monster allied airplanes.

The submarine became a much more formidable vessel as the war progressed, and the radius and power of the torpedo, its principal weapon, was much increased. Some of the later submarines were of 2,500 tons, equipped with six-inch guns and capable of submerging safely to a depth of 300 feet. The British also developed a battle-cruiser capable of crossing the ocean in three days.

The British Admiralty permitted to be made public the real story of the submarine cruisers the British successfully constructed at the time the Germans were boasting of their super-submarine. The British craft have two funnels and make 24 knots an hour on the surface under steam power. They carry from eight to

ten torpedo tubes, two or three 4-inch guns and also are equipped with internal combustion motors for surface cruising. The batteries for the undersea power can be charged from both the steam and combustion engines, and an ingenious scheme has been devised for quickly dismantling the funnels for the purpose of submerging. The vessels displace 2,000 tons on the surface and 2,700 tons submerged. They are 340 feet long, have a beam of 26 feet and a cruising radius of 3,000 miles. They are designed to be even a match for torpedo-boat destroyers in surface fighting.

It is also known that the British have successfully built a submarine carrying a 12-inch gun, although the details of this craft have not been made public. The craft was built with the idea of making it possible to fire this gun, the new ideas embraced in the construction including the "cushioning" of the boat to withstand the terrific concussion of the gun. This idea is reported unofficially as having been successful. So far as is known the new craft was never employed against any enemy vessel.

During the first half of the year 1918 no less than 100 German submarines were trapped in British mine fields off Heligoland. The total number captured or destroyed during the war is put at 202. As at least 122 were surrendered since the armistice and 58 were not yet completed, it appears that Germany used during the war or had in course of construction, a total of 382 submarines, whereas she was credited with only 35 when war began. During the course of one month the British mined zone off the Belgian coast caught 17 German submarines.

Five hundred and seventeen ships were added to the British navy during the war. The new vessels include seven battleships, five battle-cruisers, twenty-six light cruisers, seventeen monitors, 230 destroyers and 232 mine-sweepers and special craft.

Secretary Daniels of the U. S., at the end of the war said that Great Britain has in operation or building sixty-one battleships, 13 battle cruisers, 31 heavy cruisers, 111 light cruisers, 216 patrol and gunboats, 409 destroyers, 219 submarines, 98 torpedo boats, 32 flotilla leaders, 220 airships and 897 miscellaneous ships.

The United States, with the second largest navy in the world, has built or projected 39 battleships, six battle cruisers, eight armored cruisers, forty light cruisers, 342 destroyers, 181 submarines, 15 coast torpedo vessels, 17 torpedo boats and 569 other vessels.

France has 29 battleships, 21 cruisers, eight light cruisers, 92 destroyers, 121 torpedo boats, 70 submarines, 39 airships and 183 other craft.

Italy has 18 battleships, seven cruisers, ten light cruisers, five monitors, 15 flotilla leaders, 54 destroyers, 83 torpedo boats, 85 submarines, 30 airships and 442 miscellaneous vessels.

Russia, before quitting the war, had 18 battleships, four battle cruisers, 12 heavy and nine light cruisers, 128 destroyers, 54 submarines, 13 torpedo boats, 14 airships and 90 miscellaneous vessels.

Before the armistice was signed, Germany had 47 battleships, six battle cruisers, 51 other cruisers, 223 destroyers, 175 torpedo boats, 243 submarines, and 564 miscellaneous vessels.

During the war 2,475 British ships were sunk with their crews beneath them, and 3,147 vessels were sunk and their crews left adrift. Fishing vessels to the number of 670 were lost during the period of hostilities.

According to one story, when the kaiser urged upon Admiral Scheer in October, 1918, that he sail out to meet the British fleet, the admiral consented, but only on condition that the kaiser accompany the fleet on the flagship and take nominal control of the action with the British fleet. In the interview between Scheer and the kaiser the latter pledged his word to Scheer that he would do so. The German fleet was to have sailed on a Thursday night, the kaiser was to have arrived at Kiel the previous Tuesday. But on the Monday preceding

a naval attache arrived at Kiel with a despatch for Scheer from the kaiser, in which Wilhelm stated that he could not come to Kiel because he believed it to be his duty to remain at Potsdam. Admiral Scheer then decided not only not to allow the fleet to sail, but as a protest against the Hohenzollerns to take possession of Kiel. Scheer informed Premier Ebert that he would hold the great naval base until a new government had been formed. Prince Henry of Prussia, who was at Kiel, was held a prisoner for a week. In a cablegram to government officials at Berlin, Admiral Scheer said, "We preferred disgrace to fighting in the cause of a coward."

Describing the German warships which surrendered to the British and are now interned in Scapa Flow, the correspondent of The Daily Telegraph says:

"The German admiral's flag, white with a thin black cross and two black balls, indicative of his rank, still flew at the main topgallant of the Friedrich der Grosse, as the German squadron moved between the British lines. It hung limp and dirty—typical in this state of all the German ships and their crews. The ships were in such condition that they looked like vessels laid by for breaking-up purposes. They could not have seen paint for two years. Their sides, funnels and bridges were covered with red rust, and the masts were black with soot. The guns even had not been painted for months.

"The Derfflinger was in better condition than any of the others, and there was an appearance on board that discipline was still in vogue. On all the other ships the crews were lounging about, many on the quarter decks, not recognizing their officers. On the Derfflinger the officers were parading smartly about on their own quarter, and the men were clean and orderly. As we passed close to each ship the men crowded the rail. They looked miserable and drenched and cold. Their clothing was nondescript. There was an air of melancholy and depression everywhere.

"It was a pleasure to come from them alongside our own great ships, where everything was spick and span. Hearty sailormen with cheery faces were at every porthole, and the quarter decks were occupied only by officers, the commander marching briskly along in the traditional way, telescope under his arm. The German officers have been very polite, and no trouble whatever has been experienced with them. The British officers have rejected all advances at friendliness, and have extended only the necessary courtesies."

Captain Persius, the German naval critic, chose the moment when the finest vessels of the German navy were about to be surrendered to the allies to publish in the Berlin Tageblatt a sensational article containing revelations regarding the German fleet. Captain Persius said the hope that the German fleet would be able in a second Skagerrak battle to beat the British fleet rested upon the bluff and lies of the naval authorities. In August, 1914, Germany had about one million tonnage in warships, while Great Britain had more than double that, and thanks to the mistakes of Von Tirpitz, the German material was quite inferior to the British. In the Skaggerak battle, the German fleet was saved from destruction partly by good leadership and partly by favorable weather conditions. Had the weather been clear or Admiral Von Scheer's leadership less able the destruction of the whole German navy would have resulted. The long-range British guns would have completely smashed the lighter-armed German ships. As it was, the losses of the German fleet were enormous, and on June 1, Captain Persius says, it was clear to every thinking man that the Skaggerrak battle must be the only general naval engagement of the war.

On all sides, says Capt. Persius, Ad-

miral Von Tirpitz was advised to construct only submarines, but he remained obstinate. On October 1, 1915, several members of the Reichstag made an earnest appeal to the army command—not to the naval staff—with the result that an order was issued terminating the construction of battleships in order that the material might be used for the making of U-boats. In the meantime so great a scarcity of material had arisen that it became necessary to disarm a number of the battleships and take the metal. In this manner, at the beginning of 1916 twenty-three battleships had been disarmed, as well as one newly built cruiser.

At the beginning of 1918 Captain Persius states, the German navy consisted only of dreadnaughts and battleships of the Heligoland, Kaiser and Markgraf types, and some few battle cruisers. All the ships which Von Tirpitz had constructed from 1897 to 1906, at a cost of innumerable millions, had been destroyed, and the U-boats that had been constructed had proved unable to fight against British warships. Admiral Von Capelle during his period as head of the navy constructed very few submarines, work being continued only on the construction of submarines of the large type, but in official quarters it was still stated that Germany possessed an enormous number of U-boats and that the losses were virtually nil. That was not true, the writer admits. In 1917, he states, 83 submarines were constructed, while 66 were destroyed. In April, 1917, Germany had 126 submarines and in October 146. In February, 1918, she had 136 and in June of the same year 113.

Only a small percentage of these submarines were actively operating at any given time, Captain Persius declares. In January, 1917, for instance, when conditions were favorable for submarine work, only twelve percent were active while thirty percent were in harbor, thirty-eight percent under repairs and twenty percent "incapacitated". Submarine crews, he says, were not sufficiently educated and trained and they looked with distrust upon the weapon. In the last months, he reveals, it was very difficult to get men for submarine work, as experienced seamen looked upon the submarine warfare as political stupidity. Captain Persius tells of the mutiny that broke out at the beginning of the month when the German navy was ordered out for attack. Had the seamen obeyed, the writer remarks, innumerable lives would have been lost, and he declares that "every thinking man therefore is of the opinion that the seamen on November 5 rendered an invaluable service to their country".

The surrender of war weapons by the enemy represented a higher percentage of his strength than had been estimated. A Paris despatch reported that the allies captured one-third of the German artillery during their offensive, that one-ninth was destroyed in action and that the surrender of 5,000 guns represented at least one-half of all the enemy's remaining artillery. The enemy was credited with having only 2,586 planes, and the surrender of 1,700 machines left him without a single bombing or fighting plane, the remainder being planes designed for other work.

The detailed report of General Haig on the British operations between April and November showed that General Haig agrees with Foch that the defensive power of the German army was destroyed by the allies' four months' campaign and that the armistice saved the German armies from a colossal disaster and Germany from an armed invasion. But for the cessation of hostilities the allied offensive would have been extended still farther. During the 1918 campaign the British captured more than 200,000 Germans and 2,850 cannon out of a total of 330,000 prisoners and 6,000 cannon taken by all the allied armies. General Haig says that during the last three months of the fighting, the British, using 59 divisions, met and defeated no less than 99 different divisions of the Germans.

W. R. P.

# The Debate on Peace Terms

## CHAPTER XVII

MEETING OF THE PEACE CONFERENCE — A PERIOD OF ANXIETY — THE ATTITUDE OF GERMANY — FIGHTING IN EASTERN EUROPE — BOLSHEVISM AND ANARCHY — PROBLEMS FOR THE CONFERENCE — REPARATION OF DAMAGES — ITALY'S CLAIMS — PRESIDENT WILSON'S ATTITUDE — GERMAN DELEGATES AT VERSAILLES.

The meeting of the delegates of the Allied and Associated nations at Paris for the purpose of drawing up terms to be dictated to the enemy powers was known as the Peace Conference. Its work was carried on for three and a half months, from the middle of January until the first week in May, before the Peace Treaty was in shape for presentation to the delegates of Germany. The meeting of delegates from the enemy with those from the Allied and Associated powers which took place at Versailles, was known as the Peace Congress.

Mankind seldom has passed through as anxious a period as the three and a half months between the first session of the Peace Conference and the summoning of the Peace Congress. During the strain of war, the peoples of the belligerent nations had shown remarkable fortitude. They had recognized that victory would go to the side that showed the most endurance and had braced themselves to withstand all the vicissitudes of the combat. With the collapse of the Central Powers and the termination of hostilities, self-restraint was given up and the peoples gave themselves over to the wildest excesses.

The collapse of the world's morale introduced an era of unrest during which governments everywhere feared that they might be sitting over a volcano. The allied troops felt that they had completed their task and insisted upon immediate demobilization. Their relatives joined in demanding that the authorities should return the men to civil life at a rate faster than the general political situation warranted or than the means of transportation permitted. The high cost of living in all parts of the world intensified popular discontent and disposed the people to listen to the advice of the most extreme agitators. The masses were impressed by the undoubted fact that the burdens of war had fallen unevenly on the citizenship, and they had an idea that the injustices of the industrial and social system which had persisted during the era of autocracy might be removed by concerted action. Here and there they were inclined to dispense with the ballot and take a short cut to reform by the exercise of physical force.

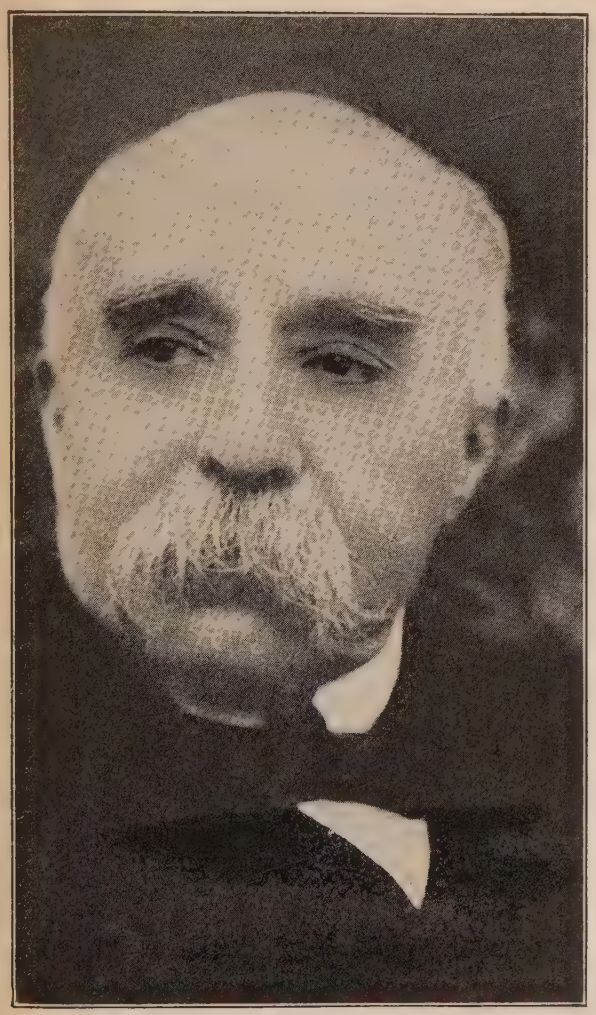
Germany sensed the anxiety of the Allied and Associated governments about revolutionary possibilities at home and did what she could to increase the danger and to magnify the fears. Thereby, she hoped to secure better terms of peace. She pointed to the horrors of the Bolshevik regime in Russia and threatened to bring a similar, hideous nightmare upon all the allied peoples unless they were merciful towards Germany. This she proposed to do by deliberately inciting violence in the Fatherland. For her own sake, she, sometimes, dealt sternly with disorders; at other times she permitted

or even fomented them in order to intimidate the perplexed enemy powers. The shortage of food in central, southern and eastern Europe, resulting in starvation conditions over vast areas; the terrible lack of employment and the disinclination of millions of unnerved men to take work when it was available, and their readiness to compel the state to support them, made conditions in Europe alarming enough without any manipulation on the part of the German political strategists. The truth was that Europe had lost stamina, was bankrupt and broken, economically and industrially, and its transportation system was so out of repair as to be unable to handle promptly the supplies of food from America that alone prevented general starvation. As it was, hundreds of thousands of lives were lost in Europe through insufficient food, and the winter of 1918-19 was one of the most unhappy on record. Conditions were equally bad in Asia. One estimate put the number of deaths in India from drought and famine as high as thirty millions.

On February 19 the world was shocked by the news that an anarchist had shot Clemenceau, the veteran premier of France. The wonderful physique of the premier pulled him through and in ten days he was able to resume work. The motive of the attack on him was to remove a man the assassin considered to be standing in the way of permanent peace. At that time the desire to punish Germany to the limit was uppermost in France. Two days after the shooting of Clemenceau, Premier Eisner of Bavaria was shot dead in Munich by a reactionary. Eisner knew that he could not remain in power without overthrowing the State Assembly by force and he was about to pull off a military coup d'etat when he was shot from behind. The assassin was killed, and the Bolshevik element seized power and held it for six weeks, when the federal government had courage enough to conduct a military campaign against the Bolsheviki with the aid of the Bavarian Constitutionalists. When the German delegates received the peace terms in May it could be said that they were in a position to speak for all Germany.

Throughout the entire Peace Conference fighting proceeded in eastern Europe between the Russian Bolsheviki and anti-Bolshevik forces that were aided by the Allied and Associated powers. The peace negotiators kept an anxious eye upon this warfare, and upon the efforts of the Bolsheviki to organize social revolutions in all the countries of Europe, for they recognized that it was quite conceivable that anarchy might spread over all of central and eastern Europe and make it impossible to enforce any documentary settlement of the problems created by the war. In March Bolshevism gained many successes and caused much apprehension. The allies and anti-Bolshevik forces in northern Russia were driven back and threatened with annihilation in the White Sea. The Bolshevik government forces advanced in the Ukraine. The Karolyi ministry in Hungary was superseded by a Bolshevik government that invited Bolshevik Russia to give it military aid in defiance of the allied peace terms. And the German foreign minister was reported to have sent delegates to Moscow who arranged a secret treaty providing that Russia would make no treaty with the Allied and Associated powers but, under certain circumstances, give military aid to Germany, which, in turn, should send thousands of military instructors to Russia. Moscow denied this report.

The inauguration at Buda Pest of a Bolshevik régime with the evident purpose of preventing the allies from making such territorial dispositions affecting the old Dual Empire as they found to be just, was a serious matter for the cause of civilization. It almost engulfed Rumania in a sea of Bolshevism. It menaced stability in the new states of Czecho-Slovakia and Jugo-Slavia, which had become proteges of the allies, and it opened up the possi-



Georges Clemenceau, the "Tiger" of France, Premier of the French Republic and Presiding Officer of the Peace Conference that Settled the Fate of Germany. He Was Wounded by a Would-be Assassin's Bullet During the Conference, But Made a Speedy Recovery and Lived to Hand the Terms of Peace to the Hun.

bility that any peace treaty the allies might submit to Germany, would be torn up and repudiated. General Smuts was sent as an allied emissary to Buda Pest but not with satisfactory results. As a consequence, an advance of Rumanian and Czecho-Slovak forces towards Buda Pest was ordered. The Rumanians at once occupied all of the territory that their country claimed, which was as far westward as the Szedin-Debreczen line and fifty miles beyond the line that the allies previously had told them they might take up. It was because the allied powers had ordered the Hungarian troops to withdraw to the Szedin-Debreczen line that Count Karolyi resigned. Had his invitation to the Bolsheviki to take power intimidated the allies, Germany would have copied Hungary's example. Austria showed a disposition to follow Hungary's example, but thought better of it when she saw that no good came of it. Contributing to the failure of the Bolshevik opposition to the Allies in Hungary was the desertion to the Rumanians of 30,000 Szeklers. These are a people, half a million strong, akin to the Magyars, but who were to come under Rumanian rule in Transylvania. Their defection probably was due to the promise by the Rumanians of a large measure of autonomy.

A nasty situation developed more than once as a result of the clashing of the Poles with the Germans in that portion of eastern Germany where the Poles were a preponderating element. Soon after the signing of the armistice the Poles started to take over the local administration, a movement which the Germans opposed with all available troops. General Hindenburg moved over to that region and by February it appeared that a serious campaign against the Poles was about to begin. Heavy fighting was averted by the allies forbidding either the Poles or the Germans to carry on operations, and delimiting a zone which should be evacuated by the Germans. It was well understood by everybody that this area represented the minimum amount of her territory that Germany would have to contribute to the formation of New Poland. The area was 115 miles long and 115 miles wide but of irregular shape, embracing about 4,000 square miles. The population thus lost by Germany was in the neighborhood of 800,000. The Poles believed, with good reason, that quite an additional area and population would be awarded them by the peace treaty. But this cession of land to New Poland brought a foreign power to within 110 miles of Berlin on the east. Significantly enough, the area ceded was shaped like a spearhead pointing at the German capital. On the opposite side of Europe, allied armies were to

remain in position along the Rhine for a number of years, at a distance of 290 miles from Berlin.

The territory that was handed over to the Poles in February as a first instalment, is low-lying and fertile, devoted mainly to agriculture and cattle-raising. The principal city in it is the fortress city of Posen, which has a pre-war garrison of 6,000 men. Posen was a place very dear to the heart of the Kaiser Wilhelm, and with the fortresses of Thorn and Graudenz formed an extremely strong barrier to invasion westward across the Vistula. The Poles continued to hope that these other two places, with a corridor of Polish territory running down to Danzig, along with that seaport city, would be added to their reconstructed state. By the terms of the armistice, Germany agreed to allow allied troops to pass through Danzig and across Prussia to Poland for the purpose of maintaining order. In April, however, she strongly objected to the Polish troops on the French front under General Haller being allowed to disembark at Danzig, fearing that a strong force would remain in Danzig and hold the city for New Poland. Germany's objections nearly provoked a breach with the allies, but finally Germany agreed to Polish troops in trains passing across Germany from the western front. At the same time it was understood that Danzig was to be made a free port and internationalized, a temporary decision that disappointed Ignace Paderewski, the world-famous pianist, who, as premier, had assumed the tremendous task of piloting New Poland through her early career. The reason Danzig was not awarded to Poland outright on this occasion, was that the majority of the population was German speaking, and the port was the natural outlet for the trade of German communities on either side. A through strip of Polish territory also would isolate East Prussia from the rest of Germany.

Towards the close of April it was announced that the disposition of Danzig had been varied, so that the city would have an independent existence but be within the Polish customs union. In other words, it would have autonomy as a municipality, thus perpetrating no injustice on the Germans within the city. The Germans were to have free passage across the corridor of Polish territory separating West and East Prussia.

The Peace Conference was a little more than midway through its course when serious differences of opinion developed as to the disposition of the Saar district in Germany, the amount and priority of the various national claims to reparation, and the guarantees that France should receive against possible future German aggression. At that time a good deal of pessimism about the outcome of the Peace Conference was voiced. Frank Simonds cabled to America that the best the world could hope for was a patched-up peace, that the League of Nations was dead, that France was being sacrificed, and that eastern Europe was being abandoned to Bolshevism. Newspaper reports reaching England caused several hundred British M. P.'s to send a telegram to Lloyd George demanding that he carry out his election pledges that Germany would be adequately punished for her misdeeds. This message caused the British premier to hurry home and tell Parliament and the nation that the peace treaty would provide:

(a) For the trial of those who began the war as well as of Germans who authorized crimes during the war.

(b) Complete reparation for the devastation caused by the enemy.

(c) Absolute security for France.

Lloyd George protested that every election pledge he had given during the fall would be found fulfilled in the peace treaty. And because of the widespread criticism of President Wilson for confronting some of the national aspirations of the European allies with the new ideals

of the proposed League of Nations, the British premier made occasion to say that no one could have been more sympathetic towards the peculiar problems and susceptibilities of the continental nations than had been President Wilson. By way of illustrating the immensity of the work of the Peace Conference, he pointed out that provision had to be made for ten new states, with varying degrees of autonomy, and the modification of the boundaries of fourteen other states.

The United States delegation questioned the view that the authors of German outrages could be tried and punished by any international court. They acquiesced in the view that the German fortifications in the whole Rhine area should be razed to the ground, that Germany should be forbidden to manufacture tanks and war airplanes and that the German army should be limited to 100,000 men, with no surplus war material. It was agreed by the conference that the Saar Valley coal mines, east of Metz, should become the absolute property of France, in compensation for the French coal mines the enemy had destroyed, and that Germany should only have the option of buying them back with gold at the end of a 15-year period. The administration of the Saar district during that period was to be under the League of Nations and at the end of the period a plebiscite was to be taken as to the future political status of the district.

The reparation clause of the peace treaty required such large payments of gold by Germany, that it became doubtful whether Germany would be in a position to redeem the Saar valley mines when the lapse of time permitted. The clause called upon Germany to admit her liability to pay the entire losses of the war, in the following words:

> The Allied and Associated powers affirm, and Germany accepts on behalf of herself and her allies, responsibility for all losses and damages of the Allied and Associated governments and their nationals as a consequence of the war imposed upon them by the aggression of the enemy states.

The allies decided that the total amount of reparation for which Germany was to admit liability was so vast that the interest alone would be more than Germany could pay, and so they left the determining of the exact amount to some later date. In the meantime, they provided that Germany should be given a certain period in which to pay off a given instalment of the principal sum and until that was paid no interest should be charged on the later instalments. The commission that investigated the matter concluded that the most that Germany appeared to be able to pay, was a total of $23,820,000,000, principal, during the next 32 years, and another $9,528,000,000 during an indefinite period following the 32-year period.

The manner of payment of the first-mentioned sum was as follows:

By May, 1921—$4,764,000,000, without interest.

By 1951—$9,528,000,000, with interest at 2½ per cent between 1921 and 1926, and 5 per cent thereafter. The first year's interest would be $238,200,000.

By an unfixed date, probably not before 1971, a second sum of $9,528,000,000; interest to be determined at a later date.

It will be seen that unless the victorious Allied combination relents at some future date Germans who were sucking babes when the peace terms were drawn up will be working fifty years later to make reparation for Germany's criminality in connection with The Great War. The terms made for the thirty year period between 1921 and 1951 suggest that the allies were of the opinion that Germany could not pay, in principal and interest, more than 500 million dollars a year. That is not a surprising view, for the entire pre-war revenue of the German government was under a billion dollars a year, and Germany, when deprived of the Lorraine iron mines and the Saar and Silesian coal mines, on which her commercial greatness largely was founded, will

Map of Central Europe, Showing the Territorial Effects of the Peace Treaty.—See Key on Opposite Page.
(Courtesy of Chicago Tribune.)

# CHANGES IN MAP OF EUROPE

## Key to Map on Opposite Page

*The changes made in the map of Central Europe by the terms of the Treaty of Peace handed to the German peace delegates at Versailles on May 7, 1919, are shown on the opposite page. The principal issues, in a territorial or geographic sense, are (See corresponding figures and letters in the map):*

1. Alsace-Lorraine, the territories which were wrenched from France in 1871, are restored to the republic. The French in the lost provinces now regained are repatriated, and the Germans there may become French citizens, if they so desire, by naturalization after three years. The public debt is cancelled.

2. The Saar valley will pass into the hands of the French, together with the output of the mines. After fifteen years the people of the district will vote whether they shall remain under French control, under the guidance of the league of nations, or return to Germany. This voting will be open to all inhabitants over 20 years of age.

3. Germany must renounce all treaties with Luxembourg and must give up the German control of the railways and other facilities in the grand duchy. The duchy is considered to have ceased to have been part of the German Zollverein from Jan. 1, 1919.

4. Germany must recognize the sovereignty of Belgium over the contested territory of Morenet, and must cede all rights to the districts of Malmedy and Eupen. The people in six months may protest, if they wish to, this change. The districts affected comprise 382 square miles.

5. Germany must create a neutral zone thirty miles in depth east of the Rhine. The bridgeheads will be occupied fifteen years.

6. Helgoland, the island fortress, is to be dismantled at German expense and by German labor.

7. The frontier between Germany and Denmark will be decided by a plebiscite. The people of Schleswig-Holstein will decide under the right of self-determination.

8. Danzig and the immediate vicinity will be a free port, giving Poland an outlet to the sea. It will be protected by the league of nations.

9. The territory around Memel must be given up to the allies, who will decide on its destination.

10. The boundaries of southern and eastern Prussia will be decided by a vote of the people. The German troops must move out within fifteen days after peace is signed.

11. Germany must recognize the independence of the new Poland.

12. The portion of West Prussia on the left bank of the Vistula must be ceded to Poland.

13. Posen must be ceded to Poland.

14. The greater part of Upper Silesia is to go to Poland.

15. The present border between Germany and Bohemia is to remain unchanged.

16. Germany must recognize the independence of the new nation of Czecho-Slovakia. Access to the sea must be provided by railroads to the Adriatic at Fiume and Triest, and in the north Germany must lease spaces in Hamburg and Stettin.

17. Germany must recognize the independence of German Austria.

18. The Ruthenians in Hungary are to be recognized as independent.

19. The entire Russian boundary must be restored to the lines of the old Russian empire. The treaties of Brest-Litovsk and other treaties with the Russian soviet government are abrogated.

20. Germany must accept any arrangement the allies make with Bulgaria.

21. The Germans must accept any arrangement the allies make with Turkey.

---

The rivers running through the old Germany and Austria-Hungary are to be internationalized and largely controlled by representatives of the allies:

A. The Rhine will be internationalized on the whole of its navigable course.

B. The Kiel canal, base of the German fleet, is to be opened to the ships of the world.

C. The Elbe river from the juncture of the Vltava to its mouth is to be internationalized.

D. The Vltava as far up as Prague is to be internationalized, giving the city an outlet to the sea.

E. The internationalization of the Oder will be between Oppa and the mouth of the stream.

F. The Niemen river must be opened to the vessels of the world as far up as Grodno.

G. The entire course of the Danube from Ulm to the Black sea is internationalized.

H. The Moselle river is placed under the same international river control commission as the Rhine.

be in a much less favorable position for raising money.

France's exhausted financial condition and the extent of her sacrifices for the cause of freedom were taken into consideration when the allies discussed the distribution of the enormous sums Germany should pay by way of reparation,—an amount twenty-three times as large as France was called upon to pay after the Franco-Prussian war of 1870-71. It was agreed that France should receive something like 55 per cent of the total sum to be paid by Germany, the distribution being, roughly, as follows:

| | |
|---|---|
| France | $13,000,000,000 |
| Britain | 6,000,000,000 |
| United States | 1,000,000,000 |
| Italy, Belgium, Serbia, Rumania, Russia, et al. | 3,820,000,000 |
| Total reparation sum | $23,820,000,000 |

Larger amounts were not awarded to Serbia, Rumania and Italy because of the large territorial advantages gained by them in the war. Better financial provision was made for devastated Belgium. As to Russia, it was understood that the amount allotted to her would be used to reduce her indebtedness to France and Britain. The British empire put in its entire war bill as a charge against Germany, including some five billions for the overseas dominions of the British empire. That sum represented more than one billion dollars for Canada. But it was well known that but a small proportion ever would be paid and that payment would be deferred until prior claims had been met.

The most sensational development during the Peace Conference arose from President Wilson's veto of the claims made by Italy to territory on the east side of the Adriatic Sea. Not content with securing Avlona and a bridgehead in Albania at the entrance to the Adriatic, and also the whole peninsula of Istria at the head of that sea, along with Triest and the great Austrian naval base at Pola, Italy insisted upon being given Fiume and a large part of Dalmatia. Britain, France and Russia had promised Dalmatia and Istria to Italy in return for her participation in the war, but not Fiume. At one time, it appeared as though Italy would get Fiume in lieu of Dalmatia, but President Wilson decided that she was entitled to neither on ethnological and geographical grounds. Though the aristocracy and culture of Dalmatia, particularly along the coast, were Italian, the great bulk of the people were Jugo-Slavs who desired to be citizens of the new state of Jugo-Slavia. A small majority of the citizens of Fiume were Italians but that port was a natural and essential trade outlet for Jugo-Slavia and Czecho-Slovakia, and to lesser degree for Rumania, Hungary and reduced Austria.

President Wilson's open appeal to world sentiment, and particularly to the better nature of Italy, made in the form of a public statement, affronted the Italian delegates and the Italian premier, Dr. Orlando, left the Peace Conference and went home, with the approval of the Italian king. Indirectly, it was intimated that Italy would seize and retain by force all the territory she claimed and if necessary, conclude a separate peace with Germany. That was extreme talk which few people expected to be realized. The Italian House, by a vote of almost ten to one, supported the position taken by the premier and the Senate gave him unanimous endorsation. The forty deputies who voted against the national claims did so on the ground that the claim to Dalmatia violated the principle of self-determination.

The closing days of April found the German delegates at Versailles with the Adriatic question still unsolved and the Italian delegates absent. But during the first week in May the allies invited Italy to return to the Peace Conference and Italy accepted and lined up with the forces of civilization in presenting the terms of peace to Germany. W. R. P.

# Germany Hears The Terms

## CHAPTER XVIII

THE LEAGUE OF NATIONS COVENANT — ENGLAND AND AMERICA STAND BEHIND THE LEAGUE — AN IDEALISTIC BASIS FOR THE NATIONS — OBJECTIONS TO THE LEAGUE—NATIONS NAMED AS MEMBERS AND INVITED TO JOIN — GERMANS HANDED THE TERMS OF PEACE AT VERSAILLES.

The first session of the Peace Conference was held on January 18, 1919. A week later the Conference adopted a historic resolution in the following terms:

> That it is essential to the maintenance of the world settlement which the Associated Nations are now met to establish, that a League of Nations be created to promote international obligations and provide safeguards against war. This League should be created as an integral part of the general treaty of peace and should be open to every civilized nation which can be relied on to promote its objects.
>
> The members of the League should periodically meet in international conference and should have a permanent organization and secretaries to carry on the business of the League in the intervals between conferences.

It might be thought that the whole world was eager for a League for the preservation of peace, and so, indeed, it was, so far as the masses were concerned, but many newspapers poked fun at the proposal, called it impossible idealism, a joke and a nightmare. In most of the allied countries a considerable section of the press magnified the possibilities of a recrudescence of German military power in order to discourage the substitution of peaceful co-operation for military rivalry between the nations. The territorial greed of sections of the public, and national prejudices were played upon with amazing vigor and daring. President Wilson, as the outstanding champion of a worldwide League, was termed a meddler and a busybody. That was the viewpoint of the European diplomat of the old type. At home, President Wilson was assailed for seeking to involve the New World in the quarrels of the Old, and he was charged with deserting the Monroe doctrine until he had that policy tacitly recognized by the constitution of the League of Nations.

Throughout the Conference, President Wilson's course indicated that he was making everything subsidiary to the success of his plan for establishing the society of nations on a nobler base. The British premier yielded to him the privilege of proposing the resolution in favor of organizing the League of Nations and in speaking, Mr. Wilson said, with great solemnity, that the United States "would feel that it could take no part in guaranteeing those European settlements unless that guarantee involved the continuous superintendence of the peace of the world by the associated nations of the world."

The president emphasized the fact that the covenants entered into at the Hague Conferences had been of little value because nobody had been authorized to enforce them. The guarantees given were individual and not collective. President Wilson's view of the League was that "the very pulse of the world beats to the fullest in this enterprise." The fortunes of mankind now were in the hands of the plain people of the world, and these had to be

satisfied. The peace delegates should see that the very foundations of the Great War were swept away. Those foundations were the aggression of great powers upon the small, the holding together of empires of unwilling subjects by the duress of arms, and the power of small bodies of men to wield their will and use mankind as pawns in a game. Nothing less than the emancipation of the world from those things would accomplish peace.

Lloyd George, in seconding the resolution, said that the people of the British empire were strongly behind the proposal. After contemplating the ruined cities of France and the acres of graveyards filled during the war, he could not help asking whether it was not time that a saner plan than organized savagery should be tried for settling international disputes. The British premier's views were endorsed by Premier Orlando of Italy, who said that no people were readier than the Italian to accept the proposal of a League of Peace. The support of France and China then was pledged. All felt that humanity would have lost the war, unless a recurrence of such a colossal disaster was prevented.

Sir R. L. Borden, speaking for Canada, very aptly said that "It would be monstrous if out of the horror and the sacrifice and sorrow inflicted by this awful struggle, such an organization, endowed with strong and vital purposes, were not evolved, for otherwise one must despair of that civilization upon which we have prided ourselves, and of the existing social order."

The adoption by the Conference of the idealistic basis for the new international society did not mean that all honest differences of opinion and conflict of interest would terminate. As we saw in the last chapter, it did not mean that every nationalistic aspiration at variance with the principle of self-determination and the sanctity of the rights of small nations, would be given up without a struggle. Nor was it easy to reconcile all parties to the idea that the undeveloped peoples of Germany's tropical colonies should become the wards of civilization and not be absorbed bodily by the states that had conquered them.

Among the earliest difficulties of the Peace Conference was that of making progress without hurting the feelings of the smaller powers and without provoking an uncontrollable outburst of dissatisfaction over the secrecy of the discussions. The Big Four, as they came to be called, Britain, France, Italy and the United States, decided that the work of the Conference would be dragged out for years unless the smaller powers were shut out from the discussion of matters of general importance. The nature of the decisions on multitudinous subjects, and the reasons therefor, were withheld with the exception of the Adriatic dispute, until the peace treaty had been drafted. Full publicity during the proceedings, it was held, would make a huge debating society out of the world and lead to interminable wrangles. It was realized that conditions would be made much easier for the various governments whose lives depended on their work at the Conference, if the verdict of the nations had to be passed upon the sum total of their work rather than upon each decision, separately. On the whole, the world submitted with remarkably good grace to this policy, which was not regarded as a glaring violation of the principle of open diplomacy.

The side-tracking of the smaller powers from the main discussions resulted in many angry utterances. The exasperated delegates from the minor states were mollified for a while by the announcement that they would be consulted whenever their particular interests were involved, but with the best of goodwill, the Big Four worked under such pressure that even this pledge was not fulfilled in every case. The vast majority of delegates at the world conference, therefore, had to sit around and twiddle their fingers while decisions in which they were interested were "railroaded" through. They had to ad-

mit, in fairness to the men dominating the Peace Conference, that the world situation was such as to make this objectionable condition necessary and inevitable, and that Wilson, Lloyd George, Clemenceau and Orlando usually were at great pains to protect the interests of the small and the big. The outstanding exception was the insistence of Italy that she should be given the Adriatic port of Fiume in addition to all the territory in Dalmatia that had been promised her by France and Britain, but here President Wilson came out into the open in determined opposition, showing a readiness to risk the success of the Conference and of the attempt to establish a League of Nations rather than to start the League off in open defiance of the very principles which brought it into existence.

Very strong objection was brought by the British overseas Dominions and Japan to the proposal that the German colonies should be administered by the League of Nations. The South African Union insisted that German Southwest Africa should come absolutely under its sway and Australia was equally insistent that the German Pacific islands she had seized should not pass out of her control. Finally it was arranged that Southwest Africa and the Pacific Islands were to be governed as integral portions of the British dominions concerned and Japan, but under a mandate from the League of Nations, in whom the nominal title would be vested, and to whom annual reports as to the condition of the natives, etc., should be made by the mandatory powers. In Central Africa the mandatory powers administering formerly German territory were to be required to guarantee freedom of trade and equal opportunity. In this limited form, the powers recognized that all the colonial territory taken from Germany during the war was to be regarded as a sacred trust of civilization.

The first draft of the Constitution of the League of Nations was assailed bitterly in the United States by Senators Lodge and Knox, both of them Republicans, but the criticism by no means was confined to the political party opposed to President Wilson. All the Hearst newspapers were hostile to the League. A new Congress had been elected and the expiring House of Representatives, by a vote of 216 to 41 went on record as hoping that the Peace Conference would favorably consider the claims of Ireland to self-determination. An attempt to debate the Constitution was headed off in the expiring Senate, but Senator Lodge boasted that 37 members of the new Senate had pledged themselves in black and white to vote against the ratification of the League's Constitution as then drafted. That number was one-third of the membership of the Senate and, therefore, enough to prevent the United States from validating either the Peace Treaty or the Constitution of the League of Nations which formed an integral part of the Treaty.

The objections voiced by Senator Knox were based on the fear that the League would provoke the creation of a counter-League, under German control, and involve the United States in another war, the greatest in history. In three ways, he argued, war might be made mandatory on the members of the League in defiance, so far as the United States was concerned, of the constitution of the republic. When the second draft of the League's Constitution was issued, it was found that changes had been made that weakened the force of most of Senator Knox's arguments. As a consequence, some of the Senators who had pledged themselves to vote against the Peace Treaty felt themselves free to give it support. President Wilson never ceased to believe that the vast majority of the people of the United States were behind his proposals. This belief was strengthened by a poll of the daily newspapers of the United States which showed that of 1,377 that voted, 718 gave an unequivocal support of the League of Nations, 478 gave conditional support and only 181 responded in opposition.

When the Constitution first was published Premier Orlando of Italy greeted it with the observation that "born out of the horrors of war, this is a document of freedom and right which represents the redemption of humanity by sacrifice." Under it, the nations entering the League bound themselves:

1.—To refrain from the making of secret treaties.
2.—To submit all disputes between one another to conciliation or arbitration.
3.—To defend against outside aggression the territorial integrity and political independence of members of the League.
4.—To establish an international court of justice that would enforce its decisions by economic or military means, if necessary.
5.—To establish an international representative Council that would develop international law, watch over the freedom of nations and the interests of uncivilized races.
6.—To establish a permanent Committee of Conciliation which would refer differences to arbitration, when necessary.
7.—To limit and supervise, to a limited degree, the armaments of the nations and the manufacture of war material.
8.—To admit all nations that declared war against or broke relations with Germany, and such other nations as might receive a favorable vote of two-thirds of the members.

The Constitution provided that any nation might withdraw from the League on giving two years' notice, provided it had kept the covenants. The League was to operate through an Assembly, a Council and a permanent Secretariat. The Assembly was to consist of not more than three members from each nation but each delegation was to have but one vote. The Council was to meet once a year at least, and to be composed of one representative of each of the five great powers and four delegates nominated by the lesser powers. In the first instance Belgium, Brazil, Greece and Spain were to represent the lesser powers on the Council. Nations directly concerned in matters before the Council were to have the right to vote as members. Both the Council and the Assembly were to have power to deal with any matter that was of international interest or that threatened the peace of the world, but their decision was to be effective only when unanimous. The first meeting of the Assembly and Council was to be summoned by the President of the United States. The seat of the League was to be Geneva, but at any time might be moved elsewhere by the Council. Women were to be on an equality with men in all positions in connection with the League.

The Council was given the duty of advising the members of the League as to the degree that armaments might be reduced, and after the governments had accepted a limitation of armaments, the limits agreed upon should not be exceeded without the consent of the Council. The members were to frankly and fully report their military and naval programs and the capacity of their war industries.

The nations in the League were to pledge themselves to help one another against outside aggression. When war threatened anywhere, the League was to take any action it deemed necessary to preserve peace. All disputes were to be submitted to arbitration, and no resort to war was to be permitted until three months after an award. In the event of a dispute not being arbitrated and not being settled by the Council, a statement of the facts, with recommendations, was to be published. The members of the League were to bind themselves not to go to war with any nation accepting the Council's award. Purely domestic matters were to be without the League's jurisdiction.

In the event of any member resorting to war in spite of its covenant, the other

nations in the League were to break off all financial, commercial, and personal intercourse, and it would become the duty of the Council to recommend what military and naval forces should be contributed to enforce the covenant.

Nothing in the covenant was to be deemed "to affect the validity of international engagements, such as treaties of arbitration or regional understandings like the Monroe doctrine for securing the maintenance of peace." The object of the League was to promote international co-operation and to achieve international peace and security. The former colonies of Germany were to be administered by various powers under a mandate from the League.

Unique features of the Constitution of the new world society were the clauses providing that the member nations were:

(a) To endeavor to secure and maintain fair and humane conditions of labor for men, women and children, both in their own countries and in all countries to which their commercial and industrial relations extend; to approve the principal of a 48-hour working week, a weekly day of rest, the abolition of child labor and workmen's right of association for all lawful purposes.

(b) To entrust the League with the general supervision over the execution of agreements with regard to the traffic in opium and other dangerous drugs.

(c) To make provision to secure and maintain freedom of communication and of transit and equitable treatment for the commerce of all members of the League.

It was agreed that the Constitution could be amended by the unanimous vote of the Council, backed up by a majority vote of the Assembly. Any member dissenting, was to be given the option of resigning from the League forthwith.

The 32 nations that were named in the Constitution as the original members of the League were:

United States of America, Belgium, Bolivia, Brazil, British Empire, Canada, Australia, South Africa, New Zealand, India, China, Cuba, Czecho-Slovakia, Ecuador, France, Greece, Guatemala, Haiti, Hedjaz, Honduras, Italy, Japan, Liberia, Nicaragua, Panama, Peru, Poland, Portugal, Rumania, Serbia, Siam, Uruguay.

The 13 nations invited by the Constitution to join the League were:

Argentine Republic, Chili, Colombia, Denmark, Netherlands, Norway, Paraguay, Persia, Salvador, Spain, Sweden, Switzerland, Venezuela.

On Monday, April 28, 1919, the plenary session of the Peace Conference adopted the revised Constitution of the League of Nations. Sir Eric Drummond, formerly the secretary of the British premier, Mr. Asquith, was made the first Secretary-General, with a salary of $25,000 a year. On April 29, the entire German peace delegation had arrived at Versailles and were shut off from the public and newspaper correspondents eager to interview them, and at 2 o'clock on Wednesday, May 7, 1919, the representatives of Germany were handed the fateful document that sealed the destinies of their country.

Premier Clemenceau told the Germans that the war had been cruelly imposed on the allied and associated powers and that "the time has come when we must settle our account." Von Brockdorff-Rantzau, in reply, admitted that Germany was not without guilt in beginning the war and in her methods of waging war; that her armies had been defeated in the field and that she was in a state of helplessness. But he bluntly charged that the allied nations, also, were to blame for the inception of the war and suggested that no German barbarity during the war compared with that of the Allies in deliberately continuing the blockade after the armistice had been signed, and

thus causing the deaths of "hundreds of thousands" of German people.

The representatives of the allied and associated powers were formed up in the shape of a horseshoe, with the Germans opposite the open end and facing Premier Clemenceau, who had President Wilson on his right and Premier Lloyd George on his left. The Peace Treaty, in the form of a book of 80,000 words, was handed to the chief German delegate by a page. The Germans were given fifteen days in which to formulate their objections to various clauses of the treaty, but they were made to understand that no spoken controversy would be permitted.

All Germany was staggered by the severity of the allied terms. The main provisions of the Treaty were as follows:

The cession by Germany of one million square miles of territory overseas, or five times the area of Germany in Europe, with a population of fifteen millions.

The cession by Germany, unconditionally, of 35,044 square miles of territory in Europe, made up as follows: To France, Alsace-Lorraine, 5,600 square miles; to Belgium, Malmedy, Morisnet and Eupen, 989 square miles; to Poland, ports of East and West Prussia, Silesia and Posen, 27,726 square miles; to the semi-independent state of Danzig, included in the Polish customs' union, 729 square miles.

The cession by Germany of an additional area of 9,310 square miles, under certain conditions, namely, northern Schleswig to Denmark, 2,787 square miles, and additional parts of East Prussia to Poland, 5,785 square miles, providing the inhabitants vote for transfer; and the Saar valley to France, 738 square miles, providing the population so decides by plebiscite, after fifteen years' administration under the supervision of the League of Nations.

The cession by Germany, as above, of a total of 44,354 square miles, out of a total area of 208,814 square miles, with the loss of 14 million people out of a total of 70 millions. This represents a loss of one-fifth of Germany's European territory and population.

The payment by Germany during the next fifty years of a sum exceeding 23 billion dollars, with liability for a much larger sum at the end of that period.

The surrender to France of the title to the Saar coal mines, which may be bought back by gold payments at the end of fifteen years.

The delivery to France annually for ten years of the amount of coal lost by the non-operation of mines destroyed by the Germans; also at low prices to Belgium during the next ten years of fifteen million tons of coal and to Italy of from four and a half million to eight and a half million tons of coal during the next five years.

Full compensation for the sinking of nine million tons of allied shipping by German submarines. All of Germany's merchant ships of more than 1,600 tons to be surrendered; also one-half of her ships of between 1,000 and 1,600 tons and one-third of her fishing boats. Germany, also, to build and turn over to the Allies without charge 200,000 tons of shipping every year for five years.

Germany not to raise her tariff and to admit other nations to equal treatment in the use of the Rhine, the Oder, the Vistula, and the Danube.

The Kiel canal to be opened to the commerce of the world and the defences razed.

The German army to be limited to 100,000 men, with no surplus war material, and no medium or heavy artillery.

The German navy to be limited to six battleships and six cruisers, and some small craft, dreadnoughts and all armored boats of more than 10,000 tons being debarred, and the personnel not to exceed 15,000.

The fortifications and the harbor of Helgoland to be destroyed.

Germany to be forbidden to build submarines, even for commercial purposes.

Germany not to use airplanes or dirigibles after October 1, 1919.

The fortifications between the new German frontier on the west and a line 30 miles east of the Rhine, to be destroyed.

The Allies to occupy the western Rhineland until the reparation bill is paid, evacuating an area every three years if payments are kept up.

The German dreadnoughts, submarines and airplanes in allied hands to be absolutely given up.

The independence of German Austria to be recognized by Germany.

The punishment of the ex-Kaiser and other German authorities and officers found guilty of crimes against humanity. The surrender of Wilhelm to be requested of Holland and his trial to be conducted by a special tribunal composed of one judge from each of the five great powers.

It cannot be too strongly emphasized that the enforcement of such terms against Germany would leave her trussed up and helpless, and dependent for all time on the grace of the nations upon whom she had warred. The loss of three-fourths of the iron ore and one-third of the coal deposits upon which her industrial greatness was based; the loss of the merchant marine which had made possible her commercial greatness; the loss of the potash deposits in Alsace which she had used to fertilize her poor soil; the loss of her vast tropical colonies and the huge sums, equal to one-half her whole pre-war revenue, which she was called upon to pay yearly for half a century to foreign countries,—these terms removed her as a military menace or a trade rival from the path of the nations that were to enter the League of Nations. Germany took up the sword knowing the stakes were World-Power or Downfall. Great was the Downfall.

W. R. P.

# American Expeditionary Forces

By

John J. Pershing.

A remarkable summary of the operations of the American Expeditionary Force in France from the date of its organization, May 26, 1917, to the signing of the armistice November 11, 1918, was cabled to the Secretary of War by General Pershing on November 20, 1918. His account of the active military operations was as follows:

COMBAT OPERATIONS

During our period of training in the trenches some of our divisions had engaged the enemy in local combats, the most important of which was Seicheprey by the 26th on April 20, 1918, in the Toul sector, but none had participated in action as a unit. The 1st Division, which had passed through the preliminary stages of training, had gone to the trenches for its first period of instruction at the end of October, and by March 21, when the German offensive in Picardy began, we had four divisions with experience in the trenches, all of which were equal to any demands of battle action. The crisis which this offensive developed was such that our occupation of an American sector must be postponed.

On March 28 I placed at the disposal of Marshal Foch, who had been agreed upon as Commander-in-Chief of the Allied Armies, all of our forces to be used as he might decide. At his request the 1st Division was transferred from the Toul sector to a position in reserve at Chaumont en Vexin. As German superiority in numbers required prompt action, an agreement was reached at the Abbeville conference of the allied premiers and commanders and myself on May 2 by which the British shipping was to transport ten American divisions to the British army area, where they were to be trained and equipped, and additional British shipping was to be provided for as many divisions as possible for use elsewhere.

On April 26 the 1st Division had gone into the line in the Montdidier salient on the Picardy battle front. Tactics had been suddenly revolutionized to those of open warfare, and our men, confident of the results of their training, were eager for the test. On the morning of May 28 this division attacked the commanding German position in its front, taking with splendid dash the town of Cantigny and all other objectives, which were organized and held steadfastly against vicious counterattacks and galling artillery fire. Although local, this brilliant action had an electrical effect, as it demonstrated our fighting qualities under extreme battle conditions, and also that the enemy's troops were not altogether invincible.

The German Aisne offensive, which began on May 27, had advanced rapidly toward the River Marne and Paris, and the Allies faced a crisis equally as grave as that of the Picardy offensive in March. Again every available man was placed at Marshal Foch's disposal, and the 3rd Division, which had just come from its preliminary training in the trenches, was hurried to the Marne. Its motorized machine-gun battalion preceded the other units and successfully held the bridgehead at the Marne, opposite Chateau-Thierry. The 2nd Division, in reserve near Montdidier, was sent by motor trucks and other available transport to check the progress of the enemy toward Paris. The division attacked and retook the town and railroad station at Bouresches and sturdily held its ground against the enemy's best guard divisions. In the battle of Belleau Wood, which followed, our men proved their superiority and gained a strong tactical position, with far greater loss to the enemy than to ourselves. On July 1, before the Second was relieved, it captured the village of Vaux with most splendid precision.

Meanwhile our 2nd Corps, under Major-General George B. Read, had been organized for the command of our divisions with the British, which were held back in training areas or assigned to second-line defenses. Five of

the ten divisions were withdrawn from the British area in June, three to relieve divisions in Lorraine and in the Vosges and two to the Paris area to join the group of American divisions which stood between the city and any further advance of the enemy in that direction.

BATTLE OF CHATEAU-THIERRY

The great June, July troop movement from the States was well under way, and, although these troops were to be given some preliminary training before being put into action, their very presence warranted the use of all the older divisions in the confidence that we did not lack reserves. Elements of the 42d Division were in the line east of Rheims against the German offensive of July 15, and held their ground unflinchingly. On the right flank of this offensive four companies of the 28th Division were in position in face of the advancing waves of the German infantry. The 3rd Division was holding the bank of the Marne from the bend east of the mouth of the Surmélin to the west of Mézy, opposite Chateau Thierry, where a large force of German infantry sought to force a passage under support of powerful artillery concentrations and under cover of smoke screens. A single regiment of the 3rd wrote one of the most brilliant pages in our military annals on this occasion. It prevented the crossing at certain points on its front while, on either flank, the Germans, who had gained a footing, pressed forward. Our men, firing in three directions, met the German attacks with counterattacks at critical points and succeeded in throwing two German divisions into complete confusion, capturing 600 prisoners.

The great force of the German Chateau-Thierry offensive established the deep Marne salient, but the enemy was taking chances, and the vulnerability of this pocket to attack might be turned to his disadvantage. Seizing this opportunity to support my conviction, every division with any sort of training was made available for use in a counteroffensive. The place of honor in the thrust toward Soissons on July 18 was given to our 1st and 2nd Divisions in company with chosen French divisions. Without the usual brief warning of a preliminary bombardment, the massed French and American artillery, firing by the map, laid down its rolling barrage at dawn while the infantry began its charge. The tactical handling of our troops under these trying conditions was excellent throughout the action. The enemy brought up large numbers of reserves and made a stubborn defense, both with machine guns and artillery, but through five days' fighting the 1st Division continued to advance until it had gained the heights above Soissons and captured the village of Berzy-le-Sec. The 2d Division took 'Beau Repaire farm and Vierzy in a very rapid advance and reached a position in front of Tigny at the end of its second day. These two divisions captured 7,000 prisoners and over 100 pieces of artillery.

The 26th Division, which, with a French division, was under command of our 1st Corps, acted as a pivot of the movement toward Soissons. On the 18th it took the village of Torcy while the 3d Division was crossing the Marne in pursuit of the retiring enemy. The 26th attacked again on the 21st, and the enemy withdrew past the Chateau-Thierry-Soissons road. The 3d Division, continuing its progress, took the heights of Mont St. Pere and the villages of Charteves and Jaulgonne in the face of both machine gun and artillery fire.

On the 24th, after the Germans had fallen back from Trugny and Epieds, our 42d Division, which had been brought over from the Champagne, relieved the 26th, and fighting its way through the Foret de Fère, overwhelmed the nest of machine guns in its path. By the 27th it had reached the Ourcq, whence the 3d and 4th Divisions were already advancing, while the French divisions with which we were co-operating were moving forward at other points.

The 3d Division had made its advance into Roncheres Wood on the 29th and was relieved for rest by a brigade of the Thirty-second. The Forty-second and Thirty-second undertook the task of conquering the heights beyond Cierges, the Forty-second capturing Sergy and the Thirty-second capturing Hill 230, both American divisions joining in the pursuit of the enemy to the Vesle, and thus the operation of reducing the salient was finished. Meanwhile the Forty-second was relieved by the Fourth at Chery-Chartreuve, and the Thirty-second by the Twenty-eighth, while the Seventy-seventh Division took up a position on the Vesle. The operations of these divisions on the Vesle were under the 3rd Corps, Major-General Robert L. Bullard commanding.

BATTLE OF ST. MIHIEL

With the reduction of the Marne salient, we could look forward to the concentration of our divisions in our own zone. In view of the forthcoming operation against the St. Mihiel salient, which had long been planned as our first offensive action on a large scale, the First Army was organized on August 10 under my personal command. While American units had held different divisional and corps sectors

along the western front, there had not been up to this time, for obvious reasons, a distinct American sector; but, in view of the important parts the American forces were now to play, it was necessary to take over a permanent portion of the line. Accordingly, on August 30, the line beginning at Port sur Seille, east of the Moselle and extending to the west through St. Mihiel, thence north to a point opposite Verdun, was placed under my command. The American sector was afterward extended across the Meuse to the western edge of the Argonne Forest, and included the 2d Colonial French, which held the point of the salient, and the 17th French Corps, which occupied the heights above Verdun.

The preparation for a complicated operation against the formidable defenses in front of us included the assembling of divisions and of corps and army artillery, transport, aircraft, tanks, ambulances, the location of hospitals, and the molding together of all of the elements of a great modern army with its own railroads, supplied directly by our own Service of Supply. The concentration for this operation, which was to be a surprise, involved the movement, mostly at night, of approximately 600,000 troops, and required for its success the most careful attention to every detail.

The French were generous in giving us assistance in corps and army artillery, with its personnel, and we were confident from the start of our superiority over the enemy in guns of all calibers. Our heavy guns were able to reach Metz and to interfere seriously with German rail movements. The French Independent Air Force was placed under my command which, together with the British bombing squadrons and our air forces, gave us the largest assembly of aviation that had ever been engaged in one operation on the western front.

From Les Eparges around the nose of the salient at St. Mihiel to the Moselle River the line was roughly forty miles long and situated on commanding ground greatly strengthened by artificial defenses. Our 1st Corps (82d, 90th, 5th and 2d Divisions), under the command of Major-General Hunter Liggett, restrung its right on Pont-a-Mousson, with its left joining our 3rd Corps (the 89th, 42nd and 1st Divisions), under Major-General Joseph T. Dickman, in line to Xivray, were to swing toward Vigneulles on the pivot of the Moselle River for the initial assault. From Xivray to Mouilly the 2d Colonial French Corps was in line in the center, and our 5th Corps, under command of Major-General George H. Cameron, with our 26th Division and a French division at the western base of the salient, were to attack three different hills—Les Eparges, Combres and Amaranthe. Our 1st Corps had in reserve the 78th Division, our 4th Corps the 3d Division, and our First Army the 35th and 91st Divisions, with the 80th and 33d available. It should be understood that our corps organizations are very elastic, and that we have at no time had permanent assignments of divisions to corps.

After four hours' artillery preparations, the seven American divisions in the front line advanced at 5 a. m. on September 12, assisted by a limited number of tanks manned partly by Americans and partly by French. These divisions, accompanied by groups of wire cutters and others armed with bangalore torpedoes, went through the successive bands of barbed wire that protected the enemy's front line and support trenches, in irresistible waves on schedule time, breaking down all defense of an enemy demoralized by the great volume of our artillery fire and our sudden approach out of the fog.

Our 1st Corps advanced to Thiaucourt, while our 4th Corps curved back to the southwest through Nonsard. The 2d Colonial French Corps made the slight advance required of it on very difficult ground, and the 5th Corps took its three ridges and repulsed a counter-attack. A rapid march brought reserve regiments of a division of the 5th Corps into Vigneules in the early morning, where it linked up with patrols of our 4th Corps, closing the salient and forming a new line west of Thiaucourt to Vigneulles and beyond Fresnes-en-Woevre. At the cost of only 7,000 casualties, mostly light, we had taken 16,000 prisoners and 443 guns, a great quantity of material, released the inhabitants of many villages from enemy domination, and established our lines in a position to threaten Metz. This signal success of the American First Army in its first offensive was of prime importance. The Allies found that they had a formidable army to aid them, and the enemy learned finally that he had one to reckon with.

MEUSE-ARGONNE OFFENSIVE, FIRST PHASE

On the day after we had taken the St. Mihiel salient, much of our corps and army artillery which had operated at St. Mihiel, and our divisions in reserve at other points, were already on the move toward the area back of the line between the Meuse River and the western edge of the forest of Argonne. With the exception of St. Mihiel, the old German front line from Switzerland to the east of Rheims was still intact. In the general attack all along the line, the operation assigned the American Army as the hinge of this allied offensive was directed toward the important railroad com-

munications of the German armies through Mezieres and Sedan. The enemy must hold fast to this part of his lines or the withdrawal of his forces with four years' accumulation of plants and material would be dangerously imperiled.

The German Army had as yet shown no demoralization, and, while the mass of its troops had suffered in morale, its first-class divisions, and notably its machine-gun defense, were exhibiting remarkable tactical efficiency as well as courage. The German General Staff was fully aware of the consequences of a success on the Meuse-Argonne line. Certain that he would do everything in his power to oppose us, the action was planned with as much secrecy as possible and was undertaken with the determination to use all our divisions in forcing decision. We expected to draw the best German divisions to our front and to consume them while the enemy was held under grave apprehension lest our attack should break his line, which it was our firm purpose to do.

Our right flank was protected by the Meuse, while our left embraced the Argonne Forest whose ravines, hills, and elaborate defense, screened by dense thickets, had been generally considered impregnable. Our order of battle from right to left was the 3d Corps from the Meuse to Malancourt, with the 33d, 80th and 4th divisions in line, and the 3d Division as corps reserve; the 5th Corps from Malancourt to Vauquois, with 79th, 87th and 91st Divisions in line, and the 32d in corps reserve, and the 1st Corps, from Vauquois to Vienne le Chateau, with 35th, 28th and 77th Divisions in line, and the 92d in corps reserve. The army reserve consisted of the 1st, 29th and 82d Divisions.

On the night of September 25 our troops quietly took the place of the French, who thinly held the line of this sector, which had long been inactive. In the attack which began on the 26th we drove through the barbed wire entanglements and the sea of shell craters across No Man's Land, mastering all the first-line defences. Continuing on the 27th and 28th, against machine guns and artillery of an increasing number of enemy reserve divisions, we penetrated to a depth of from three to seven miles and took the village of Montfaucon and its commanding hill and Exermont, Gercourt, Cuisy, Septsarges, Malan-

French and Americans Advance to Grenade Attack Land somewhere on the front in France. They are carrying in the sacks slung over their shoulders. These staunch allies are shown crossing No Man's moving cautiously, ready to use the grenades they are

court, Ivoiry, Epinonville, Charpentry, Very and other villages. East of the Meuse one of our divisions, which was with the 2d Colonial French Corps, captured Marcheville and Rieville, giving further protection to the flank of our main body. We had taken 10,000 prisoners, we had gained our point of forcing the battle into the open, and were prepared for the enemy's reaction, which was bound to come, as he had good roads and ample railroad facilities for bringing up his artillery and reserves.

In the chill rain of dark nights our engineers had to build new roads across spongy shell-torn areas, repair broken roads beyond No Man's Land, and build bridges. Our gunners, with no thought of sleep, put their shoulders to wheels and drag-ropes to bring their guns through the mire in support of the infantry, now under the increasing fire of the enemy's artillery. Our attack had taken the enemy by surprise, but quickly recovering himself, he began to fire counterattacks in strong force, supported by heavy bombardments, with large quantities of gas. From September 28 until October 4 we maintained the offensive against patches of woods defended by snipers and continuous lines of machine guns, and pushed forward our guns and transport, seizing strategical points in preparation for further attacks.

### OTHER UNITS WITH ALLIES

Other divisions attached to the allied armies were doing their part. It was the fortune of our 2d Corps, composed of the 27th and 30th Divisions, which had remained with the British, to have a place of honor in coöperation with the Australian Corps on September 29 and October 1 in the assault on the Hindenburg Line where the St. Quentin Canal passes through a tunnel under a ridge. The 30th Division speedily broke through the main line of defense for all its objectives, while the 27th pushed on impetuously through the main line until some of its elements reached Gouy. In the midst of the maze of trenches and shell craters and under crossfire from machine guns the other elements fought desperately against odds. In this and in later actions, from October 6 to October 19, our 2d Corps captured over 6,000 prisoners and advanced over thirteen miles. The spirit and aggressiveness of these divisions have been highly praised by the British Army commander under whom they served.

On October 2-9 our 2d and 36th Divisions were sent to assist the French in an important attack against the old German positions before Rheims. The 2d conquered the complicated defense works on their front against a persistent defense worthy of the grimmest period of trench warfare and attacked the strongly held wooded hill of Blanc Mont, which they captured in a second assault, sweeping over it with consummate dash and skill. This division then repulsed strong counterattacks before the village and cemetery of Ste. Etienne and took the town, forcing the Germans to fall back from before Rheims and yield positions they had held since September, 1914. On October 9 the 36th Division relieved the 2d, and in its first experience under fire withstood very severe artillery bombardment and rapidly took up the pursuit of the enemy, now retiring behind the Aisne.

### MEUSE-ARGONNE OFFENSIVE, SECOND PHASE

The allied progress elsewhere cheered the efforts of our men in this crucial contest, as the German command threw in more and more first-class troops to stop our advance. We made steady headway in the almost impenetrable and strongly held Argonne Forest, for, despite this reinforcement, it was our army that was doing the driving. Our aircraft was increasing in skill and numbers and forcing the issue, and our infantry and artillery were improving rapidly with each new experience. The replacements fresh from home were put into exhausted divisions with little time for training, but they had the advantage of serving beside men who knew their business and who had almost become veterans overnight. The enemy had taken every advantage of the terrain, which especially favored the defense by a prodigal use of machine guns manned by highly trained veterans and by using his artillery at short ranges. In the face of such strong frontal positions we should have been unable to accomplish and progress according to previously accepted standards, but I had every confidence in our aggressive tactics and the courage of our troops.

On October 4 the attack was renewed all along our front. The 3d Corps, tilting to the left, followed the Brieulles-Cunel Road; our 5th Corps took Gesnes, while the 1st Corps advanced for over two miles along the irregular valley of the Aire River and in the wooded hills of the Argonne that bordered the river, used by the enemy with all his art and weapons of defense. This sort of fighting continued against an enemy striving to hold every foot of ground and whose very strong counterattacks challenged us at every point. On the 7th the 1st Corps captured Chatel-Chéhéry and continued along the river to Cornay. On the east of the Meuse sector one of the two divisions coöperating with the

French, captured Consenvoye and the Haumont Woods. On the 9th the 5th Corps, in its progress up the Aire, took Fléville, and the 3d Corps, which had continuous fighting against odds, was working its way through Brieulles and Cunel. On the 10th we had cleared the Argonne Forest of the enemy.

It was now necessary to constitute a second army, and on October 9 the immediate command of the First Army was turned over to Lieut.-Gen. Hunter Liggett. The command of the Second Army, whose divisions occupied a sector in the Woevre, was given to Lieut.-Gen. Robert L. Bullard, who had been commander of the 1st Division and then of the 3d Corps. Major-Gen. Dickman was transferred to the command of the 1st Corps, while the 5th Corps was placed under Major-Gen. Charles P. Summerall, who had recently commanded the 1st Division. Major-Gen. John L. Hines, who had gone rapidly up from regimental to division commander, was assigned to the 3d Corps. These four officers had been in France from the early days of the expedition and had learned their lessons in the school of practical warfare.

Our constant pressure against the enemy brought day by day more prisoners, mostly survivors from machine-gun nests captured in fighting at close quarters. On October 18 there was very fierce fighting in the Caures Woods east of the Meuse and in the Ormont Woods. On the 14th the 1st Corps took St. Juvin, and the 5th Corps, in hand-to-hand encounters, entered the formidable Kriemhilde line, where the enemy had hoped to check us indefinitely. Later the 5th Corps penetrated further the Kriemhilde line, and the 1st Corps took Champignuelles and the important town of Grandpre. Our dogged offensive was wearing down the enemy, who continued desperately to throw his best troops against us, thus weakening his line in front of our Allies and making their advance less difficult.

DIVISIONS IN BELGIUM.

Meanwhile we were not only able to continue the battle, but our 37th and 91st Divisions were hastily withdrawn from our front and dispatched to help the French Army in Belgium. Detraining in the neighborhood of Ypres, these divisions advanced by rapid stages to the fighting line and were assigned to adjacent French corps. On October 31, in continuation of the Flanders offensive, they attacked and methodically broke down all enemy resistance. On Nov. 3, the 37th had completed its mission in dividing the enemy across the Escaut River and firmly established itself along the east bank included in the division zone of action. By a clever flanking movement troops of the 91st Division captured Spitaals Bosschen, a diffcult wood extending across the central part of the division sector, reached the Escaut, and penetrated into the town of Audenarde. These divisions received high commendation from their corps commanders for their dash and energy.

MEUSE-ARGONNE—LAST PHASE.

On the 23d the 3d and 5th Corps pushed northward to the level of Bantheville. While we continued to press forward and throw back the enemy's violent counterattacks with great loss of morale by the enemy game our men more der way for the final assault. Evidences of loss of morale by the enemyga ve our men more confidence in attack and more fortitude in enduring the fatigue of incessant effort and the hardships of very inclement weather.

With comparatively well-rested divisions, the final advance in the Meuse-Argonne front was begun on November 1. Our increased artillery force acquitted itself magnificently in support of the advance, and the enemy broke before the determined infantry, which, by its persistent fighting of the past weeks and the dash of this attack, had overcome his will to resist. The 3d Corps toook Ancreville, Doulcon and Andevanne, and the 5th Corps took Landres et St. Georges and passed through successive lines of resistance to Bayonville and Chennery. On the 2d the 1st Corps joined in the movement, which now became an impetuous onslaught that could not be stayed.

On the 3d advance troops surged forward in pursuit, some by motor trucks, while the artillery pressed along the country roads close behind. The 1st Corps reached Authe and Châtillon-Sur-Bar,, the 5th Corps, Fosse and Nouart, and the 3d Corps, Halles, penetrating the enemy's lines to a depth of twelve miles. Our large-caliber guns had advanced and were skilfully brought into position to fire upon the important lines at Montmedy, Longuyon and Conflans. Our 3d Corps crossed the Meuse on the 5th and the other corps, in the full confidence that the day was theirs, eagerly cleared the way of machine guns as they swept northward, maintaining complete coördination throughout. On the 6th, a division of the 1st Corps reached a point on the Meuse opposite Sedan, twenty-five miles from our line of departure. The strategical goal which was our highest hope was gained. We had cut the enemy's main line of communications, and nothing but surrender or an armistice could save his army from complete disaster.

In all forty enemy divisions had been used against us in the Meuse-Argonne battle. Be-

tween September 26 and November 6 we took 26,059 prisoners and 468 guns on this front. Our divisions engaged were the 1st, 3d, 4th, 5th, 26th, 28th, 29th, 32d, 33d, 35th, 37th, 42d, 77th, 78th, 79th, 80th, 82d, 89th, 90th and 91st. Many of our divisions remained in line for a length of time that requires nerves of steel, while others were sent in again after only a few days of rest. The 1st, 5th, 26th, 77th, 80th, 89th and 90th were in the line twice. Although some of the divisions were fighting their first battle, they soon became equal to the best.

### OPERATIONS EAST OF THE MEUSE

On the three days preceding November 10, the 3d, the 2d Colonial and the 17th French Corps fought a difficult struggle through the Meuse Hills south of Stenay and forced the enemy into the plain. Meanwhile my plans for further use of the American forces contemplated an advance between the Meuse and the Moselle in the direction of Longwy by the First Army, while, at the same time, the Second Army should assure the offensive toward the rich coal fields of Briey. The operations were to be followed by an offensive toward Château-Salins east of the Moselle, thus isolating Metz. Accordingly, attacks on the American front had been ordered, and that of the Second Army was in progress on the morning of November 11, when instructions were received that hostilities should cease at 11 o'clock a. m.

At this moment the line of the American sector, from right to left, began at Port-sur-Seille, thence across the Moselle to Vandieres and through the Woevre to Bezonvaux, in the foothills of the Meuse, thence along to the foothills and through the northern edge of the Woevre forests to the Meus at Mouzay, thence along the Meuse connecting with the French under Sedan.

### RELATIONS WITH THE ALLIES

Coöperation among the Allies has at all times been most cordial. A far greater effort has been put forth by the allied armies and staffs to assist us than could have been expected. The French Government and Army have always stood ready to furnish us with supplies, equipment and transportation and to aid us in every way. In the towns and hamlets wherever our troops have been stationed or billeted the French people have everywhere receivd them more as relatives and intimate friends than as soldiers of a foreign army. For these things words are quite inadequate to express our gratitude. There can be no doubt that the relations growing out of our associations here assure a permanent friendship between the two peoples. Although we have not been so intimately associated with the people of Great Britain, yet their troops and ours when thrown together have always warmly fraternized. The reception of those of our forces who have passed through England and of those who have been stationed there has always been enthusiastic. Altogether it has been deeply impressed upon us that the ties of language and blood bring the British and ourselves together completely and inseparably.

### STRENGTH

There are in Europe altogether, including a regiment and some sanitary units with the Italian Army and the organizations at Murmansk, also including those en route from the States, approximately 2,053,347 men, less our losses. Of this total there are in France 1,338,169 combatant troops. Forty divisions have arrived of which the infantry personnel of ten have been used as replacements, leaving thirty divisions now in France organized into three armies of three corps each.

The losses of the Americans up to November 18 are: Killed and wounded, 36,145; died of disease, 14,811; deaths unclassified, 2,204; wounded, 179,625; prisoners, 2,163; missing, 1,160. We have captured about 44,000 prisoners and 1,400 guns, howitzers and trench mortars.

[General Pershing then highly praised the work of the General Staff, the Service of Supply, Medical Corps, Quartermaster Department, Ordnance Department, Signal Corps, Engineer Corps, and continued:]

Our aviators have no equals in daring or in fighting ability, and have left a record of courageous deeds that will ever remain a brilliant page in the annals of our army. While the Tank Corps has had limited opportunities, its personnel has responded gallantly on every possible occasion, and has shown courage of the highest order.

The navy in European waters has at all times most cordially aided the army, and it is most gratifying to report that there has never before been such perfect coöperation between these two branches of the service.

Finally, I pay supreme tribute to our officers and soldiers of the line. When I think of their heroism, their patience under hardships, their unflinching spirit of offensve action, I am filled wth emotion which I am unable to express. Their deeds are immortal, and they have earned the eternal gratitude of our country.

I am, Mr. Secretary, very respectfully,

JOHN J. PERSHING,
General, Commander-in-Chief,
American Expeditionary Forces.

To the Secretary of War.

# Naval Battles of The War

By

*ADMIRAL SIMS*

Admiral Mahan's contention, based on history, that sea power rather than land power is the decisive factor in wars where both can play their part, has received striking confirmation both in the progress and the events of the world war which the German rulers began and which has ended in their country's ruin.

The British navy has naturally played the larger part in the sea struggle. When the war began it was, nearly two to one, the most powerful on the seas. And it was ready as only the German war machine was ready on land. While its work was admirably supplemented by the fleets of France and Italy, and in the last two years by that of the United States, upon it fell the whole of one of the three great sea tasks of the war, and the heavier part of the other two.

These tasks were (1) clearing the oceans of the German cruisers; (2) the blockade of Germany, including the paralysis of the German high seas fleet; (3) guarding transport of troops and supplies, including the battle with the German submarines and mines.

### HUNTING THE HUN FROM THE SEAS.

Within twenty-four hours after the declaration of war Admiral Sir John Jellicoe was at sea with the British grand fleet and the blockade lid was set upon the German outlets to the oceans. The story of that more than fifty months' ceaseless watch of the North sea must give first place, however, to the tale of the hunting of the Hun from all the outer waters of the world.

How deliberate was the German war planning is shown by the fact that several days before its declaration Admiral Spee's cruiser squadron steamed out of Kiao Chao to take up the work of commerce destroying. Detaching the Emden to raid the Indian ocean Spee sent the Leipzig and Neurenberg to join the Dresden on the South American coast, where he later met them with the Scharnhorst and Gneisenau after "shooting up" some defenseless French and British trading towns among the South Pacific islands.

On Nov. 1, 1914, Admiral Sir Charles Craddock, steaming north from Cape Horn, met the five German cruisers in a gale off Coronel on the Chilean coast with the armored cruisers Good Hope and Monmouth and the light cruiser Glasgow. The battleship Canopus, sent out to reenforce Craddock, was unable to get in sight of the action owing to slow speed. Craddock was overmatched, and the Good Hope and Monmouth went down with all hands, the battered Glasgow alone escaping south to warn the Canopus.

### THE FIGHT OFF THE FALKLANDS.

The British admiralty calculated correctly that Spee would be compelled by want of coal and food to attempt a raid on the Falkland islands, in the South Atlantic, and sent thither Admiral Sir Frederick Sturdee with the Invincible, Inflexible, Carnarvon, Kent, Cornwall, Bristol and Macedonia.

The next morning after the British squadron arrived Spee steamed into sight. The action opened just before 1 p. m. on Dec. 8, 1914. At 4:16 the Scharnhorst sank, and soon after the Gneisenau, to be joined in the depths by the Nuernberg at 7:26 and by the Leipzig at 9:15. Unlike the Huns at Coronel, the British seamen

did their best to rescue their beaten foes.

The Dresden escaped for the time and fled back into the Pacific, to be overhauled by the Kent and the Glasgow at Juan Fernandez the next March and to pull down her colors after an action of five minutes.

The Emden had met her fate a month before the fight off the Falklands, after destroying a number of merchant ships. On Nov. 10, 1914, the Australian cruiser Sydney, when about fifty miles east of the Cocos-Keeling islands in the Indian ocean, picked up a wireless message from the Cocos station: "Strange warship off entrance."

Two hours later the Emden was sighted coming out from the destruction of the wireless station. Two hours more and the Emden was a flaming wreck on the North Keeling reefs.

Within the first month of the war, on Aug. 30, 1914, the Kaiser Wilhelm der Grosse had been sunk by the Highflyer off the Cape Verde islands. Two weeks later, on Sept. 14, the Carmania, an armed merchantman, had settled the Cap Trafalgar in the South Atlantic, and the Spreewald was captured by the Berwick in the North Atlantic.

### HUN FLAG SWEPT FROM OCEANS.

The Prinz Eitel Friederich was hunted to refuge in an American port on April 8, 1915. The Geier had interned at Honolulu early in the war. The Karlsruhe simply disappeared, and its fate remains one of the mysteries of the seas. The Koenigsberg ran for shelter into an African river forest, and perished there on July 11, 1915.

Except for one or two raiders which slipped through the blockade disguised as

Remarkable Photograph of a "Flame-Throwing" or "Rain of Fire" Attack in the First Line French Trenches.

neutral merchantmen, that was the end of the German flag on the oceans.

The naval war's first and continuing problem was the German battle fleet—to beat it if it came out from its citadel down in the corner of the North sea behind Heligoland, or to keep it there impotent. That was Admiral Sir John Jellicoe's responsibility. How it has been met by the British navy under his command, and by his successor, Admiral Sir David Beatty, may be judged by the fact that only once has the German high seas fleet ventured out of harbor in force, as distinguished from light cruiser raids which achieved only baby-killing on bathing beaches.

The problem was enormous. England had fought no great naval war for a century. All the conditions had changed. The fleet actions of modern armorclads, off Santiago and in the Sea of Japan, had settled little, owing to the inferiority of the Spanish vessels and the incompetence of the Russian commanders. Much had been promised for the torpedo, but little performed. It had sunk no Russian vessel at Tsushima not already disabled by gunfire.

### THE BLOCKADE AND THE PATROL.

The first summer of the war proved that the torpedo, plus the submarine, must be more seriously reckoned with. A British cruiser squadron made a challenging reconnaisance into the Heligoland bight. Within half an hour three large though old and somewhat slow cruisers, the Aboukir, Cressy and Hogue, were sent down, the Germans claimed by a single submarine. The lesson was promptly learned that submarine infested waters must be patrolled by small and swift vessels, and that there could be no humane slowing up for rescue.

No comparable success was again achieved by the Hun U-boats against war vessels. Some claimed were more probably by drifting mines, with which Germany, in brazen disregard of her Hague pledges, sowed the seas at every opportunity. The "victories of our U-boats" which German cities celebrated, were almost wholly over defenseless merchant ships, such as the Lusitania. They were, in fact, sheer murder of noncombatants.

The blockade had not only to bar the English channel and keep safe the ferry to France, but also to cover the sub-Arctic waters north of the British islands and up to Iceland. How effective it was may be judged from the fact that after the first week of the war the only supplies that came into Germany from overseas were smuggled through Holland or Italy, Denmark or Sweden, the latter of which will quite possibly have to reckon with the allies in the final settlement for light regard of neutral duties. The German fleet could stand off the Russian in the Baltic and keep that traffic open, but that was all.

The French fleets in the Mediterranean, aided by the Italian after the first year, were equally efficient in their work. Austria had a considerable naval force of modern ships, but it never got out of the Adriatic except under the surface. Austrian and German submarines committed their share of atrocities in the Mediterranean, aided by the treachery of the Greek government until King Constantine was expelled from the throne, but the Hun battleships never but once dared a standup fight with their foes.

### THE JUTLAND BATTLE.

This one great fleet action of the war was preceded by three swift cruiser raids toward the English coast. The first, on Nov. 3, 1914, did little damage to Yarmouth. The second, on Dec. 16, 1914, killed a large number of women and children at Scarborough, Hartlepool and Whitby. The third was intercepted on Jan. 24, 1915, on the Dogger bank by Sir David Beatty's cruiser squadron. In that encounter the British cruisers Lion and Tiger sank the German battleship Bluecher and sent the Derfflinger home badly crippled.

On the morning of May 31, 1916, Sir John Jellicoe was between Scotland and Denmark with the British grand fleet. Sir David Beatty's cruiser squadron had completed its sweep to the south and was swinging northward. At 2:30 p. m. Beatty was signaled by his light cruisers that the German fleet was out in force. It had apparently steamed north along the Danish coast and, when sighted, was heading home again, with light cruisers leading.

The choice was Beatty's either to encounter and try to detain the foe or to keep on his way to join Jellicoe. He followed Nelson's rule: "Engage the enemy in sight." The ensuing battle divides itself into three stages: (a) Beatty's advance until he found he had the whole German heavy fleet before him; (b) Beatty's swing round in an effort to draw the Germans toward Jellicoe, during which Admiral Evan Thomas came up with four battleships and took the first fire of Scheer's battleships; (c) the arrival of Jellicoe with Admiral Hood's battle cruiser squadron in the van.

The concentration of the British squadrons had been effected, and Jellicoe behind Hood was bearing down on Scheer in overwhelming force. But it was then 7 p. m. and night brought the North sea haze behind which and his own smoke screens Scheer turned and escaped with most of his vessels. The British fleet remained on the scene until the afternoon of June 1, picking up survivors. Not one German ship was in sight on a sea strewn with wreckage.

### THEY NEVER CAME OUT AGAIN

The Huns being near home, while the British were 400 miles from port, got out the first story of the action, claiming "an enormous victory." Beatty lost, in fact, two battle cruisers, the Indefatigable and the Queen Mary, early in the action. Later the Invincible, Admiral Hood's flagship, went down with her commander, whose conduct was worthy of a family so renowned in naval annals. Some four or five German vessels of equal or greater value were sunk. Just how great the German losses were is yet to be ascertained.

Boche helmets—mementos of Cambrai. Steel helmets were all taken from Boche prisoners captured during the memorable advance on Cambrai.

Victories, however, are tested by their results. With all the kaiser's claims to his people, he did not claim that the British blockade was ended. It continued, and more stringent than ever. And, strange to relate, immediately after the engagement it became "inconvenient" to permit even the most patriotic Germans to gaze upon their "victorious" fleet. For months afterward no civilian was permitted in the great naval port of Wilhelmshaven. And the German high seas fleet was never again seen outside the bight of Heligoland.

The third great naval task of the war was dealing with the submarine. Its invention is contested between the Englishman Day and the American Bushnell. Day was drowned by his in 1774 and Bushnell made unsuccessful attacks with his upon British vessels during our war of independence. Holland, an American, first made it practical. To the Hun was reserved the distinction of making it the synonym for wanton murder of the innocent. For a thousand years at least the German, in every land, when he dares to boast of "civilization," must expect as a blow in the face the word "Lusitania."

### CURBING THE SUBMARINE

When the war began the submarine was unproved as a war weapon. After its first successes against the British cruisers already mentioned it had none of moment

save those which the common consent of mankind outside of "kultured" Germany has adjudged piratical. It warred with success only upon the weak and the defenseless. Its assigned role in the Hun scheme of world conquest was to starve out England. It failed and worse than failed.

For military reasons all the measures taken in dealing with the submarine have not yet been revealed. As usual, necessity quickened invention. It was discovered that airplanes flying over the sea could locate submarines under the surface. The seagull in its search for food betrayed them. They were entangled in nets swept between two vessels over their suspected lurking places. It is said that great steel nets barred against them the British channel entrance to the Atlantic and drawn across the straits of Otranto confined them in the Adriatic.

Apparently helpless freighters with concealed guns and bombs enticed them to destruction. As they could move only slowly under water, the American invention of the depth bomb aided their destruction. British ship yards built as never before to replace the losses they caused. When America entered the war she joined in the building race on a scale unknown since the world began. It was announced the other day that the ship yards of the free nations had replaced all the losses by submarines since the war began and were 500,000 tons ahead.

### THE AMERICAN NAVY IN THE WAR

Slow in arousing to the truth that the Hun must be finally smashed on land in Europe, the United States had no great army prepared when on Good Friday, 1917, its government resolved that Hun outrages and insults could no longer be endured. But its navy was ready. In size it stood only fourth or fifth, but in efficiency it was second to none. No American will soon forget the thrill of pride he felt when the word came back from England that the first destroyer fleet had arrived, and what was the answer given to the inquiry, "When can you put to sea?"

Admiral Sims' answer was "Now."

Ex-Emperor Charles of Austria-Hungry and his Ex-Empress Zita.

After threshing through 3,000 miles of sea his destroyers were ready to go out and fight. They have had little fighting to do, and the heavy ships have had none. But with the British destroyers they have guarded safely to France transports that carried more than 2,000,000 men and all their supplies, and with practically no loss by submarines on the eastward voyage. But one troopship, the Tuscania, was sunk by a submarine on the way to Europe.

Had the Hun held out longer it is possible that American battleships might have had an opportunity to prove their power against the German fleet in the North sea. But the German navy, disgraced by submarine murders of noncombatants, was destined to end in the crowning disgrace to all naval discipline, capture by mutineers from its own lawful authority. Its masters violated every law of civilized warfare, and it is not unnatural that its

men should finally be guilty of treason to their own criminal government. There is no honor among thieves when gripped by the law, and the pirate's hand turns against his fellow when Execution Dock looms in sight.

### THE OTHER ALLIED FLEETS

France and Italy have done their part on the sea, as clearly noted, but it has been a part less visible from this side the Atlantic, and of which the full story is not yet known. Only fragments of the record have reached us here. We know they have done their share in curbing the submarine in the Mediterranean and have confined the Austrian fleet to the Adriatic. We know of such daring deeds as the penetration of the very harbor of Pola and the sinking of Austrian battleships there. But for the fuller record we must wait awhile.

The Russian fleet, before Russia collapsed under Hunnish corruption and bolshevik craziness, did its part with some distinction. Never strong enough in the Baltic to contend with the Germans there, it mastered the Black sea and aided in the Russian army's advance to Trebizond.

The Japanese fleet has done all that was asked of it and done it well. It aided in the extinction of German rule on the Chinese coast, and sent a squadron of destroyers to the Mediterranean to battle the submarine. It has been a reserve force which would have come into play had any reverse at sea befallen the fleets of the European allies.

Brazil has also contributed vessels to the guarding of the Atlantic against the submarine, and Greek vessels, since Constantine was expelled, have aided in the patrol of the eastern Mediterranean.

From a purely materialistic viewpoint the Hun did not unwisely in pinning his faith to the submarine. It has taken the united sea power of the free nations to put down its menace. Where the Hun miscalculated was, first, in believing that victory could be won by land power without predominating sea power; second, in so using his sea power as to make it clear that there could be no safety for the rest of the world until the Hun was not only swept from the seas, but also ground to powder on land.

The end of the war came with startling swiftness. Almost as suddenly as it broke upon the world, it collapsed in an abject defeat, not only of the German army, but much more significant, in the defeat and eradication of the German idea.

On July 15 of last year the German armies were threatening Paris. The capital of France was under bombardment by the seventy-five-mile gun. The troops of the United States were just beginning to arrive in sufficient numbers to constitute a real force. A great German drive started on the Marne. There it stopped, and in three days it was turned back into one of the great defeats of history, and after that date the allies enjoyed an unbroken procession of victories, while the central powers have fallen apart until there is left only Germany, with its cowering war lord running to take refuge from his people with his armies.

It is a different picture the blustering beast of Potsdam now presents from the pompous general seeking to conquer the continent of Europe and extend his dominions into Asia. Hand in hand with a "made in Germany" Gott, he promised his people the countries of Europe as their reward for making war. Now he is hiding while his people, anarchy rent, marching under the red flag, have brought about his abdication and the destruction of the house of Hohenzollern.

### ELABORATE STRUCTURE IN RUINS

The elaborate structure he had built based on blood bonds and lust for power has disappeared. First it was Bulgaria, the haggling center of the Balkans, seeking its price in territory and power, which veered first to the allies and then finally fell into the German net. Bulgaria found itself beaten and rushed to cover. Then came the Turk and the great fortresses shutting off the Dardanelles and the ports

Italy, after a debacle at Caporetta, caused more by treason and German propaganda within than the strength of the Austrian army without, reorganized its shattered forces and turned upon Austria, overwhelmingly defeating Germany's chief aid and forcing upon her the most abject surrender ever recorded. Then Germany fell.

EUROPE
SCALE OF MILES
0 100 200 300 400 600
Longitude from Greenwich
West
East
ARCTIC OCEAN
ATLANTIC OCEAN
NORTH SEA
BALTIC SEA
BLACK SEA
CASPIAN SEA
MEDITERRANEAN SEA
Kara Sea
Kara Bay
NOVA ZEMLA
VAIGACH I.
ARCTIC CIRCLE
NORTH CAPE
MAGEROE
Hammerfest
Vardoe
Warranger Fiord
LOFODEN ISLANDS
Tromsoe
Vadsoe
LAPLAND
Kola Peninsula
KOLGUIEFF
Pustozerask
Cheshskaya Bay
NOVAIA ZEMLIA
GROSSLAND
Archangel
Mezen
Onega R.
Veliki Ustiug
Toboleks
Tobolsk
Ekaterinburg
Kurgan
Chelabinsk
Perm
Kungur
Ufa
Ural R.
Orenburg
Samara
Buzuluk
Uralsk
Saratoff
Nikolaievsk
Volsk
Penza
Kozlof
Morsansk
Syzran
Simbirsk
Kazan
Vladimir
Moscow
Riazan
Tula
Kaluga
Tver
Jaroslav
Vologda
Viatka
Kostroma
Nijni Novgorod
Yaransk
Viatka R.
Kama R.
Volga R.
Don R.
Dwina R.
Petchora R.
Obi R.
Irtish R.
Toholsk
Beresov
Obdorsk
Yalutorovsk
Tiumen
Ekaterinburg
Chelabinsk
Kurgan
Ishim
Omsk
Tomsk
Barnaul
Semipalatinsk
Petropavlovsk
Akmolinsk
Karaganda
Pavlodar
Ust Kamenogorsk
Semipalatinsk
Barnaul
Biisk
Tomsk
Kolyvan
Kainsk
Tara
Omsk
Ishim

*BOOK II*

# America's Great Feat of Arms

The Story of the New United States Army
at Home and Overseas

*with*

OFFICIAL REPORT OF THE CHIEF OF STAFF

and Chronology of American Operations

by

GEN. PEYTON C. MARCH, U. S. A.

Landing of United States Forces on French Shore.

# The New United States Army

## CHAPTER I

HOW WAR WAS DECLARED — FIRST PLANS FOR THE ARMY — GENERAL PERSHING IN FRANCE — MILLIONS ENROLLED FOR THE DRAFT — THE GREAT TRAINING CAMPS — NATIONAL AWAKENING TO PATRIOTIC DUTY — SPEED AND ZEAL IN PREPARATION.

The world-war proved that the United States, though slow to anger, is speedy in action and terrible in its wrath.

As a nation, we were unprepared for war, but drew the sword in full consciousness of our latent strength. Our army was inconsiderable, and a new army had to be raised. But our navy was efficient and ready, and promptly reported across the Atlantic, fit for action and eager for the fray with the piratical Hun. Entering at once upon active service in the war zone, it gained laurels akin to those won throughout the war by its big brother flying the Union Jack.

And all America rushed to arms, so that within the space of one brief year, with Time fairly galloping in its flight, two millions of soldiers were trained under the Stars and Stripes and transported overseas—itself a military feat unparalleled in the world's history for magnitude and success, and destined to become the deciding factor in the war.

After nearly three years of neutrality, preserved in spite of much provocation on the part of the rulers of Germany, the United States entered the European war on April 6, 1917. The desire of President Wilson, his advisers, and the apparent majority of the voting population, was to remain at peace with the world, but the policy and actions of Germany made this impossible.

Congress having been called in special session, President Wilson appeared on April 2 before both houses, assembled in the hall of the House of Representatives, and was the central figure of a solemn historical scene. In a memorable address he declared that the time had come to recognize Germany's ruthless and unrestricted submarine warfare as a warfare against mankind.

"It is a warfare against all nations," said the President. "American ships have been sunk, American lives taken, in ways which it has stirred us very deeply to learn of, but the ships and people of other neutral and friendly nations have been sunk and overwhelmed in the waters in the same way.

"There has been no discrimination. The challenge is to all mankind. Each nation must decide for itself how it will meet it. There is one choice we cannot make, we are incapable of making: We will not choose the path of submission and suffer the most sacred rights of our nation and our people to be ignored or violated. The wrongs against which we now array ourselves are no common wrongs. They cut to the very root of human life.

"With a profound sense of the solemn and even tragical character of the step I am taking and of the grave responsibilities which it involves, but in unhesitating obedience to what I deem my constitutional duty, I advise that the congress declare the recent course of the Imperial German government to be in fact nothing less than war against the Government and people of the United States; that it formally accept the status of belligerent which has thus been thrust upon it, and that it take immediate steps not only to put the country in a more thorough state of defense, but also to exert all its power and employ all its resources to bring the government of the German empire to terms and end the war."

"The right is more precious than peace," said President Wilson in conclusion, "and we shall fight for the things which we have always carried nearest our hearts—for democracy, for the right of those who submit to authority to have a voice in their own governments, for the rights and liberties of small nations, for a universal dominion of right by such a concert of free peoples as shall bring peace and safety to all nations and make the world itself at last free.

"To such a task we can dedicate our lives and our fortunes, everything that we are and everything that we have, with the pride of those who know that the day has come when America is privileged to spend her blood and her might for the principles that gave her birth and happiness and the peace which she has treasured. God helping her, she can do no other."

The President recommended, in the course of this historic address, the utmost practical cooperation with the Entente Allies in counsel and action; the extension of liberal financial credit to them; the mobilization of all the material resources of the United States for the purpose

of providing adequate munitions of war; the full equipment of the Navy, especially in supplying it with means for dealing effectively with submarines, and the immediate enrollment of an army of 500,000 men, preferably by a system of universal training, to be increased later by an additional army of equal size.

Mr. Wilson also took pains to assert that in taking these measures against the German government, the United States had no quarrel with the German people, who, he said, were innocent, because kept in ignorance of the lawless acts of their autocratic government, which had become a menace, not only to the peace of the world, but to the cause of fundamental human liberty. The object of the United States, said the President, was to vindicate the principles of peace and justice as against selfish and autocratic power, and to insure the future observance of these principles.

American Troops on Their Way to Join the British on the Picardy Front in August, 1918, When the Enemy Was Being Gradually Pushed Back By Field Marshal Haig and General Byng.

### HOW WE DECLARED WAR

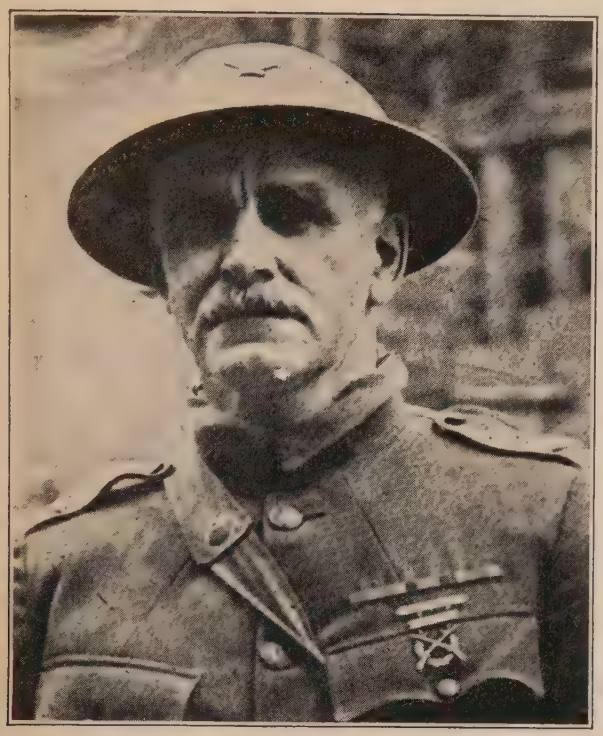
Four days after the President's address, the following joint resolution declaring war with Germany had been adopted by the Senate and House of Representatives and was signed by the President April 6:

"*Whereas,* the imperial German government has committed repeated acts of war against the Government and the people of the United States of America; therefore be it

"*Resolved,* By the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, that the state of war between the United States and the imperial German government which has thus been thrust upon the United States is hereby formally declared, and that the President be, and he is hereby authorized and directed to employ the entire naval and military forces of the United States and the resources of the Government to carry on war against the imperial German government; and to bring the conflict to a successful termination, all the resources of the country are hereby pledged by the Congress of the United States."

For the fourth time in its history our country was at war with a foreign power.

A formal proclamation of war by the President followed immediately after the action of Con-



Lieutenant-General Robert L. Bullard, U. S. A., Commanding the Second Army Corps, American Expeditionary Force in France.

gress. It contained an earnest appeal to all American citizens that they "in loyal devotion to their country, dedicated from its foundation to the principles of liberty and justice, uphold the laws of the land and give undivided and willing support to those measures which may be adopted by the constitutional authorities in prosecuting the war to a successful issue and in obtaining a secure and just peace."

All alien enemies within the United States were enjoined by the President to preserve the peace and refrain from crime against the public safety, and from giving information, aid, or comfort to the enemy. They were assured of protection so long as they conducted themselves in accordance with law and with regulations which might be promulgated from time to time for their guidance.

In spite of this warning, enemy aliens and German spies soon began to cause trouble in various parts of the country. Damage aggregating many millions of dollars was done by explosions and incendiarism at docks and in munition plants and warehouses during 1917, and numerous arrests of suspected spies were made, while a large number of aliens were interned in camps provided for that purpose, mainly in the South.

### A WAR CHEST OF TWENTY-ONE BILLIONS

Within a week after war was declared, Congress had voted a certificate and bond issue of $7,000,000,000 for war purposes, three billions of this amount to be expended in loans to the Allies.

Between April 2, the day when the extra session began, and October 6, the day it adjourned, the Sixty-fifth Congress appropriated or authorized the expenditure of $19,321,225,208. Including the amount appropriated at the second session of the Sixty-fourth Congress, the total war budget of 1917 reached the enormous sum of $21,390,730,940.

All the German merchant vessels interned in ports of the United States were seized by Federal officers immediately after the declaration of war. Their crews were sent to the internment camps. Many of the ninety-nine vessels seized had been deliberately damaged under orders from Berlin, but all were subsequently repaired and placed in service, transporting American troops, supplies and munitions to Europe. Their aggregate value was not less than $100,000,000 and their seizure was a tremendous blow to the German merchant navy. That many of them were employed in transporting American troops to turn the tide of war against the Germans, was a curious instance of the irony of fate.

On April 15th, President Wilson issued an address to the nation, calling on all citizens to enroll themselves in one vast "army of service," either military or industrial. "The hour of supreme test for the nation has come," said the President, and this fact was generally recognized throughout the country as men and women alike sought a way to make their services available toward winning the war.

Though some were slow at first to realize the seriousness of the task that confronted the nation and the necessity for individual co-operation, it was not long before the entire country was at work to win the war. Men who had never done any sort of manual labor flocked to the munition factories and the shipyards. Women replaced men in many capacities in which they had never previously served—and made good wherever they took hold of men's work. The knitting-needle and the hank of khaki-colored or gray yarn became badges of American patriotism and were seen everywhere in public, as women of all ages, and the youngest girls, busied themselves in making woolen articles for the American soldier in the training camp or overseas.

State councils of defense were organized, with local committees everywhere, to systematize the war efforts of communities, offset treason, and

prevent sedition. Acts of Congress provided penalties for all acts and speech of a treasonable or seditious nature, and placed in the hands of the President almost unlimited power to deal with enemy aliens, spies, and agents of German propaganda and frightfulness. The latter abounded throughout the year 1917, and some even continued their malevolent work into 1918. Hundreds were interned, some were arrested, convicted, and imprisoned, and a few remained untried when the armistice came and hostilities ceased. But Federal judges and juries co-operated in giving the most flagrant offenders long penitentiary sentences. Not a single spy was executed, however, richly as many of those arrested deserved a capital fate; and the United States is probably the only country in all history that has not put a spy to death within its territorial limits in the course of a great war.

### THE FIRST LIBERTY LOAN

The raising of war funds soon became a matter of absorbing interest to the public. On May 2, 1917, a few weeks after the United States entered the war, subscriptions were opened for the first block of $2,000,000,000 of the "Liberty Loan" of $7,000,000,000 authorized by the Congress in April. Great popular interest was evinced and all classes of the American people hastened to subscribe for the 3½ per cent bonds. so that when the books were closed on June 15 it was found that the loan had been oversubscribed by $1,035,226,850, and the list of subscribers contained no fewer than 4,000,000 names. Most of the amount raised was used for loans to the Allies, to be expended in the United States for war munitions and supplies.

On June 15 Congress passed an Espionage bill which, among other important provisions, gave the President power to place an embargo on all exports, thus furnishing him with a powerful weapon for use against the enemy. In July an Aviation bill appropriated the sum of $640,000,000 for the construction and maintenance of an aerial fleet for home and foreign service.

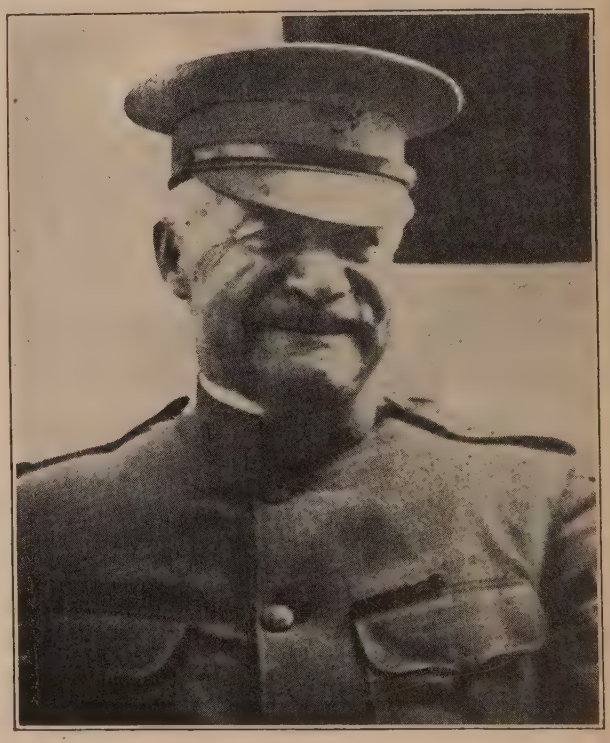
### FOOD CONTROL BILL PASSED

The question of food control in the United States became urgent as soon as war was declared. On August 10 President Wilson signed the Food Control bill adopted by Congress after prolonged debate, and at once announced the formal appointment of Mr. Herbert C. Hoover as United States food administrator. Mr. Hoover had already gained world-wide fame in the war as chief of the Belgian Food Commission. He announced the objects of the Food Administration under the bill to be threefold, as follows:

"First, to so guide the trade in the fundamental food commodities as to eliminate vicious speculation, extortion, and wasteful practices, and to stabilize prices in the essential staples. Second, to guard our exports so that against the world's shortage we retain sufficient supplies for our own people, and to co-operate with the Allies to prevent inflation of prices; and, third, that we stimulate in every manner within our power the saving of our food, in order that we may increase exports to our allies to a point which will enable them to properly provision their armies and to feed their peoples during the coming winter."

### THE NEW NATIONAL ARMY

The first great step taken by the United States in the active prosecution of the war, after providing the necessary legislation and funds, was the creation of a new national army by the selective draft system. As many volunteers as possible were secured for the national guard and other branches of the service, but it was soon seen that while enlistments were numerous, the results aimed at could not be secured without the selective draft.



Lieutenant-General Hunter Liggett, U. S. A., Commanding the First Army Corps, American Expeditionary Force in France.

In order to provide officers for the new army, which under the draft system was capable of almost indefinite expansion, training camps were established in various parts of the country. College men and others of suitable education or experience were encouraged to enter these officers' training camps for a course of three months' instruction, and as two series of camps were organized thousands of promising young officers were turned out in the summer and fall of 1917.

Major-General Omar Bundy, U. S. A., and Headquarters Staff of the Fifth Army Corps, American Expeditionary Force in France.

Under an Act of Congress of May 18, all men in the United States between the ages of 21 and 30, inclusive, were called upon to register on June 5, 1917, for the selective draft. The total number thus registered was 9,683,445. The quota of men to be furnished by each state and territory was determined according to its population. The number to be summoned on the first call was fixed at 687,000. An official drawing of numbers took place in Washington July 20, and the registered men whose allotted numbers were drawn, thus making them subject to the first call, were then summoned to appear before their respective local boards, by whom they were examined and either accepted or rejected for service.

Meanwhile, sixteen great training camps, or cantonments, had been rapidly constructed at enormous expense at convenient points in the country, and on September 5 the first contingents of the new national army were sent to them to begin training. Here they were taken in charge by the newly commissioned officers, and by numerous instructors who had gained experience in the methods of modern warfare in the trenches and on the battlefields of France and Flanders. Many British and French officers and non-coms were furnished by the Allies for this purpose.

Soon there were more than half a million men in the cantonments and rapid progress was made in training them to efficiency as soldiers. Lack of rifles, guns and other equipment caused some delay, however, and only a few companies of men having special technical qualifications were

sent overseas from the new national army in 1917.

After the national guard had been brought up to near its war strength by voluntary enlistments, its mobilization was ordered by President Wilson in a proclamation dated July 9. Mobilization camps for the guard were established in the South, and to these the state troops, with the exception of a few regiments ordered overseas with the first expeditionary force, were sent for intensive training. The guardsmen were mobilized as United States troops, and soon lost their official identity as state regiments, being renumbered and in many cases re-officered. They were usefully employed in the spring and early summer of 1917 in guarding bridges, canals, tunnels, and other points throughout the country where German plotters could work mischief. In this home service their work was excellent from the first and they were highly commended by the authorities.

The regular army mobilization camps and naval training stations were also scenes of great and continued activity, as the United States prepared to exert its military power. Voluntary enlistment continued to be the rule for the navy and marine corps, and the Middle West proved to be a fruitful field for the necessary additions to these popular branches of the service.

After December 15, 1917, the administration of the selective draft law was greatly improved by the system of classification that was employed in the selection of men. The economic needs of the Nation required that men whose removal would interfere with its civic, family, industrial, and agricultural life should be taken in the order in which they could best be spared. On December 15 all exemptions that had previously been granted were annulled, and all registrants were required to file questionnaires giving detailed information in regard to industrial status and claims for exemption. Registrants were arranged

A Group of Yanks with a Brand New German Machine Gun Captured in the St. Mihiel Salient Before the Boches Had a Chance to Fire It.

in five classes in the inverse order of their importance to the economic interests of the Nation and the support of dependents. The men thus placed in Class I were first rendered liable for military service, those in the other four so-called deferred classes being granted temporary exemption.

On May 16, 1918, according to a joint resolution of Congress, it became possible to frame new regulations whereby the quotas to be furnished by the several states were apportioned according to the number of registrants in Class I, instead ordered discontinued, and the military forces of the Nation were consolidated into the "United States Army."

About the latter part of July, 1918, it became evident that the carrying out of the military program would soon lead to the exhaustion of Class I. In order to prevent the industrial disturbance and economic hardships incidental to calls upon the deferred classes, Congress passed an amendment to the selective service law, approved August 31, 1918, which provided for the registration

King George of England Decorating American Soldiers on a Visit to the Battlefields of France in the Fall of 1918.

of according to population, as was required by the original Act of the previous year. Further registrations of men who had attained the age of 21 years since the first registration were held on June 5, 1918, and August 24, 1918, according to the provisions of Presidential proclamations, authorized in the joint resolution of Congress approved May 20, 1918.

On August 7, 1918, the distinguishing appellations, "Regular Army," "Reserve Corps," "National Guard," and "National Army" were of all male persons between the ages of 18 and 45, both inclusive, and made registrants liable to service in the Navy and Marine Corps as well as in the Army. This registration was held on September 12, 1918, but the armistice ended hostilities in Europe before the additional quotas of men thus provided for could be called into service.

The original selective service law of May 18 1917, with its subsequent amendments, thus mobilized the man power of the Nation, between

the ages of 18 and 45 inclusive. Under the original and later Acts, approximately 23,709,000 men were registered, and slightly over 2,800,000 were inducted into the military service in a manner that was fair to the individual, efficacious in providing the Army with men as quickly as they could be equipped and utilized, and provocative of a minimum of disturbance to the industrial and economic life of the Nation.

GROWTH OF THE ARMY

At the date of the signing of the armistice over 25 per cent of the entire male population of the United States between the ages of 18 and 31 were in military service. This represented a growth in the size of the army in nineteen months of nearly twenty-fold; namely, from 189,674 in March, 1917, to 3,664,000 in November, 1918. The steps in this amazing growth are shown in the following table (from Secretary of War Baker's annual report for 1918):

| 1917 | *In U. S. | †Am. Expdn. | Total |
|---|---|---|---|
| April 1 | 190,000 | ---------- | 190,000 |
| July 1 | 480,000 | 20,000 | 500,000 |
| August 1 | 516,000 | 35,000 | 551,000 |
| September 1 | 646,000 | 45,000 | 691,000 |
| October 1 | 883,000 | 65 000 | 948,000 |
| November 1 | 996,000 | 104,000 | 1,100,000 |
| December 1 | 1,060,000 | 129,000 | 1,189,000 |

| 1918 | *In U. S. | †Am. Expdn. | Total |
|---|---|---|---|
| January 1 | 1,149,000 | 176,000 | 1,325,000 |
| February 1 | 1,257,000 | 225,000 | 1,482,000 |
| March 1 | 1,386,000 | 253,000 | 1,639,000 |
| April 1 | 1,476,000 | 320,000 | 1,796,000 |
| May 1 | 1,529,000 | 424,000 | 1,953,000 |
| June 1 | 1,390,000 | 722,000 | 2,112,000 |
| July 1 | 1,384,000 | 996,000 | 2,380,000 |
| August 1 | 1,365,000 | 1,293,000 | 2,658,000 |
| September 1 | 1,425,000 | 1,576,000 | 3,001,000 |
| October 1 | 1,599,000 | 1,834,000 | 3,433,000 |
| November 1 | 1,672,000 | ‡1,993,000 | 3,665,000 |

*In United States and foreign possessions.

†American Expeditionary Force in France and England.

‡On November 20, 1918, General Pershing reported that there were in Europe altogether "approximately 2,053,347 men, less our losses." Of this total there were in France 1,338,169 combatant troops.

"The growth shown by these figures is remarkable," said the Secretary of War, "not simply because of the physical and administrative difficulties involved, but especially because the traditions of the country have all been opposed to large armaments. The principle of the draft had for years been opposed by considerable numbers of the population. Yet in a brief nineteen months more than three and a half million men were mobilized, housed, fully equipped with munitions and supplies, and the major part of them given a military training that enabled them to oppose successfully the soldiers of the most warlike of the European nations. This achievement is a tribute to the ability of Army leaders, trained in dealing with small forces, to adapt themselves, with wonderful effectiveness, to the new and tremendous task. It is a tribute to the hearty cooperation of every Government Department. It is a tribute, above all else, to the ability and enthusiastic patriotism of the American people.

"In nineteen months after the United States entered the war we were represented overseas by an army of two million men. And considering the difficulties of overseas shipment, of establishing thousands of miles of lines of communication, of mobilizing and suppying such an enormous army operating on foreign soil, the building up of the American Expeditionary Force must rank as one of the great military achievements of all time.

"The rapidity of expansion of the Expeditionary Force, moreover, did not represent an exhaustion of the national resources in one sudden effort. Trained men and munitions and supplies were available at the same rate for months to come had there been need. The knowledge that America's plans were laid on this large scale was probably no small factor in the early termination of the war."

# Early Operations in France

## CHAPTER II

AMERICAN TROOPS WELCOMED BY THE FRENCH — PIONEER WORK OF FORESTERS AND ENGINEERS — BUILDING DOCKS, WAREHOUSES AND RAILWAYS — INTENSIVE TRAINING IN FRENCH CAMPS — AN AMERICAN HOSPITAL BOMBED—THE FIRST AMERICANS KILLED IN ACTION—THEIR BURIAL AND MONUMENT — TRENCH WARFARE, PATROL FIGHTS, AND RAIDS — THE ARMY CROSSING THE SEAS — LIFE ON THE FIGHTING FRONT.

In order to cement America's association with the nations which had become her allies, numerous exchanges of missions, composed of representative and distinguished men, were arranged in the spring and summer of 1917. France, Great Britain, Italy, Belgium, Russian, Japan, and other Entente belligerents sent important delegations to the United States as a step toward unification of effort, military, financial, and otherwise; while the United States sent missions to Russia and other countries.

As one result of these interchanges, France and Great Britain joined in a request for the despatch of an American expeditionary force to France at the earliest possible moment. The United States Government, thereupon, on May 18, ordered 25,000 troops to France, under the command of Major-General John J. Pershing, an officer of ability and experience who had already led an American expeditionary force into Mexico. A large force of United States Marines was subsequently ordered to France, bringing the strength of the expedition up to approximately 40,000 men. General Pershing and his staff preceded the troops to Europe, reaching London on June 8, 1917, and Paris June 13, and being enthusiastically welcomed in both these Allied capitals.

Convoyed by American warships, the first and second contingents of American troops crossed the Atlantic in safety, despite two German submarine attacks on the transports, in which it was reported that at least one U-boat was sunk. Without the loss of a single man, the troops were landed in France on June 26 and 27, 1917, two weeks after the arrival of General Pershing and his staff. They were under the immediate command of General William L. Sibert, and were received with outbursts of joy by the French populace, who saw in their coming the assurance of final delivery from the German invaders. Training camps awaited their coming, and there, behind the French lines, they spent the months of July and August in active preparation for service under the Stars and Stripes against the German enemy on the Western front.

Information as to the composition of the American Expeditionary Force, as it was called officially, was withheld at the time, except that a regiment of United States Engineers was known to be with the first contingent of infantry, and that two regiments of Foresters arrived later. In the fall it became known that several units of the National Guard were also in the training area in France.

The Foresters and Engineers soon accomplished a vast amount of pioneer and preparatory work, building miles of docks and warehouses and laying hundreds of miles of railway track on the French seaboard and inland, for the convenient handling of the oncoming hosts of the new American Army, its munitions and supplies.

A remarkable demonstration occurred in Paris on the American Independence Day, July 4, 1917, when a vast crowd enthusiastically greeted the parade of a battalion of the expeditionary force, about to leave for training near the battle front. A dramatic scene was enacted in the chapel of the Invalides, where General Pershing received historic American flags and banners from the hands of President Poincaré. At the tomb of General Lafayette the American general and his staff deposited a wreath, while General Pershing saluted, with the remark, "Lafayette, we are here!"

The troops of the expeditionary force were given many weeks of intensive training in France before the first of them were assigned to fighting sectors on the Western front. They were taught all the arts of modern warfare, from the method of protecting themselves against gas attacks to the latest developments of bayonet practice and the use of French artillery. They had the benefit of instruction by some of the best troops of the French army and many experienced British officers and non-coms.

On Tuesday and Wednesday nights, September 4 and 5, 1917, German aviators appeared over an American hospital base in France and dropped bombs which killed an officer and three men, and wounded ten persons, including three first lieuten-

ants, six privates, and a nurse. The dead and wounded belonged to the Harvard and St. Louis hospital units. The raids were deliberately planned and carried out, as the hospital camp was plainly marked and had been seen by German airmen in the daytime. Small German coins were dropped on the camp by the men guilty of the dastardly act, as souvenirs of their visit.

Major-General Pershing was promoted to the full rank of General in the United States Army on October 6, 1917, when the Senate confirmed his nomination by President Wilson.

At the end of October certain detachments of infantry and artillery were sent forward to occupy some elements of the front-line trenches with French troops. Here the Americans had their first practical experience of European warfare, coming under fire at once.

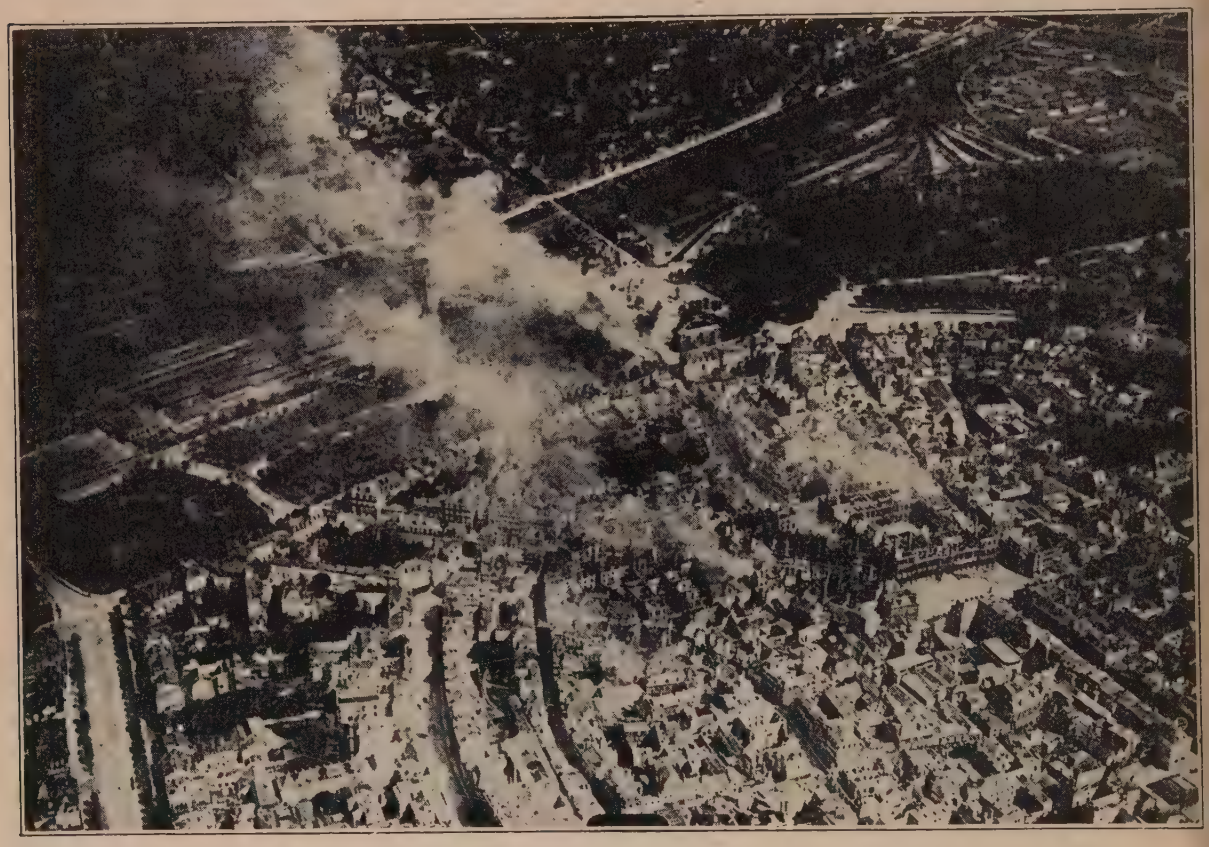
The first gun fired by an American soldier against the Germans in France was a French 75-millimeter field gun (approximately 3-inch caliber), and the man who fired it was an artilleryman from South Bend, Indiana.

A number of Americans were wounded by shell fragments in the days immediately following the first shot at the enemy, but the first serious affair for the men from overseas, though comparatively trivial as an incident of the war, occurred on the night of November 3, 1917, when a German patrol raided a part of the trenches occupied by Americans, killed three, wounded five, and captured eleven.

On November 3, 1910, an artistic monument at Bathelemont, France, was dedicated by the citizens of Nancy to commemorate the death of the first three Americans who fell there in action just one year before, while fighting under the American flag. These three men were Corporal James B. Gresham, of Evansville, Ind.; Thomas F. Enright, of Pittsburgh, Pa., and Merle D. Hay, of Glidden, Iowa.

Notwithstanding the fact that Bathelemont was still under enemy fire on the morning of the dedication, there were some beautiful wreaths sent to the place and laid at the base of the monument.

The memorial was the gift of the people of the



Remarkable Photograph Made from an Aeroplane, Showing the City of Rheims Ablaze from Incendiary German Shells. Before the War the Population of the City Was Over 115,000; the War Reduced It to Something Like 8,400.

department of Meurthe-et-Moselle. In a large salon of the city hall at Nancy a meeting was held, at which a number of speeches were made praising the bravery of the Americans and the services they had rendered to France. One of the ministers of the government presided. Among the speakers were the mayor of Nancy, the prefect and one of the senators from the department.

United States Marines—Soldiers of Land or Sea—in the Belleau Wood Sector, June, 1918, Constructing a Dugout to Serve as Headquarters for Their Commanding Officer.

U. S. WARSHIPS OVERSEAS

The destroyer flotilla of the United States Navy arrived in British waters in May, 1917, and immediately co-operated with the British fleet in the patrol of the war zone and the hunt for German submarines. The naval forces were commanded by Vice-Admiral William S. Sims, and did effective work from the start. Reports from the Admiral in August detailed the work of the ships and men under his command, and presented a thrilling story of accomplishment. They told of many encounters with U-boats and also of the rescue of numerous crews of ships that had been destroyed by enemy submarines off the coasts of Great Britain and Ireland.

Soon after war was declared by the United States, American warships took over from British and French vessels the patrol of American coasts, while Brazil added her navy to that of the United States for the protection of South American waters against the common enemy.

While the force in France and in immediate prospect in the fall of 1917 numbered but few thousands, essential preparations were made for handling an army mounting into the millions. The engineers and work battalions built docks, laid railways, constructed machine shops and storage depots, and laid out the training areas. Until this groundwork was well under way, large shipments of troops could not be handled, but before the end of the year five divisions had reached France—the First and Second Divisions of Regulars, the Twenty-sixth division from New England, and the Forty-second and Forty-first, known as the Rainbow and Sunset Divisions. By the end of October American units had entered the line in quiet sectors in the Vosges, and in November engineers from the Twenty-sixth Division took part in the British engagement at Cambrai, where they rendered valuable and unexpected service.

During the fall and winter the American troops

received the intensive training in modern warfare which enabled them to lead later at Chateau Thierry, St. Mihiel, and the Meuse.

When the storm of the German offensive of 1918 broke, on March 21, the forces under General Pershing numbered about 343,000 men of all ranks. American troops were on trial in the eyes of Europe. A huge army, hastily gathered, consisting largely of inexperienced troops, they upheld the finest traditions of the American

American Artillerymen in France, Pulling a Light Field Gun into Position, Under a Protecting Screen of Camouflage Stretched Across Poles.

service. To a large extent at first they relieved French and British divisions in quiet sectors, making these experienced divisions available for service at crucial points. Then as the American troops showed their fighting qualities and the emergency became more acute, they were thrown into the hottest of the battle. The impetuous charges of the regulars and marines in the Belleau Wood was a brilliant demonstration of the quality of our troops, and among the weary French and British soldiers in the trenches the word flew from mouth to mouth that the Americans were first-class fighting men.

### RECORD OF THE "RAINBOWS"

The achievements of the American soldier in France are typified in the proud record of the Forty-second ("Rainbow") Division, which participated in as many, if not more, battles than any other division in the American army. This record was summarized in a memorandum issued on November 11, the day the armistice ended hostilities, by the retiring commander of the division, Major-General Charles T. Menoher. This memorandum read as follows:

"Headquarters Forty-second Division, American Expeditionary Forces. France, Nov. 11, 1918.

"To the Officers and Men of the Forty-second division: On the 13th of August I addressed to you a letter summarizing the record of your achievements in Lorraine, before Chalons, and on the Ourcq. On the occasion of my leaving the division I wish to recall to you your services since that time and to express to you my appreciation of the unfailing spirit of courage and cheerfulness with which you have met and overcome the difficult tasks which have confronted you.

"After leaving the region of Chateau Thierry you had scarcely been assembled in your new area when you were ordered to advance by hard night marches to participate in the attack of the St. Mihiel salient.

"In the battle that followed you took every objective in accordance with the plan of the army commander. You advanced fourteen kilometers in twenty-eight hours. You pushed forward advanced elements five kilometers farther, or nineteen kilometers beyond your original starting point. You took more than 1,000 prisoners from nine enemy divisions; you captured seven villages and forty-two square kilometers of territory.

"Worn though you were by ceaseless campaigning since February, you then moved to the Verdun region to participate in the great blow which your country's armies have struck west of the Meuse. You took Hill 288, La Tuilerie farm, and the Cote de Chatillon and broke squarely across the powerful Kriemhilde Stellung, clearing the way for the advance beyond St. Georges and Landres et St. Georges.

"Marching and fighting day and night, you thrust through the advancing lines of the forward troops of the First army. You drove the enemy across the Meuse. You captured the heights dominating the river before Sedan and reached in the enemy lines the farthest point attained by any American troops.

"Whatever may come in the future, the men of this division will have the proud consciousness that they have thus far fought wherever the American flag has flown most gloriously in this war. In the determining battle before Chalons, in the bloody drive from Chateau Thierry to the Vesle, in the blotting out of the St. Mihiel

Bombproof Cement Headquarters in the Argonne Forest of Prince Max, the German Commander, Who Learned Right Here that Bombproofs Could Not Withstand American Valor.

salient, and in the advance to Sedan you have played a splendid and a leading part.

"I know that you will give the same unfailing support to whomever may succeed me as your commander and that you will continue to bear forward without faltering the colors of the Rainbow division. I leave you with deep and affectionate regret, and I thank you again for your loyalty to me and your services to your country. You have struck a vital blow in the greatest war in history. You have proved to the world in no mean measure that your country can defend its own.

"CHARLES T. MENOHER,
"Major General, U. S. A."

ON THE FIGHTING FRONT

What life on the Western front was really like was graphically described by Horace Bottomley, a writer of international fame, who after a visit to the front, "Somewhere in Hell," voiced the impressions of the soldiers accurately, as follows:

"I know it is customary, when writing from the western front, to address one's articles from 'Somewhere in France.' But, after what I have seen during the week I spent there, I decline to be a party to such a libel on the fair name of our ally. Let me tell you some of the things I have seen and you shall judge the choice of my title—'Somewhere in Hell.' I have seen hell! Yes, I have looked through its gates and have seen the hosts of God fighting the imps of the devil. And—forgive the apparent blasphemy of the words—God is winning all along the line.

"I have seen 50,000 men in hospital—many of them writhing in all the agonies of hell—and not one complaining.

"I have seen the roads of France a mass of shell-holes—roads which were once the wonder of the world.

"I have seen bridges and viaducts blown out of existence—except for, here and there, a few solitary piers.

"I have seen thousands of German prisoners for once earning an honest living by the sweat of their brow, and, afterward, being kept out of mischief in cage compounds.

"I have seen African and Indian laborers—and Chinese, too—helping to repair the ravages of the Hun.

"I have seen Naga tribes from Northern India chanting their weird songs, and even doing their wild war dances, in their rest hours on the battlefields where they were employed on salvage work.

"I have seen a thousand silent graves—on hill and mound—on roadside and in valley—where, not long ago, they who now rest there fought like mighty heroes for the right.

"I have seen the lads in the trenches.

"I have seen the places where towns and villages once stood—now no more than masses of brick and mortar and human remains.

"I have seen our guns playing upon the enemy lines.

"I have seen gallant airmen hurtling to destruction from the blue, and—heaven be praised!—I have seen the grinning and exultant Hun, as he came out of his trenches to gloat over their fate, mown down by our machine guns.

"I have seen the desolated towns and villages of France—every woman in black and not a man of military age anywhere.

"I have seen the German lines.

"I have seen and talked with German prisoners and German wounded.

"I have seen our wireless stations intercepting the messages of the enemy.

"I have seen wonderful women—many of them risking their lives—in every department of the war work.

"I have seen lords and laborers, peers and peasants, fighting and falling, and resting in silent graves, side by side.

"I have been in the first line trenches—within 200 yards of the enemy.

"I have been in the reserve lines—which is much more dangerous than the first.

"Would that each of you could see as I have seen—could hear as I have heard. One incident puts it in a nutshell. I was talking with a young university graduate. He had left his college because his country called him. 'Shall you go back after the war?' I asked. He smiled, and pointing to the scene around us—we were in the trenches—said, 'Go back? Isn't this a sufficient education for any man? I knew nothing before the war.'

"There you have it. Neither did I. But in one week I have had my education. I know all I want to know—of life and of death; and those two words embrace all knowledge—and only knowledge is education."

# From Cantigny to Sedan

## CHAPTER III

THE ALLIES UNDER UNIFIED COMMAND — AMERICAN FORCES TENDERED TO MARSHAL FOCH — THE ATTACK ON CANTIGNY — AMERICANS DEMONSTRATE THEIR FIGHTING QUALITIES — GOING OVER THE TOP — CHATEAU THIERRY, BELLEAU WOOD, THE ARGONNE, ST. MIHIEL, AND THE MEUSE—CUTTING THE GERMAN SUPPLY LINE AT SEDAN.

When Marshal Foch had been agreed upon as generalissimo of the Allied armies, and all the forces fighting Germany and Austria on the Western front were thus brought under unified command, General Pershing formally placed at his disposal all of the American combatant troops in France, to be used as Marshal Foch might decide. This occurred on March 28, 1918, when the First Division of the American forces was holding the Toul sector. At the request of the Marshal this division was transferred to a position in reserve at Chaumont-en-Vexin.

An agreement was made at Abbeville on May 2, at a conference of the Allied premiers and commanders, including General Pershing, by which ten American divisions were to be transported by British shipping to the British army area, where they were to be trained and equipped, and additional British shipping was to be provided for as many divisions as possible for use elsewhere. This insured a constant stream of American troops into France during the summer months, and removed the last chance the Germans had of maintaining their numerical superiority on the Western front.

The First Division was moved from reserve into the line on April 26, taking its place in the Montdidier salient on the Picardy battle front. By this time the tactics of the war had undergone a sudden change, from the long-continued trench fighting to the methods of open warfare. This suited the American troops and their commanders, who were eager to come to close grips with the enemy and felt unbounded confidence in the results of their training.

The long-awaited opportunity arrived at length on the morning of May 28, when the First Division attacked the strong German position in its front and with a dash that was irresistible captured the important town of Cantigny and all other objectives aimed at. The advanced positions taken were promptly organized for defense and were securely held in spite of vicious German counter-attacks and severe bombardment by the enemy artillery.

The attack on Cantigny was a brilliant success, and while its effect was mainly local it had an important result all along the front, by demonstrating the stability of the American troops and their fighting qualities under extreme battle conditions. It proved that they were able to defeat the best troops that the enemy could bring against them, and sent an electric thrill of encouragement and stimulation through all the sturdy, battle-worn forces of the Allies, who realized at last that the Americans had come, not merely in numbers that would count, but as fighting men of the first quality, full of the fire of youth, trained to the minute, confident in their cause, and destined to become a terror to the Hun.

The town of Cantigny occupied a commanding position, and from it the Germans had long looked down scornfully upon the Allied trenches. Unlike most French towns, it sat on a hill. The day before the attack the Germans had started their third offensive of 1918, on the line from north of Soissons to west of Reims, and were making steady gains. There were several raids on the American lines just before the attack on May 28, but the First Division was wide awake.

After artillery preparation early in the morning the men of the 28th Regiment, who had been ordered to make the attack, went over the top, supported by the 18th Regiment. Each man carried 220 rounds of rifle ammunition, two hand grenades and one rifle grenade, two canteens filled with water, one-half shelter tent, four sand bags, one flare and one shovel or one pick, and they wore their blouses and left their blankets behind. It was necessary to carry food and water enough to remain for two days in the newly-won positions—for there was no idea that they would not gain their objectives.

"At 6:45 in the early dawn the line of figures started up from the earth and began their advance," said Major Frederic Palmer in describing the attack. "The formations were the same as those of the practice maneuvers, and the movement was equally precise as it kept to the time-table of the barrage. Each unit was doing its part, the tanks as they nosed their way forward doing theirs. Our shelling of the lower part of the town suddenly ceased; and then our men were seen entering the town exactly on time. Headquarters waited on reports, and they came —of prisoners taken, of the further progress of

units—all according to the plans. We had passed through the town; we were mopping it up; and we had reached our objective in front of the town. Our losses to that point were less than a hundred men, and we had taken three hundred and fifty prisoners. It was a small offensive, as offensives go, but it was our own, and our first.

"The fact that our practice exercises had been so systematically applied accounted for our success at Cantigny. There was a glad, proud light in the eyes of our wounded. They had been hit in what they called a 'real party.' Nobody could deny that they were graduate soldiers now. But there was to be the reaction which always comes with limited objectives when you do not advance far enough to draw the enemy's fangs—his guns. Upon the roads along which men must pass to bring up supplies, upon every point where men must work or men or wagons pass, upon the command posts, he turns the wrath of his resentment over the loss of men and ground, and in his rage concentrates most wickedly, most persistently and powerfully upon the infantry which is trying to organize the new frontal positions.

"The German artillery would show this upstart American division its mistake in thinking that it could hold what it had gained. Eight-inch shells were the favorites in the bombardment of our men, who now had Cantigny at their backs as they dug in, while showers of shrapnel and gas added to the variety of that merciless pounding that kept up for three days. We suffered serious casualties now; but we did not go back, and we took revenge for our casualties in grim use of rifle and machine gun, which with the aid of prompt barrages repulsed all counter-attacks, until the Germans were convinced of the futility of further efforts."

The Beginning of the Attack on Cantigny, Showing American Troops Advancing, Supported by Tanks, and Giving a Vivid Idea of the Actual Conditions in Action.

### HOW CHATEAU THIERRY WAS HELD

The Aisne offensive of the Germans, which began on May 27, carried them rapidly toward the River Marne and Paris and a grave crisis soon confronted the Allies. Every available American was placed at the disposal of Marshal Foch and the Third Division, fresh from its intensive training in the trenches, was hurried to the Marne. Ahead of all the other units went the motorized machine-gun battalion, and it was this force of the Third Division which gained undying fame for itself by successfully holding the bridgehead at the Marne, opposite Chateau Thierry.

The Second Division, which had been in reserve near Montdidier, was sent forward to check the enemy's advance toward Paris. In motor trucks and every other means of transport available, it was rushed to the front, going into the line on the Marne June 2. There it promptly attacked and recaptured the town and railroad station of Bouresches. Counter-attacks by the enemy's best guard division failed to budge the Americans, who held their ground most sturdily.

Then followed, on June 15, the battle of Belleau Wood, in which the American troops overcame all enemy opposition and obtained a decided tactical advantage, by clearing the wood with far greater loss to the enemy than to themselves. Before it was relieved by other troops, the Second Division, on July 1, captured the village of Vaux, "with most splendid precision."

The attack on Paris had been definitely stayed by the fine strategy and desperate resistance of the French and American troops. But on July 15 the enemy resumed the attack from Chateau Thierry eastward to the Argonne. Six American divisions were thrown into the line at Chateau Thierry, with several more in reserve. Three days later the drive had been stopped and Marshal Foch launched his great offensive.

From that time the campaign on the Western front was one of Allied attack and German retreat. In blow after blow which the Commander-in-chief of the Allied armies struck at the German line, American troops took a conspicuous part. On September 12, the First American Army, under the personal direction of General Pershing, launched an attack on St. Mihiel and within twenty-four hours had "pinched off" that heavily-fortified salient, which had withstood attack through four years of war. The elimination of this salient, which had menaced eastern France, relieved the pressure on Verdun and made possible further advances north of that city.

Meanwhile the Twenty-seventh New York Division and the Thirtieth National Guard Division, with troops from South Carolina, North Carolina, and Tennessee, were operating with the

A Battery of American Field Artillery Firing a Salvo at the Retreating German Columns in the Argonne Region. The Photograph Was Taken from the Ruins of the Town of Varennes, After Its Capture by the Yanks.

British. The Three Hundred and Thirty-second Regiment of Infantry, together with aviation and ambulance units operating on the Italian front, had a share in the great Italian victory. Small expeditionary forces of American troops were also established at Archangel and Vladivostok.

THE BATTLE OF THE MEUSE

From the point of view of military strategy, America's greatest contribution to the successful outcome of the war was the hotly contested battle of the Meuse, which resulted in cutting the main artery of the German supply system. Up through the middle of September the Germans were able to operate unmolested the Sedan-Mezieres railway, running parallel to the front and furnishing a base of supply for the whole line from Valenciennes to Metz. To cut this supply line at both ends and force withdrawal or capture on this entire front, the British attacked in the north, and on September 26 General Pershing drove in west of the Meuse with the First American Army. The first few days of fighting yielded considerable gains. Fully conscious of the gravity of the situation, the enemy threw in division after division of fresh troops; and during the ensuing weeks occurred the bitterest fighting in which American troops took part.

The second week of October practically all available units—about 28 American divisions—were in the line. Progress could be made only a few yards at a time, but the continued hammering finally wore out the resistance of the enemy forces, and on November 1 the American troops broke through. Day after day steady gains were made up the west bank of the Meuse, until on November 7 the United States forces entered the outskirts of Sedan and definitely cut the German supply line. A day later the French forces came up on the left bank.

In St. Mihiel Salient—A Remarkable Photograph of American Soldiers Pursuing the Enemy and Pressing Towards Mont Sec, Which Is Seen in the Background.

The meeting of French and American troops on this historic spot signalized the defeat of the German arms—a defeat as decisive and humiliating as that forced upon France 47 years before at the same spot. If there had been any question before as to the acceptance of the armistice terms, the Allied advance culminating in this meeting at Sedan left the enemy no choice in the matter.

In the final campaign of the war American troops thus played a part in a triumph which was beyond all praise, and which made them worthy comrades in arms with French and British veterans.

# Chateau Thierry and Belleau Wood

## CHAPTER IV

THE GERMAN ADVANCE THREATENS PARIS—ONCE MORE STOPPED AT THE MARNE — ENEMY ADVANCE HALTED BY THE AMERICAN THIRD DIVISION — MACHINE-GUN BATTALION GAINS RENOWN —THE MARINES AT BELLEAU WOOD — THEIR GALLANT ATTACK — RUSHING THE ENEMY GUN-NESTS — THE CAPTURE OF BOURESCHES — REPEATED ATTACKS IN THE WOOD — THE FINAL VICTORY—CAPTURE OF VAUX.

The American success at Cantigny came at a critical time, when the German tactics on the Picardy front were carrying the enemy farther and farther into France. Full of confidence in their swift progress, the German armies crossed the River Vesle; they took Fere-en-Tardenois; they approached the Marne and Chateau Thierry; they occupied Soissons and were pressing forward on the plateau beyond Soissons toward Paris. Then, one fine day, the history of 1914 repeated itself and again the German advance was stopped at the Marne—this time by the new American army.

As the German reserves drove steadily along the road to Paris, and approached the Marne, there were no American troops between Cantigny and the Toul sector. But the Americans were "the real strategic reserve of the Allied cause," and they were called on by the Commander-in-chief. The Third Division, comprising the 4th, 7th, 30th and 38th Regiments, and commanded by Major-General Joseph Dickman, was well advanced in its training and about to go into a quiet sector supported by French artillery when suddenly, on May 29, a change of orders came and the division was ordered to the Marne. The infantry troops promptly entrained for the front, but the motorized machine-gun battalion needed no trains and started on ahead, envied of all. The machine gunners, at least, were certain to see action.

Seventy miles south of the Marne, French refugees were met in masses, pouring back from their ruined villages, but pathetically confident in their belief, "We'll stop them on the Marne." At Conde-en-Brie General Dickman and his staff established the new headquarters of the Third Division, in an immense empty chateau, without food or baggage, but the motor machine-gun battalion had gone on to Chateau Thierry. As fast as detachments of the Third arrived at Conde they were placed at the disposition of the French.

Now the Germans were just across the Marne, though in no great force, and on the morning of May 31 the trench-tried troops of the Second Division, with its own artillery, started from its reserve billets under orders for Meaux. From Meaux the division proceeded by a forced march to Montreuil and at daybreak of June 1 all the available American infantry regiments of the Second were either in a support line on either side of the Paris road near Montreuil or in immediate reserve.

By this time the Germans had taken Chateau Thierry and the crest over which the Paris road runs, the village of Vaux beyond it, and a commanding portion of Hill 204 on the north bank. This hill overlooks the town and both banks of the river on either side of the town; also the main road from Montmirail, which sweeps down from the southern wall of the Marne valley to the suburb of Chateau Thierry on the southern side of the river. This gave the enemy a strong grip on the northern bank and also observation of the southern bank for artillery purposes.

The 7th Machine-gun Battalion of the Third Division literally rode into the battle at Chateau Thierry, mounted on the motors which were their modern battle-chargers. Their fondest hopes of a "big party" were realized and theirs was the first blood shed in this second battle of the Marne. To their comrades of the Third Division in the rear, it hardly seemed that they had time to reach Chateau Thierry from Montmirail before their wounded were coming back. But they did not play a lone hand at Chateau Thierry, and would be the last to claim that they did. They fought with the French and under French direction. Using their machine-guns coolly and steadfastly, as they had learned to do in training, they covered the retreat of the French across the Chateau Thierry bridge, before it was blown up, and afterward prevented the Germans from attempting a crossing, keeping them on the north side of the river. And they held their position for days, with their guns well placed on the southern bank of the Marne, facing German machine guns on the other side.

This gallant service of the machine gunners convinced the French that the new American Third Division, of which they formed part, was a fighting organization of the first class. And the enemy was held at Chateau Thierry.

THE MARINES AT BELLEAU WOOD

Meanwhile the Second Division, under Major-General Omar Bundy, lay in reserve awaiting its artillery. Bulletins from the front indicated that the enemy was pressing in the region of Torcy and farther north, in order to broaden the salient of his Marne offensive. On the night of June 1 the Division was established in positions on a twelve-mile front. It included the 3rd Brigade under Brigadier-General Lewis and the 4th or Marine Corps Brigade, under Brigadier-General Harbord; also the 5th Machine-gun Battalion, unmounted. At midnight a call came from the French for American troops to fill a gap in the lines at Colombs. The 23rd Infantry, under Colonel Malone, was sent to fill the gap and with it went a weary battalion of Marines and the travel-stained 5th Machine-gun Battalion. During the day there had been fierce fighting around Reims and in the neighborhood of Villers-Cobberet and the region on the left flank of the Second Division. The Germans were across the Marne at Dormans, but had made no further effort to extend their position on the south bank.

In the early morning of June 4 the Second Division took over from the French a twelve-mile front, with the 3rd Brigade holding the line from Bonneil across the Paris road and the 4th from its left to the west of Belleau Wood. The 23rd Regiment, the Marine Battalion, and the 5th Machine-gun Battalion returned to the division from Colombs, and the Second now held its own twelve-mile sector, fronting on the Marne.

Americans with an Anti-Aircraft Gun Trying for Enemy Airplanes That Would Like to Spot the American Positions.

From Hill 204 to the extreme right of the sector the Germans had the advantage of observation. The American lines of communication were under the eyes of German balloons and Ger-

man aviators scouted low all over the American positions, dropping bombs in broad daylight.

In front of the Marines the Germans held the village of Bouresches and its railroad station, and had filtrated into the adjoining woods, including Belleau Wood, which afforded ideal cover for machine-gun nests. The Marine Battalion was keen for action, and on June 4, their first day in the front line, the Marines repulsed a German attack. Two days later, on the morning of the

Straight for the dark recesses of the wood they made, to be met with the steady crackle of machine-gun fire—storms of it—and the persistent spitting of rifles from the wood. Wounded men began to flow back through the ravines, seeking shelter. Then the word came that the machine-gun positions in the outskirts of the wood had been taken—and the Marines were in the wood, seeking and destroying with dashing intrepidity the hidden nests of machine-guns that

American Artillerymen Turning a Captured German Fieldpiece and Its Ammunition Upon the Retreating Enemy at St. Quentin.

6th, they made an attack with the French on the left, to straighten out the line in the direction of Torcy, and gained their objectives in spite of intense machine-gun and shell fire. This only whetted their appetite for more, and more was soon to come.

At 5 p. m. on the same day General Harbord, who by this time proudly wore the globe insignia of a Marine on his collar, began an attack with the 4th Brigade, aimed at the capture of Bouresches and Belleau Wood. The hour had struck for the Marines to assert themselves, and right gallantly they responded when called upon.

continued to deal out death from the thick undergrowth, ravines, screens and pockets in which they were ensconced.

Trench-tried veterans of the four years' war might have hesitated before rushing those carefully prepared gun-nests of the crafty enemy. They might have left the work to the artillery. But the blood of the Marines was up, and they would not be denied. With rifle and bayonet they rushed to close quarters — and got there! German gunners ran from their guns before such an assault; or tried to withdraw their guns, and failed; or rose in surrender, with hands in air

and cries of "Kamerad!—or were bayoneted behind their guns. Soon the thickets that had been spitting fire were silent, and when night came a goodly portion of Belleau Wood was in American hands and securely held with the machine-guns captured from the enemy. And on the glorious banner of the United States Marine Corps the name of Belleau Wood was blazoned, to shine for evermore. But the job of taking the wood was not yet done.

tions remaining in German hands. A preliminary bombardment smashed some of the machine-gun nests and in the attack our men fought even more fiercely than before, in order to finish the job in the wood. They took thirty machine-guns and 300 prisoners, but the Germans brought up fresh reserves and then saturated the wood and its neighborhood with a bombardment of "zperite" gas, which compelled the temporary withdrawal of all but a small holding force of Americans.

American Soldiers Near Metz in the Closing Days of the War. This Picture Was One of the Last Taken in the Argonne Before the Armistice.

The taking of Bouresches by the 4th Brigade followed, as the second phase of the operation, and the cellars of the village were soon cleared of all Germans in hiding there. When morning came a German counter-attack was repulsed with rifle and machine-gun fire, and for long afterward the Germans sought revenge by shelling the roads to the rear, making it extremely difficult and hazardous to get supplies to the gallant fellows holding fast in Belleau Wood. Bouresches was practically isolated, but the Americans there too made the most of their shelter and remained cheerful.

On the morning of June 11 another attack on Belleau Wood yielded many prisoners in the por-

A regiment from the Third Division was then sent into the wood, while the 4th Brigade of the Second took over the task of holding Bouresches. Later in the month the Marines were put back into Belleau, where the Germans still maintained strongholds in the north end of the wood. A final effort by the Marines was at length successful. After artillery preparation, they made a ferocious rush which carried them clear through the wood and into the open beyond, thus gaining the object of three weeks of sleepless vigil and desperate straining after victory. As one eye-witness said of the final rush, "Our men went through them like a bunch of wildcats." Two hundred prisoners were taken in a small area in

the north end, and the German dead lay in heaps around their captured guns.

In all 700 German prisoners were taken out of Belleau Wood, and while the American casualties were severe, the prisoners exceeded the number of American dead, while the German losses in killed and wounded were commensurate with the stubbornness of the defense.

### THE CAPTURE OF VAUX

On July 1 the 3rd Brigade captured the village of Vaux and positions along the line to Hill 204, after repulsing minor attacks and making some attacks under shell fire, while the 4th Brigade was busy at Belleau. Vaux was a larger village than Bouresches, in a valley from which the road rises towards Chateau Thierry. The enemy was hidden in the cellars of the village, and the American artillery prepared the way for the attack with merciless bombardment. When the hour for the attack arrived the men of the 3rd Brigade advanced in touch with the French, who were to attack Hill 204, which as already stated commanded Chateau Thierry.

The attack was carried out with clock-like precision behind a barrage. Five minutes after the American troops went over the top they were in the outskirts of Vaux. The cellars of the village had been charted by the intelligence officers, and details of Americans assigned for the purpose knew where to go to gather in prisoners. There were some sharp encounters in the streets, but in an incredibly short space of time, Vaux was in American hands, with 500 German prisoners, and thus the 4th Brigade helped along the splendid record fast being made by the Second Division of the new American army.

The Kaiser Shortly Before His Downfall, Flight and Abdication.—This Photograph Was Taken Near Sedan, France, in September, 1918, and Shows Wilhelm in the Act of Decorating a German Officer. Field Marshal Hindenburg Stands Behind and the Crown Prince of Prussia at the Right, Wearing the Busby of the Death's Head Hussars. The Photo Was Found in the Possession of a German Prisoner.

In Northern Russia—An American Guard in a Prison Camp, at Archangel Serving out Rations of Rice to Bolshevik Prisoners.

Russian Children at the Barracks of the 339th U. S. Infantry at Archangel, Receiving Left-over Rations from American Soldiers.

# Smashing the Hindenburg Line

## CHAPTER V

TYPICAL ACHIEVEMENTS OF THE 27TH DIVISION—STORY OF THE ATTACK ON THE FAMOUS LINE — CAPTURE OF THE ST. QUENTIN TUNNEL — THE GIBRALTAR OF THE GERMAN MORALE — MOST SANGUINARY BATTLE ON THE WESTERN FRONT—LETTER OF COMMENDATION FROM FIELD MARSHAL HAIG.

Typical of the achievements of the many divisions of the American Expeditionary Forces in France was the record of the 27th Division, United States Army, formerly a New York National Guard unit, which returned to its home shores in March, 1919, and received a welcome that will never be forgotten in the metropolis of America. More than 3,000,000 were gathered in the decorated streets of New York City and for five miles the men of the 27th—minus their gallant dead and wounded—marched through cheering throngs that testified their appreciation of the heroic conduct and sacrifices of the division.

Measured both by its casualty list of 7,262, which amounted to nearly 43 per cent of its strength, and by the battle names on its banners, the service of the 27th Division was strenuous and important. Four big battles and several minor engagements were credited to the division by the military powers, but the greatest of its deeds was the series of actions that first broke the so-called Hindenburg line. This fighting took place in the latter part of September, 1918, and added materially to the German eagerness to end the war at once. "History will show that this was one of the hottest engagements of the war when natural and military obstacles encountered are taken into consideration," said an eyewitness who accompanied the division. "But, while the credit of going through the Hindenburg line at its strongest point belongs indisputably to the 27th, the officers and men of the division do not claim that they won the war. Their sole claim is that they accomplished the task assigned to them, while the 30th Division—the only other American unit on the British front—and the English, Canadian, and Australian forces in Flanders and Belgium, and the American and French forces to the south and east, also bravely and rapidly carried out the plans of the great drive planned by General Foch, the Commander-in-Chief of the Allied armies. The men of the 27th are proud of their work in winding up the war; their personal pride does not overshadow the pride they feel in having been a combative part of the great Allied wall of bayonets and guns which stretched from the English Channel to the Swiss border and overwhelmed the invading hordes from Germany."

On the last day the New York Division was in line, only 850 rifles were left in the 53d and 54th Infantry Brigades, comprising the 105th, 106th, 107th, and 108th Infantry Regiments and the 105th and 106th Machine-Gun Battalions.

At one period in the fighting in the first dash at the Hindenburg line every commissioned line officer of the 106th Regiment was incapacitated from duty, either because of wounds or fatalities, and the next day the 107th Regiment, for the same reason was practically without commissioned officers.

The story of the 27th's attack on the famous line, from ferro-cement outposts to the final ramifications miles beyond, has been told with great clearness by the Divisional Judge Advocate, Lieut.-Colonel J. Leslie Kinkaid. Opposite the American position was the famous St. Quentin tunnel of the Hindenburg line, and Col. Kinkaid says:

"We knew that our orders were to take that tunnel if it was humanly possible to do so. Between that tunnel and our position lay the outpost positions of the Hindenburg line. The problem was to capture these outpost positions, put them behind us, and then to concentrate our full force on the breaking of the great Hindenburg line itself. It was an effort to wipe away and clear up any obstacle that might impede or delay the main attack that was to be launched later against these reputedly impregnable German defenses.

"Our point was first to clear away the debris heaped up before the wall and then to go at the wall with the force of a monster battering-ram. On the morning of September 27 the 106th Regiment began the initial movement of cleaning up the outpost positions of the Germans. The Germans appreciated what we were after; they knew our final objective was not the Knoll, or the Guillemont Farm, or the Quennemont Farm, but what lay beyond that.

"All the strength and power and morale of the German Army lay behind these points, and their orders were to hold the line at all costs. They fought with every deadly weapon and contrivance known to modern warfare. The 106th, full of the knowledge of what the gaining of the outpost

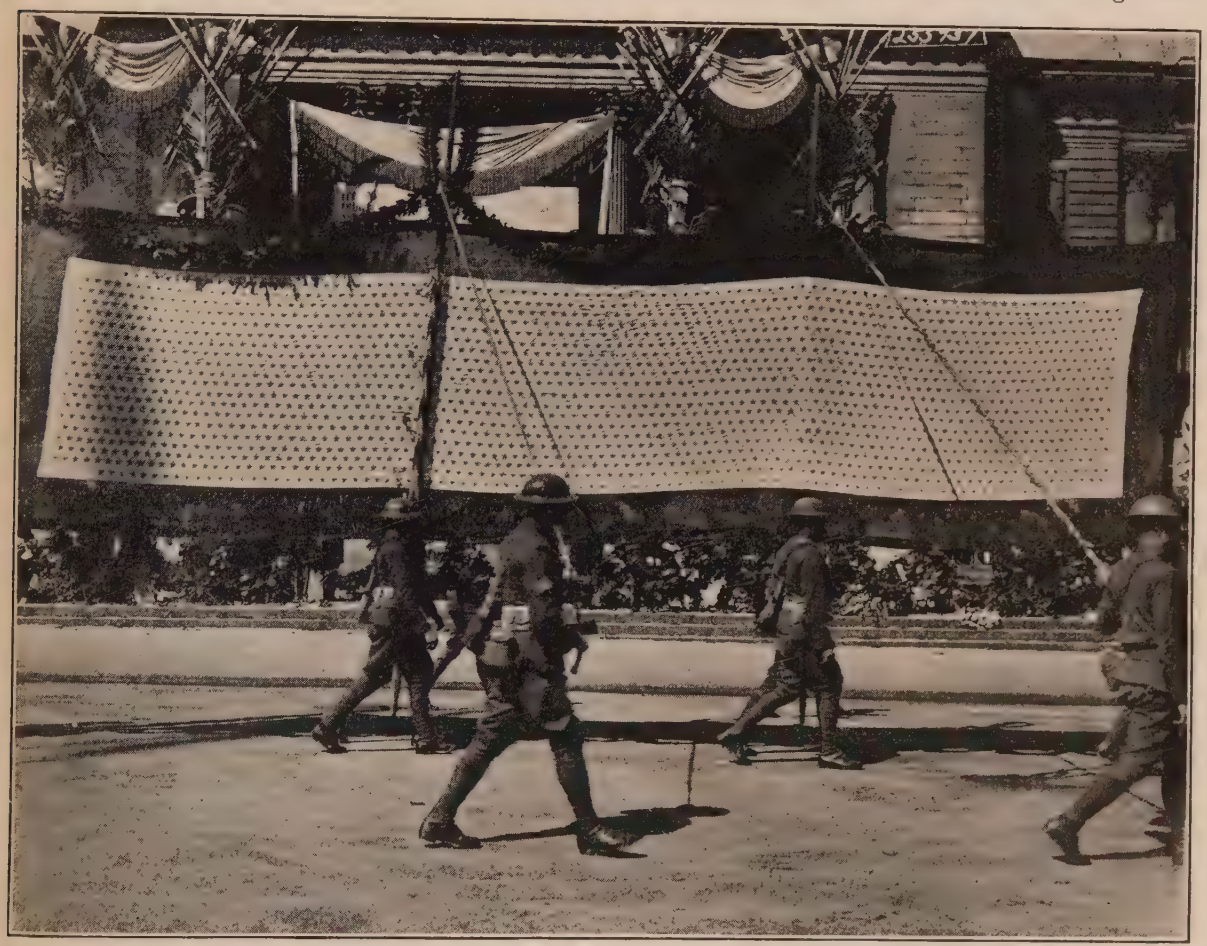
positions would mean to our armies, withstood repeated counter-attacks and advanced in the face of counter-barrage and deadly machine-gun fire to their objectives. The knoll changed hands four times. The fighting was terrific. Both sides were battling for the possession of the ground that would be the great vantage-point in the battle to come. The loss of it to the Germans would mean the laying bare of the Hindenburg line. The gain of it to the Americans meant the opportunity to force the pressure on the great wall. This fact cannot be too greatly emphasized. The night of September 27 saw the Germans occupying a small portion of the Knoll, but Guillemont Farm and Quennemont Farm were in our hands. The 106th had accomplished that which had been the serious stumbling-block of former attacks.

"That night the 106th was relieved by the 107th and the 108th Infantry, who took possession of the line that had the day before constituted the outpost positions of the Hindenburg line. The 106th, which had earned a well-deserved rest, was held in the rear as a divisional reserve in case it should later be needed. The 105th, which in the course of the battle greatly distinguished itself by helping to stem the tide of the flank attack made on the 107th Infantry at Vendhuille, was placed behind the front lines and held in readiness to fall into action at short notice.

Homecoming Parade of the 27th Division in New York City in March, 1919, Showing a Portion of the Tremendous Crowd that Participated in the Welcome, also the Victory Arch and Scheme of Decoration on Fifth Avenue. Three Million People Were Gathered Along the Five-Mile Line of March to Cheer the Returning Heroes of the Division that Broke the Hindenburg Line. Similar Scenes of Enthusiasm Were Witnessed in Many Other Cities as Their Troops Returned from France.

"Before us lay the famous Hindenburg line, which, according to the captured documents of the Great German General Headquarters, was invulnerable to attack. It was the rock of Gibraltar of the German morale. The armies of the Allies might gain point after point and victory after victory, but the Hindenburg line would be held intact forever. It was the Verdun of their defenses. It was everything that was strong and powerful and formidable. No Allied army could ever pass that.

"There was every reason for their holding this belief. The line consisted of three deep trenches with concrete firing-steps, each trench protected by a belt of barbed-wire entanglements twenty to thirty feet in width. The first belt of wire might be cut, but there was another beyond and still another beyond that. These trenches were as strong as human ingenuity and human power and human labor could make them. Behind them, acting as a great warehouse for fresh troops and a haven for exhausted ones, lay the famous St. Quentin Canal tunnel, built by Napoleon in 1811. It was 5.7 kilometers long (about 6,000 yards in our measurement), dug straight through a hill, and constructed of arched brick walls with a broad tow-path running along the side. The *Boche* had filled the canal within the tunnel with canal-boats, in which men were quartered, and had sealed both ends with ferro-concrete walls four feet thick. The tunnel lay from ten to fifty meters underground. Access to the fighting-lines was had through passages and galleries cut from the tunnel to the trenches. These had the appearance of underground galleries or avenues. Reinforcements could be brought to the trenches without having them subjected to shell-fire or airplane observation. In the same manner the wounded and exhausted troops could be rushed back to the areas behind the fighting-lines without suffering additional casualties."



This Immense Banner Containing 1972 Gold Stars, One for Each Member of the 27th Division Who Died in the Service of His Country, Was Carried in the Great Parade of Welcome to the 27th on Its Return to New York City in March, 1919. It Was Witnessed by Three Million Spectators and Typified the Patriotic Sacrifices of All the American Troops in France.

On the outcome of the American attack on these wonderful defenses, said Colonel Kinkaid, depended, "the outcome of the war." The 108th was sent ahead on the southern half of the advancing American line, the 107th on the northern half. The heaviest tanks in the British Army, carrying 27-centimeter guns beside the

usual machine guns, preceded the infantry, following the barrage. The succeeding events in this victorious American attack, which certainly constituted one of the decisive battles of the war, are finally cleared up by Colonel Kinkaid's report. His account proceeds:

"Within two hours after the attack had been launched word was received at General O'Ryan's headquarters that the entire squadron of tanks had been wiped out by ground mines and direct

"The 107th, equally brave and determined, attacked at the northern end. Machine guns planted along every twenty feet of the Hindenburg line spit the death-fire into their faces and bodies, but they went on. Their objective was the tunnel, and the 107th advanced, tore its way through the hellish barbed-wire belts, and was ready to keep on advancing and tearing the way until the tunnel had been reached.

"But—and here is the thing that roused the

One of the Big Naval Guns That Helped to Smash the Hindenburg Line.—Several of These Guns from United States Warships, Mounted on Special Railroad Carriages, Did Splendid Work in the Last Days of the War.

hits from cleverly concealed antitank artillery. Of the twenty-six tanks that had started out, one alone was just about able to limp back in a sorely disabled condition.

"The command of the General was to go ahead. The other artillery would give the supporting fire. The men did go ahead. The 108th went through death-dealing fire, and penetrated and held the Hindenburg line from Bony to Bellecourt. There, in spite of constant counter-attacks of the Germans, they held on with the grip of bulldogs. The line had been reached at too great a cost to be given up under any circumstances. They were there, and they were going to stay there.

boys to the fiercest anger—no sooner had they conquered one area than fresh German troops would rise out of the ground behind them and fire from the rear. They came up through the underground passages, connecting them with the tunnel, and, armed with machine guns and bombs, attacked our boys from behind as they were advancing. The men of the 107th, with the Germans in front of them and the Germans behind them, fought like so many devils. It was a battle against terrific odds. Time and again they made attempts to mop up the line and clear the ground that the advance had gone over, but the constant surging in of Germans behind them made it a grim task."

Regimental Colors of the 367th Infantry, U. S. A., Familiarly Known as "The Buffalos," Brought Back to the Union League Club, New York, Which Presented the Colors.

Finally, however, the tunnel was taken, and the retreating Germans "were spewed out of the ground in hordes." Airplanes flying over the battle-ground reported that the areas behind the tunnel were thick with running men. Evidence was given by the prisoners that the victory had been complete, and as Colonel Kinkaid reports:

"Those that we captured were all broken up in body, spirit and morale. The rock of Gibraltar, upon which they had pinned all their faith, had failed them. When they were lined up at headquarters they were like so many masses of limp clay—all the fight and the will-to-war had simply run out of them. The plaint expressed by all of them was: 'The war is over. The Hindenburg line has broken.'

"The setting sun on that September day showed in dim outline that New York's soldiers had paid the price. Closer observation proved that this price was paid in a way that should bring pride to the heart of every American.

"This was the most sanguinary battle on the Western Front. The casualties on both sides were terrific. But the American Army had shown that, young as it was, it had the power to crush the Hindenburg line."

Through the break made by the American divisions the rest of the Fourth British Army pushed and continued to go forward, harassing with terrific fire the fleeing columns of Prince Rupprecht's army. The 27th Division was withdrawn in order that it might rest and reorganize. During the battle the 27th had captured seventeen German officers and 1,782 enlisted men, aside from a number of field-pieces and hundreds of machine guns. The armies participating in the battle were the 3d British Corps, the 2d American Corps, consisting of the 30th and the 27th divisions; the Australian Corps, the 9th British Corps, and the Tenth French Army. These were spread out along the line, fighting independently and controlling different sectors.

### THANKS FROM FIELD MARSHAL HAIG

The following letter of commendation from the Commander-in-Chief of the British armies to the commanding General of the 2nd American Corps shows what was thought of the 27th Division:

"Now that the American 2nd Corps is leaving the British zone, I wish once more to thank you and all officers, non-commissioned officers, and men under your command on behalf of myself and all ranks of the British armies in France and Flanders for the very gallant and efficient service you have rendered during the period of your operations with the British Army.

"On September 29 you took part with great distinction in the great and critical attack which shattered the enemy's resistance in the Hindenburg line and opened the road to final victory. The deeds of the 27th and 30th American divisions, who on that day took Bellecourt and Nauroy, and so gallantly sustained the desperate struggle for Bony, will rank with the highest achievements of the war. They will always be remembered by the British regiments that fought beside you.

"Since that date, through three weeks of almost continuous fighting, you advanced from one success to another, overcoming all resistance, beating off numerous counter-attacks, and capturing several thousand prisoners and many guns. The names of Brancourt, Premont, Vaux-Andigny, St. Souplet, and Mazinghein testify to the dash and energy of your attacks.

"I rejoice at the success which attended your efforts, and I am proud to have had you under my command.

"D. HAIG, Field-Marshal."

The Ruins of the Beautiful and Historic Cloth Hall at Ypres, Belgium, to Be Left Untouched as an Eternal Memorial to the Defenders of the City, and as a Perpetual Reminder of German Vandalism. Ypres Is Now "The Ghost of a Proud City" and the Belgian Government Has Decided Not to Rebuild It On Its Old Site. These Ruins Are Consecrated Ground. They Will Stand, Enclosed in the Old Walls When the Desert of Mud of the Surrounding Plain is Turned Again Into Smiling Fields.—From a Painting by Major J. Kerr Lawson.

# In the Argonne—the Lost Battalion

## CHAPTER VI

AMERICAN ATTACK ON THE MEUSE-ARGONNE LINE—THE ENEMY DRIVEN FROM THE FOREST—OFFICIAL FIGURES OF THE BATTLE—THE "LOST BATTALION"—GRAPHIC STORY OF AN OBSERVANT PRIVATE—SIX DAYS OF SUFFERING AND HEROISM—MAJOR WHITTLESEY'S REFUSAL TO SURRENDER—ENEMY ATTACKS REPULSED—RELIEF AT LAST.

After the capture of the St. Mihiel salient, which was graphically described by General Pershing in his official report of November 20, 1918, the old German front line from Switzerland to the east of Rheims was still intact, with the exception of St. Mihiel. The American army was the hinge of the Allied offensive, and its operations were directed toward the important railroad communications of the German armies through Mezieres and Sedan. Unless the enemy could hold fast to this part of his lines, the withwithdrawal of his forces with immense quantities of war material would be dangerously imperiled.

The next operation of the American forces was therefore directed along the Meuse-Argonne line, with a firm determination to break the line. On the right the American forces were protected by the Meuse. The left embraced the Argonne Forest, where the defenses of the enemy, including ravines and hills, had been generally considered impregnable.

From September 25 to October 4 the first phase of the American offensive continued, being maintained against patches of woods defended by snipers and continuous lines of machine guns. It resulted in an advance of from four to seven miles and the capture of 10,000 prisoners.

Then came the second of the offensives. On October 4 the attack was renewed all along the American front, and on the 10th the Argonne Forest was cleared of the enemy.

A final advance on the Meuse-Argonne front was begun on November 1, when the enemy broke before the determined American infantry and the movement became an impetuous onslaught that could not be stayed. The American artillery meanwhile acquitted itself splendidly. By November 6 a division of the First Corps had reached a point on the Meuse opposite Sedan, 25 miles from the starting-point of the American advance. The enemy's main line of communications had been cut, and, as General Pershing said, "nothing but surrender or an armistice could save his army from complete disaster."

Forty enemy divisions, or more than a million men, were engaged against the Americans in the Meuse-Argonne battle. Between September 26 and November 6 the American troops captured 26,059 prisoners and 468 guns on this front. All the American divisions engaged contributed nobly to the victorious result, although some of them were fighting their first battle.

Official figures of the Meuse-Argonne battle, compiled by American general headquarters and made public in Paris April 1, 1919, show the total American losses were 115,529 out of 631,405 men engaged.

The American losses in the forty-seven days' battle were apportioned as follows:

Killed, 15,599; wounded, 69,832; gassed, 18,664; shell shocked, 2,629; missing, 8,805.

In addition to the Americans there were 138,000 French engaged.

### THE "LOST BATTALION"

A remarkable incident of the Argonne battle was the heroic fight made by a battalion of the 308th U. S. Infantry, commanded by Major Charles W. Whittlesey. This battalion, though surrounded by the enemy, maintained its ground for over five days without rations or supplies, and its commander gained the sobriquet of "Go-to-hell Whittlesey," in recognition of the reply he is said to have returned to the German demand for his surrender.

Though Major (now Colonel) Whittlesey has modestly refused to discuss more than the mere outlines of this achievement—one of the most remarkable of the war—the story of this stubborn American fight has been well told by a "plain buck private" who was the commander's orderly. Private Robert Manson was wounded in the fight, but his powers of observation were not impaired. He said:

"In the early part of the afternoon of October 2, I was in a concrete German dugout, with Major Whittlesey, when orders came from the Colonel to take a given objective and hold it regardless of cost in casualties. At 2:30 that afternoon, the battalion was to make the drive and they would be supported by flanking regiments and by artillery. That night, and for five other nights and days we fought, and out of the 660 men who started the drive 250 survived.

A Full-Blooded American Indian on Guard Duty in Germany.—Corporal George Miner, D Company, 128th Infantry, at the Most Advanced Sentry Post of the 32nd Division on the Bridgehead Beyond the Rhine. He was a Winnebago Indian from Tomah, Wisconsin.

"After heavy fighting we penetrated the German line, gaining our objective just at sundown. We were located on the northern slope of a bleak, unsheltered ravine. Some of the men stood guard while the others dug themselves into the hillside for shelter from the shrapnel and bullets. Then night settled over the forest, and we were ordered to be as quiet as possible, as any noise would give away our position to the Hun.

"On Thursday, October 3, we tried to send messages through, but found our runners at the nearest post either killed or captured. Patrols were sent out to reconnoiter, and then we knew that we were completely surrounded; surrounded on a bleak, unsheltered ravine, with the German army on a cliff above, and with a powerful German detachment deeply entrenched on the other side of the ravine. Enemy troops were so close that we could hear the calls and orders of the men. If we showed ourselves in the openings of the wooded forest, we could be reached by German machine guns, rifles, and trench-mortars.

"On the second day, October 4, no help had come, and, realizing our true situation, runners volunteered to carry tidings back to regiment headquarters. Two brave lads—Private Bottell and Private Frail—tried to make their way through. Both were fired upon by machine guns and fell to the ground. Frail was killed, but Bottell got back, after a bullet had passed through his helmet, slightly tearing his forehead.

"Patrols were sent out at different times, and in most cases did not return. All day long Jerry kept shooting—machine guns and trench-mortars—from the cliff above and from across the ravine. The German snipers were very active, now and then killing or wounding one of us. At one time a trench-mortar shell hit so close to my hole in the ground, that I was completely buried and for a moment or two I thought I was going to a rest-camp (cemetery).

"We had sent up pigeons, and it was these couriers of the air that carried the tidings to the other Yanks in the Forest. Early that afternoon the American artillery sent over a barrage which lasted two hours. They tried to get the Germans on the cliff above, but fell short.

"The food problem troubled us on the third day, October 5. What little food we had with us was already disposed of. For water we depended on a muddy stream at the bottom of the ravine, and on one clear, grateful spring that bubbled invitingly. But each trip to it meant exposure to snipers. One instance I remember is when one dough-boy with eight canteens went to fetch some water. He was given a warm reception by the Hun, and returned with two canteens, plugged with holes, from which the water was streaming. More than one lad fell in an attempt to get water.

"When starting the Argonne drive we discarded our overcoats, raincoats, and blankets. What few blankets we had not turned in, in our rush to carry the ravine, were used for the wounded. At night, or before the fog had lifted in the morning, we would bury the dead that lay on the hillside. The ground was very poor, and in most cases we buried them in their own dugouts. Many of us were too weak to dig the hard soil. Here and there arms and legs could be seen sticking out of the graves.

"Still no relief. We could have fought our way back at a great loss, but our Major would not leave the wounded to the mercy of the Hun. He would walk from one to another, giving us good cheer and hope. Every day planes came over looking for us in the interminable fog. We

Survivors of the "Lost Battalion" of the 308th U. S. Infantry Lined Up on the Dock Just After Debarking from the S. S. America on Their Return to Home Shores. This Famous Unit Was Surrounded by the Enemy for Five Days in the Argonne and Its Commander, Major Whittlesey, Invited the Germans to "Go to Hell" When Called On to Surrender.

put out our battalion panels to attract the airmen, but such was the lay of the wooded ravine that the airmen could not see us. And the air was so foggy that we often mistook them for German planes, although these, too, paid us a call.

"That night Jerry attacked us, but we fought him off.

"Our casualties increased on the fourth day. The Major, however, was as cool as ever. His meters away; but we feared that it would not come in time.

"Then we heard very heavy firing across the ravine. We were all happy, believing that relief was coming at last, and that the Hun was being chased out from around us by the Americans. But we were in a desperate fix. It was death to stay, and the chances of getting back to our lines were one to a hundred. So nine of the

Blockhouse in Russia, Constructed by Company B, 310th United States Engineers, at Oberzerskayne. This Blockhouse was Strongly Attacked by the Reds, But They Were Driven Off With Severe Loss.

hourly message to the men was, 'Be patient, help will come.'

"Just before dawn we were again attacked by the Germans. Again we could hear their orders and commands, hear one Hun speaking to another. Not once did we try to fight our way back. We had been ordered to take the position and hold it, and we were obeying orders. Things looked pretty blue. We knew that efforts to reach us were unremitting. We knew that help would come from the Americans only 1,200 boys decided to leave at sunset, although they had no permission to do so.

"When the fifth day dawned we still had no relief, after enduring starvation, exposure to rain and chill October winds. When the third savage attack came before dusk that night I was seeing my finish.

Just before the last attack one of the nine boys who had gone off at sunset of the day before returned with a white flag and a message for the Major. He said that they had en-

countered a German machine gun, five were killed, and he and three others wounded and made prisoners by the Germans. The Germans had fed the flag-bearer on bread, soup, beer, and whisky, continues Private Manson, and entrusted him with a message:

"The message, written in English by a German officer, told us that the enemy was aware of our deplorable condition; that they knew we were running short of ammunition, and that we had had no food for a number of days. 'For the sake of your wounded, for humanity's sake,' the message continued, 'Give up. Deal kindly with the prisoner we send back.'

"But our Major would rather die than surrender. Every time I think of him he reminds me of Custer's last fight. About an hour after the Major's refusal, Jerry attacked us. Our stock of ammunition had run low, and we were so weak we could hardly drag ourselves to our feet. What we endured is hardly believable. Some chewed roots of trees, leaves, and tobacco.

"Some of us wrote short messages, each entrusting his to some pal on the chance that his pal might get through alive. There were some thanks whispered for the little-chronicled deeds of kindness the week had witnessed. Here and there men promised to kill each other rather than be taken prisoner. But we fought off the Hun. In the last attack the Germans were so close to us that we could make them out in the darkness. And we sure did give them a rousing reception! In the last moment of the attack we lost one of our best officers, Lieutenant Schenk, well worthy of decoration.

"Then all grew quiet. We lay in fear and dread of another attack, when a call for Major Whittlesey rent the quiet of the night. 'We are on your right, the 307th.' The Major answered from his hole in the ground. Again the voice rang out, 'We have come, we are bringing rations for the men.'

A Landing Party of American Sailors at Vladivostok, Russia, Where Allied Forces Were Landed for the Protection of Ammunition and Supplies Sold to the Russians.

"It was the happiest moment of my life. I was hysterical. I laughed and cried for joy. I felt like a cat having nine lives. I was not the only one acting that way. When they gave us canned hash—I had no mess kit—I ate it from my hands covered with blood and dirt. It tasted like sirloin steak smothered with onions.

"The following morning more rations came. Our Major gave out the rations, and made sure the wounded were fed first. I was sitting in my dugout when I heard a gruff voice about five feet above me demanding the Major.

"Looking up I saw some one wearing two stars on his hat. I immediately got on my feet and informed this officer, who, I learned later, was General Alexander, that the Major was on the right.

"Shall I call him, sir?"

"'No! No! I'll go to him,' he replied, as much as to say it was an honor to do so. He then congratulated us, and told us what a load had been on his heart for five days and how the other Americans had fought to save us. He wanted to know why the wounded men were still lying there. He told his orderly to rush every ambulance available. And within three hours more than 160 men were on their way to the hospital. Some of the boys who were not wounded had to be carried out on stretchers too weak from hunger, exhaustion, exposure, and hardships to shift for themselves.

"As for 'Go-to-hell Whittlesey'—well, the men would go to hell for Whittlesey."

Americans of the 229th Infantry Passing in Review Before General Poole of the British Army and General Torcom of the Russian Forces, at Archangel, Russia.

# When The Armistice Came

## CHAPTER VII

THE LAST TOWN CAPTURED—ORDERS GOVERNING THE ARMISTICE—WORK OF AMERICAN AIRMEN—THE TOTAL DEATH TOLL—HOW THE MEN WENT OVER—BATTLE CASUALTIES OF THE UNITED STATES—LOSS BY DIVISIONS —DISTINGUISHED SERVICE CROSSES AWARDED TO DIFFERENT DIVISIONS.

The last French town to fall into American hands before the armistice went into effect on November 11, 1918, was Stenay. Patrols reported they had found it empty not more than a quarter of an hour before 11 A. M. American troops rushed through the town and in a few minutes flags of the Allies were beginning to appear from the windows. As the church bells solemnly tolled the hour of 11, troops from the 90th Division were pouring into the town.

Only a line of glowing campfires marked the front that night. Except for the rumble of thousands of trucks and other noises incident to the stirring of enormous armies, there was not a sound to indicate that two great forces were still facing each other. No violation of the armistice had been reported, there not being even an accidental burst of gunfire.

The greater part of the 800-odd persons remaining in Stenay were still in their cellars, fearfully awaiting the bombardment which they believed would surely come as the Americans entered the town. Many had yielded to German persuasion or force, and had retreated with the enemy. Those few who dared first to venture into the streets greeted the Americans with tears in their eyes and fairly deluged them with questions. The majority seemed too dazed to be able to understand that fighting had stopped. With trembling hands they offered coffee and bread to their deliverers.

The town was not badly damaged by shell-fire, but, according to the remaining inhabitants, had been plundered of nearly everything of value. The streets were barricaded with huge heaps of furniture, indicating the intention of the Germans to hold desperately if attacked. At the last moment, however, they withdrew without a struggle.

A few of the residents had the slender satisfaction of reclaiming some of their belongings from these improvised defenses. Others lost nearly everything they owned. It was carted off by the invaders when withdrawal became a possibility.

In every village, even those from which the Germans had been driven within a few days, there were flags and decorations which were brought up to the front by the soldiers. In the villages back of the line there were impromptu celebrations and the civilians in holiday spirit saluted the Americans and shouted "La guerre est fini" ("the war is finished").

Northeast of Verdun just before 11 o'clock, American artillerymen, in loading a six-inch howitzer, wrote "Good luck" on a ninety-pound shell and "let 'er go." The shot was aimed at the crossroad at Ornes, just ahead of the American lines.

### ORDERS GOVERNING THE ARMISTICE

Orders announcing that the armistice between the allied powers and Germany had been signed and giving directions as to the future conduct of allied soldiers along the line were sent to every corps early in the morning of November 11. They were transmitted to the units in the front ranks. The orders in part follow:

"1. You are informed that hostilities will cease along the whole front at 11 o'clock a. m., Nov. 11, 1918, Paris time.

"2. No allied troops will pass the line reached by them at that hour in date until further orders.

"3. Division commanders will immediately sketch the location of their front line. This sketch will be returned to headquarters by the courier bearing these orders.

"4. All communication with the enemy, both before and after the termination of hostilities, is absolutely forbidden. In case of violation of this order severest disciplinary measures will be immediately taken."

### WORK OF AMERICAN AIRMEN

When hostilities were suspended on November 11, 1918, American aviators had destroyed 661 more German planes and thirty-five more German balloons than the Americans had lost. The total number of enemy planes destroyed by the Americans was 926 and the total number of balloons seventy-three. Two hundred and sixty-five

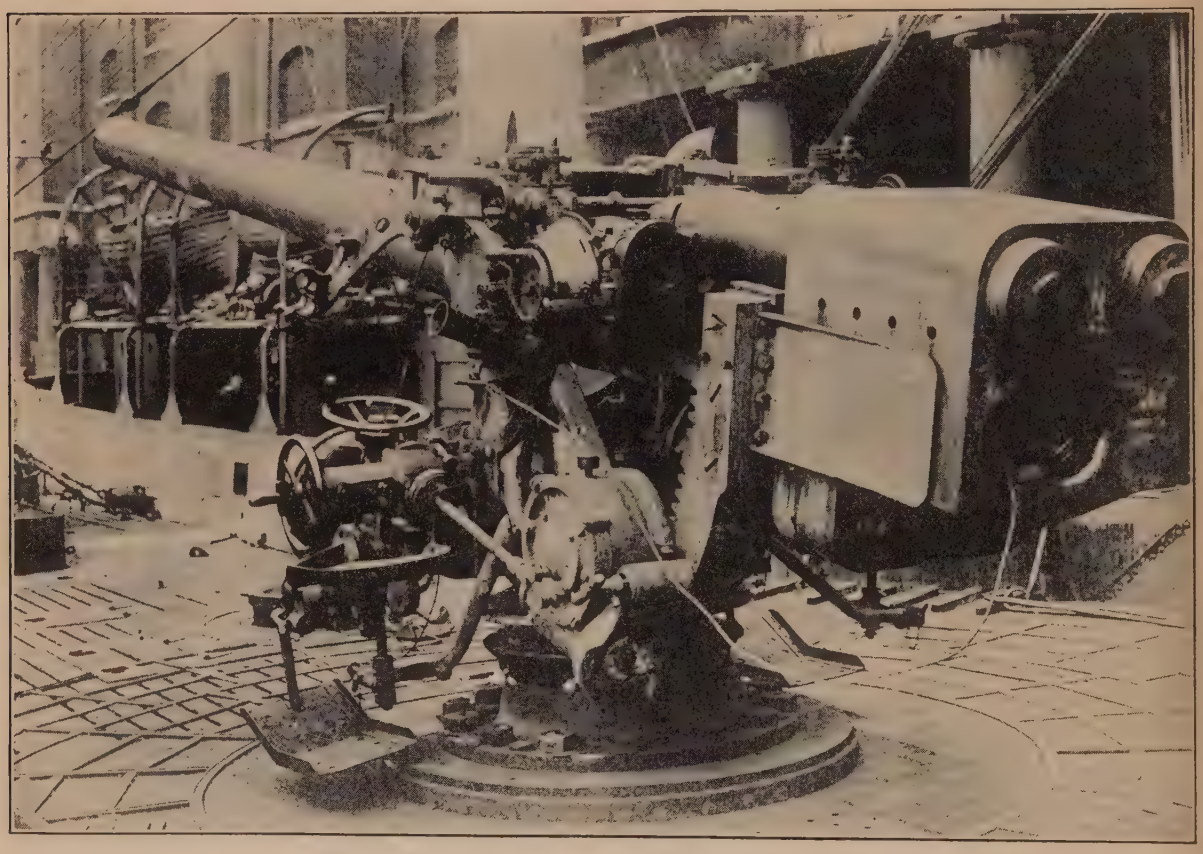
American planes and thirty-eight balloons were destroyed by the enemy.

On November 11, 1918, there were actually engaged on the battle front 740 American planes, 744 pilots, 457 observers, and 23 aerial gunners.

Of the total number of American planes at the front, 329 were of the pursuit type, 296 were for observation, and 115 were bombers.

Most of the famous American flyers were members of the Lafayette Squadron in the French aerial service, though a number gained renown quickly when the Air Service of the American Expeditionary Force became active. Of the 240 pilots in the Lafayette Squadron, 60 lost their lives in the war. Most of the surviving American pilots in the famous French squadron were given commissions in the American Air Service late in 1917 and during the early months of 1918.

Many American flyers earned the title of "ace" on being credited with bringing down five or more enemy airplanes and balloons. Many more were awarded the war cross and other decorations by the French and British and the distinguished service cross by the American authorities, for acts of extraordinary heroism. And in the home camps and flying fields of the United States, when the armistice came, there were literally thousands of splendid young Americans, trained as army aviators, many of them already expert, eager for active service and eating their hearts out in disappointment as their chances of going overseas diminished, grew dim, and finally disappeared. Had the war lasted into the spring of 1919, the skies of Germany would have been darkened by clouds of American air fighters.



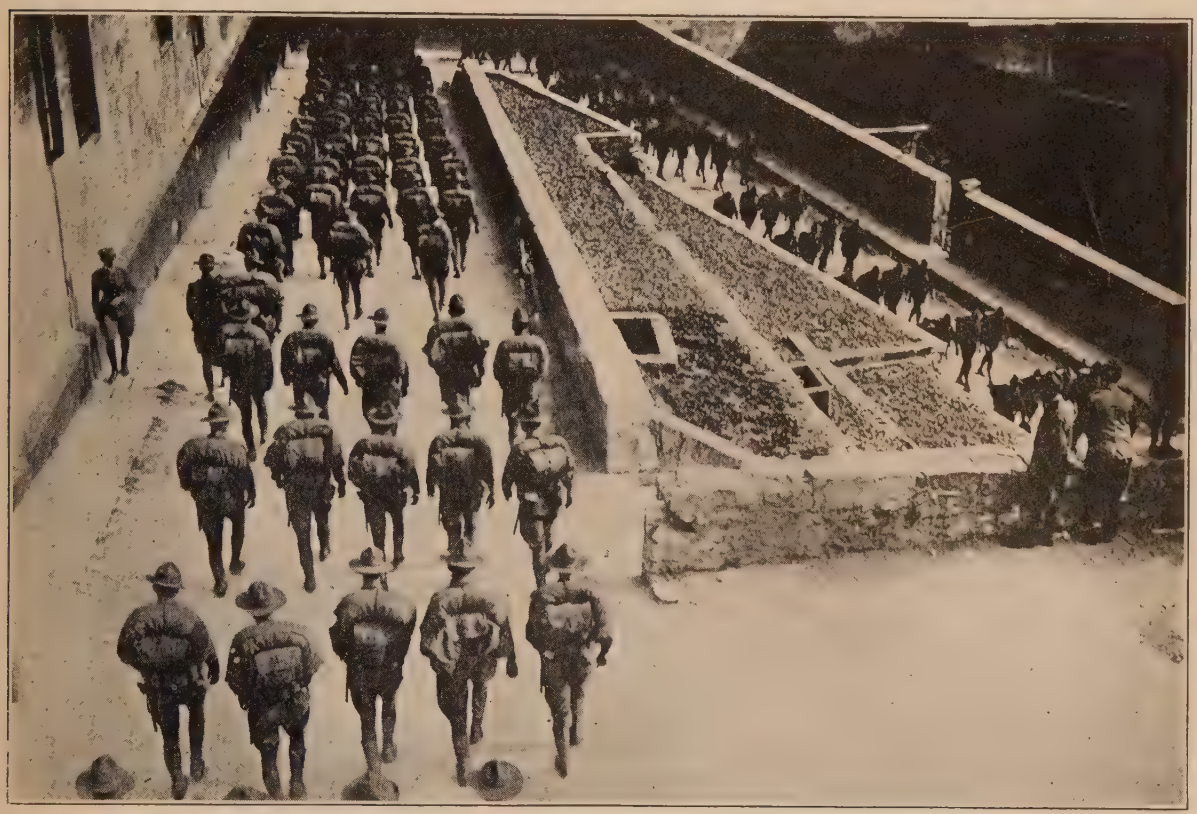
A Big Gun Found On a Surrendered Submarine.—This Gun, 20 Feet Long and 5.9 Calibre, Was Mounted on the Deck of the German Submarine U 155, Surrendered in an English Port. Such a Gun Could Easily Sink the Average Vessel, Without the Use of Torpedoes

### THE TOTAL DEATH TOLL

The staggering toll of the European war in battle deaths was emphasized by General Peyton C. March, chief of staff, on March 1, 1919, when

he announced that thirteen of the nations engaged in the conflict sustained a loss of 7,354,000 in "battle deaths," as far as determined from official reports. By "battle deaths," General March explained that he meant troops killed in battle or died from wounds received in battle. The total does not take into consideration those died of disease, accident, or other causes than battle action or wounds in battle.

General March also made public a table showing the number of Distinguished Service Crosses awarded to the different divisions of the American Expeditionary Forces. These figures show that the Second Regular Army Division had Distinguished Service Crosses awarded to 664 of its members, more than twice the number awarded to any other division. There were 300 crosses awarded to members of the First Regular Army



American Soldiers in Italy.—Landing of the First Contingent at a Port on the Tirreno.

General March's statement of battle deaths by nations follows:

| | |
|---|---|
| Russia | 1,700,000 |
| Germany | 1,600,000 |
| France | 1,305,300 |
| Austria | 800,000 |
| England | 706,000 |
| Italy | 460,700 |
| Turkey | 250,000 |
| Belgium | 102,000 |
| Bulgaria | 100,000 |
| Roumania | 100,000 |
| Serbia and Montenegro | 100,000 |
| United States | 50,000 |
| Total | 7,354,000 |

Division. To the 27th National Guard Division, from New York State, 139 crosses were awarded, and 146 to the 77th Draft Army Division, composed of youths from New York City, trained at Camp Upton. The award of Distinguished Service Crosses by divisions was as follows:

Second, 664; 1st, 300; 3d, 233; 26th, 229; 42d, 205; 30th, 177; 5th, 163; 29th, 150; 77th, 146; 27th, 139; 32d, 134; 91st, 134; 89th, 97; 78th, 95; 79th, 80; 33d, 76; 4th, 66; 28th, 58; 90th, 57; 80th, 42; 82d, 34; 7th, 30; 37th, 25; 36th, 24; 92d, 21; 81st, 19; 35th, 17; 6th, 10; 88th, 1.

By branches of the service these crosses were awarded as follows: Infantry, 2,942; Air Service, 251; Medical Corps, 238; Artillery, 183; En-

United States Marines Watching a German Aeroplane from the Ruins of a French Village Just Taken from the Enemy.

gineers, 149; Signal Corps, 50; Tank Corps, 36; others, 70. Total, 3,819.

HOW THE MEN WENT OVER

"There has been some talk," said General March, "about the transportation of our troops abroad, and I am going to give some figures showing the exact situation.

"We transported up to the signing of the armistice 2,056,122 men; of those the British carried 1,047,374; American ships, 898,449; Italian ships, 61,608, and French ships, 48,691. There have been embarked from France up to Feb. 20, for the United States, 352,922 men. In that embarkation—in the return of these men, American ships have carried 245,688 men, or 70 per cent.; British, 75,174, or 21 per cent.; French, 16,368, or 5 per cent.; Italian, 8,773, and all other ships, 6,919. These figures show clearly the reversal of the problem; Great Britain's ships are now being used for their own purposes, the transportation and repatriation of their own troops, and are not at our disposal the way they were in sending the men over.

"Of these 352,922 there were landed in America up to Feb. 20, 284,919 men, of which 208,996, or 73 per cent. landed in New York. Brest continues to furnish more than one-half of the embarkation; 185,565, or 53 per cent. passed through Brest and the balance at various other ports.

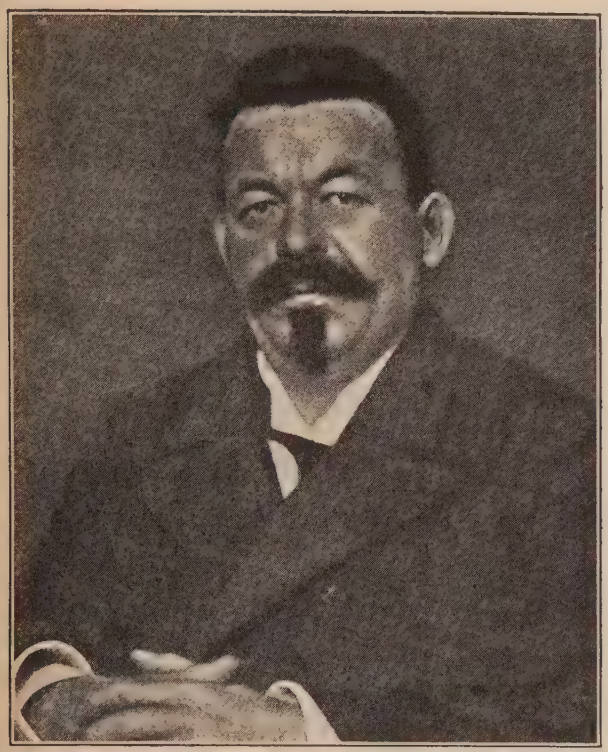
"The number of officers resigned and discharged up to Feb. 28, is 77,452; the number of enlisted men discharged up to today, including small returns for last week, 1,224,507; total discharges, 1,301,959. We had at the time of the armistice a little less than 1,700,000 officers and men in the United States camps. The total ordered demobilized, including men returned from France, is 1,571,000.

"Orders have been issued (November 11, 1918) to date for the demobilization of approximately 1,571,000 men as follows: Troops in the United States, 1,293,500; overseas troops returned to the United States, 277,500. Total ordered demobilized, 1,571,000."

BATTLE CASUALTIES OF THE U. S.

American troops actually participating in engagements against the enemy numbered 1,390,000 men. Gen. March announced the figures March

American Troops on City Hall Square in Oudenarde, Belgium.—The Band of the 364th Infantry Playing in the Rear and Company M, 361st Infantry, in the Foreground, at a Celebration After the Armistice.



Friedrich Ebert, Elected President of Germany, Feb. 11, 1919.

8, 1918, showing that 1,100,000 comprised divisional troops and divisional replacements; 240,000 corps and army troops and 50,000 service of supply troops.

Battle casualties of the American army in France, as shown by revised divisional records, totaled 274,860.

These include killed in action, wounded, missing in action, and prisoners.

The Thirty-third (Illinois) division suffered a total of 7,860 battle casualties.

The Second Regular Division showed the greatest losses in the revised list, with 24,429. The First Division came next with 23,973.

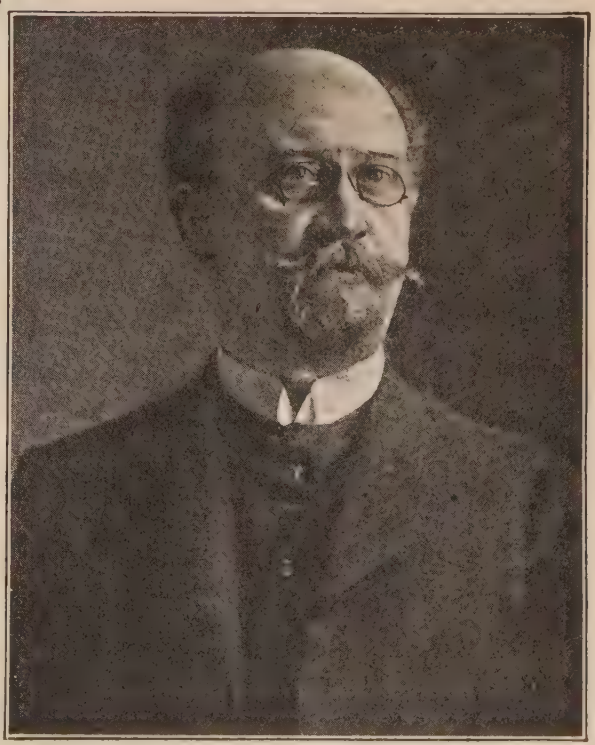
The Twenty-eighth (Pennsylvania, Delaware, District of Columbia, Virginia and Maryland) led National Guard and National Army Divisions, being fourth in the list with 14,417. The Thirty-second (Michigan and Wisconsin) was fifth with 14,268.

In the new list the Forty-second Division (Rainbow) reported a total of battle casualties of 12,252; the Seventy-seventh (New York metropolitan national army) 9,423, the Twenty-sixth (New England) 8,955; the Twenty-seventh (New York) 7,945, the Thirtieth (Tennessee, North Carolina, South Carolina) 6,893.

LOSS BY DIVISIONS

The battle casualty figures include in the totals wounded, which were not included in the tables of major casualties originally made public by the war department. The list of divisional totals follows:

Second (regular), 24,429.
First (regular), 23,974.
Third (regular), 16,356.
Twenty-eighth (Pennsylvania), 14,417.
Thirty-second (Michigan, Wisconsin), 14,268.
Fourth (regular), 12,948.
Forty-second (Rainbow), 12,252.
Ninetieth (Texas, Oklahoma), 9,710.
Seventy-seventh (Metropolitan New York), 9,423.
Twenty-sixth (New England), 8,955.
Eighty-second (Georgia, Alabama, Tennessee), 8,300.
Fifth (regular), 8,280.
Seventy-eighth (Western New York, New Jersey, Delaware), 8,133.
Twenty-seventh (New York), 7,940.
Thirty-third (Illinois), 7,860.
Thirty-fifth (Missouri, Kansas), 7,745.



Philip Schiedemann, Premier in the New German Cabinet.

Eighty-ninth (Kansas, Missouri, South Dakota, Nebraska, Colorado, New Mexico, Arizona), 7,093.

Thirtieth (Tennessee, North Carolina, South Carolina), 6,893.

Twenty-ninth (New Jersey, Delaware, Virginia, Maryland, District of Columbia), 5,972.

Ninety-first (Alaska, Washington, Oregon, California, Idaho, Nevada, Montana, Wyoming, Utah), 5,838.

Eightieth (Virginia, West Virginia, West Pennsylvania), 5,133.

Thirty-seventh (Ohio), 4,303.

Seventy-ninth (Pennsylvania, Eastern Maryland, District of Columbia), 3,223.

Thirty-sixth (Texas, Oklahoma), 2,397.

Seventh (regular), 1,546.

Ninty-second (negro national army), 1,399.

Eighty-first (North Carolina, South Carolina, Florida, Porto Rico), 1,062.

Sixth (regular), 285.

Eighty-eighth (North Dakota, Minnesota, Iowa, West Illinois), 63.

The Commission which Framed the Constitution of the League of Nations.—The members who represent fourteen nations are, from left to right, sitting: Viscount Chinda (Japan), Baron Makino (Japan), Léon Bourgeois (France), Lord Robert Cecil (Great Britain), Premier Orlando (Italy), Premier Kramar (Czecho-Slovak Republic), Premier Venizelos (Greece); standing: Mr. Pessoa (Brazil), Baron Yoshida (Japan), Colonel House (United States), the Secretary of the Brazilian Mission, Mr. Dmoski (Poland), Mr. Vesnitch (Servia), the Secretary of the Belgian Legation, General Smuts (Great Britain), President Wilson, Mr. Dimandi (Roumania), Mr. Hymans (Belgium), Major Bonsall (United States), Mr. Wellington Koo (China), Mr. Reis (Portugal), Mr. Scialoja (Italy), and Mr. Larnaude (France).—British Official Photo.

# Official Report of the Chief of Staff

## CHAPTER VIII

AMERICA'S REMARKABLE ACHIEVEMENT — FORMATION OF THE MILITARY PROGRAM—ORGANIZATION OF THE GENERAL STAFF—THE OPERATIONS DIVISION—PURCHASE, STORAGE, AND TRAFFIC DIVISION — CARGO SHIPS TAKEN OVER FOR TRANSPORTATION OF TROOPS TO EUROPE — SPEEDING UP TROOP SHIPMENTS—HOW THE STAFF WORK WAS DIVIDED AND CO-ORDINATED — AMERICA'S PRIDE IN HER ARMIES.

BY GENERAL PEYTON C. MARCH, U. S. A.

Office of Chief of Staff,
Washington, Nov. 11, 1918.

The Honorable the Secretary of War:

Sir:

The signing of the armistice on November 11, 1918, has brought to a successful conclusion the most remarkable achievement in the history of all warfare.

The entry of the United States into the war on April 6, 1917, found the nation about as thoroughly unprepared for the great task which was confronting it as any great nation which had ever engaged in war. Starting from a minimum of organized strength, within the short period of sixteen months the entire resources of the country in men, money, and munitions have been placed under central control, and at the end of this period the nation was in its full stride and had accomplished, from a military standpoint, what our enemy regarded as the impossible. The most important single thing, perhaps, in this record of accomplishment was the immediate passage by Congress of the draft law, without which it would have been impossible to have raised the men necessary for victory. In organizing, training, and supplying the vast numbers of men made available by the draft law, very many changes have been made necessary in the organization of the War Department and in the methods existing therein, which were inherited from the times of profound peace.

### INTERCHANGE OF STAFF PERSONNEL

Shortly after my installation as Chief of Staff I adopted the principle of interchange of personnel of the various staff corps of the War Department with men who had training in France, and in the application of this principle placed as the heads of various bureaus officers selected on account of their ability and experience in the system of warfare as conducted in France.

At this time also, I found that the divisions organized in our armies were still regarded as separate units, designated by different titles in accordance with their origin. This made three different kinds of divisions in the United States Army—the regular army, the national guard, and national army divisions. All these distinctions were abolished and the entire army consolidated into a United States Army, without regard to the source from which drawn. The source of supply for all replacements for the various elements of the Army, without regard to their origin, was drafted men; and the titles had no significance whatever and were a source of possible disturbance from the standpoint of military efficiency. There was, in fact, no actual difference between these divisions with respect to efficiency—all have done high-grade work from whatever source drawn. All have shown courage and capacity for quick absorption of the fundamentals of modern military training and irresistible dash and force in actual fighting.

### PROMOTION BY SELECTION

Accompanying this change, with your approval, I also introduced throughout the Army the principle of promotion by selection. In order to conform to its legal organization, officers who belonged to the regular army continued to be promoted by seniority as a matter

General Peyton C. March, Chief of Staff of the United States Army.

of record on paper, but the promotion of all officers, whether obtained from the regular army, national guard, or national army, in the consolidated United States Army was by selection, based entirely upon the merit of the officers as determined by boards organized in the different units and personally familiar with the work of the officers concerned. Without this principle the success which has been attained would have been

literally out of the question. The necessity for promotion by selection was at an early date profoundly impressed upon all officers in authority in the American Expeditionary Forces, and on my return to this country from France to become Chief of Staff the principle was adopted for the entire army.

RESULTS OF VISIT TO FRANCE

When I returned from France on March 1, 1918, I came back with the belief that the most fundamental necessity, both for the American Expeditionary Force and for the success of the Allies, was that the shipment of troops to France should be vastly increased and should have priority over everything else; and as this policy became effective a study was instituted looking to our putting in France, if that was possible, enough men to bring the war to a conclusion in the shortest period possible. After the study of the entire situation, including as accurate an estimate of the potential strength of our allies on the Western front and of the probable German strength as was possible, I came to the conclusion that the war might be brought to an end in 1919, provided we were able to land in France by June 30, of that year eighty American divisions of a strength of 3,360,000 men. On July 18, 1918, I submitted to you a formal memorandum, accompanied by a study of methods by which the men could be obtained, the supplies procured, and an analysis of the shipping which must be obtained in order to accomplish this very large military program. This was accomplished by an estimate of the cost of the proposed program.

FORMATION OF MILITARY PROGRAM

In this study I recommended to you the adoption, as the American program, of eighty divisions in France and eighteen at home by June 30, 1919, based on a total strength of the American army of 4,850,000 men. This was approved by you and by the President of the United States and adopted as our formal military program. To carry this program into effect required the adoption by Congress of a change in the draft age so as to include men between the ages of 18 and 45 years, and also created a deficiency over the enormous appropriations already made by Congress of some $7,000,000,000. The presentation of the program to Congress, accompanied by the statement that this increase in the Army, if laws were passed by Congress which would make it effective, would lead to success in 1919, produced prompt and favorable consideration by that body. Up to the signing of the armistice troops were being transported to France monthly in accordance with that program. The results speak for themselves.

Another vital requirement which was early impressed upon us in France was the organization of a General Staff for the American Expeditionary Force upon the lines which the experience of warfare by our allies had

Major-General J. T. Dickman and Staff Reviewing the Third Division of the American Expeditionary Force in France, August, 1918.

How the United States Doughboy was Equipped for Action.—Back View of the Heavy Pack, Including Steel Helmet, Rations, etc., of the American Infantryman in France. Most of This Equipment Was Discarded in the Moment of Action.

developed. It can be stated without qualification that the success of an army is impossible without a well-organized general staff.

ORGANIZATION OF GENERAL STAFF

On April 6, 1917, the date of the declaration of the war, the General Staff was organized under the provisions of the Act of June 3, 1916. Under this act the strength of the General Staff was limited to fifty-five officers, inclusive of the chief of the militia bureau and the chief of coast artillery, with the proviso that "not more than one-half of all the officers detailed in said corps shall at any time be stationed, or assigned to, or employed upon any duty in or near the District of Columbia." On the date referred to, under the limitations imposed by this act, the General Staff consisted of nineteen officers stationed in Washington and twenty-two stationed elsewhere. The task of preparing the plans for creating, mobilizing, organizing, training, equipping, transporting to Europe, and of maintaining and supplying there the present Army of the United States accordingly devolved upon a group of nineteen officers, who constituted the General Staff authorized by law to be stationed in the city of Washington. This personnel was, of course, ridiculously inadequate, not only for the gigantic task confronting them but for any general staff work commensurate with the responsibilities of that corps.

INCREASED BY ACT OF MAY 12

The Act of May 12, 1917, increased the General Staff to ninety-one and removed, for the period of the emergency only, the restrictions of the Act of June 3, 1916, relative to the number of these officers authorized to be stationed in Washington. This act was followed by the Act of May 18, 1917, which authorized the President "to provide the necessary officers, line and staff," for the forces raised under this act, and removed for the period of the emergency the legislative restrictions as to the strength and organization of the General Staff corps. On July 1, 1917, the personnel of the General Staff corps consisted of ninety-four officers, seventy-three of whom were detailed under the provisions of the Act of Congress approved May 12, 1917, and twenty-one under the provisions of the Act approved May 18, 1917. Of this number sixty-four were on duty in Washington. During the period covered by this report the personnel on duty with the general staff was increased until it reached a total of 1,222 officers, with an increase in the clerical force from 107 clerks to 2,884. The low ebb to which the General Staff had been brought immediately previous to the war by restrictive legislation is indicated by the fact that of the officers so detailed in Washington only four had previous General Staff experience; all of these were general officers. That the General Staff of the Army has been able, notwithstanding the legislative limitations heretofore imposed upon its organization and development, to develop and expand to meet with efficiency and promptitude the exacting and unprecedented demands and conditions that have confronted it bears eloquent testimony to the energy, resourcefulness and breadth of views of its personnel, as well as to the professional ability and the zeal of experts in every line of work who have in various capacities patriotically assisted and co-operated in carrying to its present state our tremendous military program.

REMOVAL OF RESTRICTIONS ADVISED

Modern war involves the co-ordination and control of activities of a scope and magnitude hitherto not conceived of and requires on the part of the General Staff a thorough study and knowledge of problems of construction, transportation, shipping, labor, manufacture, and finance, and demands skill and service comparable to that of the foremost experts in these lines of endeavor. It is now evident to everybody that present legislative restrictions upon the organization of the General Staff should be removed, and its organization based upon a broad conception of its duties.

During the year, the most important in the history of the country both from a military and civil standpoint, there have been four heads of the General Staff; Maj. Gen. Hugh L. Scott, from the outbreak of the war until his retirement, Sept. 22, 1917: Gen. Tasker H. Bliss, from that date until May 19, 1918: Maj. Gen. Biddle, acting Chief of Staff at periods during the absence of Gen. Bliss in France, from Oct. 29, 1917, to Dec. 16, 1917, and from Jan. 9, 1918, to March

3, 1918. I assumed the duties of acting Chief of Staff on March 4, 1918, became Chief of Staff May 20, 1918, and have continued on that duty since.

CERTAIN REGULATIONS "OUT OF DATE"

It was evident as the war progressed that the General Staff organization and its regulations were not only unsuited to the duties and responsibilities confronting it, but were wholly out of date and were not suited to any general staff organization. Successive revisions of the orders under which the General Staff was acting were made as events demanded, until the experience of the year crystalized the organization of the General Staff into that set forth in General Order

First American Woman to Be Decorated by the French Government.—Mrs. Mary Hatch Willard, Chairman of the American Allied Co-operative Committee, Being Entertained by Italian and American Aviators on a Visit to the Italian Front in 1918.

No. 80 of the War Department. This order divides the work of the General Staff into four primary divisions: 1, Operations; 2, Purchase, Storage, and Traffic; 3, Military Intelligence; 4, War Plans. Each of these divisions is under the direction of a director, who is assistant Chief of Staff and is a general officer.

THE OPERATIONS DIVISION

The operations division is under the charge of Maj.-Gen. Henry Jervey, United States Army, as director of operations and assistant Chief of Staff. This division is a consolidation of the former operations committee and equipment committee which pertained to the War College under the previous organization. The operations division has had charge of the increase in the personnel of the Army during the year. On June 30, 1917, the regular army consisted of 250,357 officers and enlisted men. On Aug. 5, 1917, 379,323 officers and men of the national guard were drafted into the federal service. There were a few special drafts of small numbers of national guardsmen into the federal service after August 5, 1917. During the period covered by this report this division handled the calls into service of men obtained under the draft, the organization of these men into divisions and units necessary for the army, and turned over for shipment overseas up to Nov. 8, 1918, 2,047,667 men.

The grand total of men in the Army from returns for the period ending Oct. 15 is 3,624,774. The force was organized into divisions, the proper proportion of corps, army, and service of supply troops, and of replacement camps and training centers for infantry, field artillery, and machine guns in the United States. Central officers' training schools were organized at each of the replacement camps. Replacement camps and training centers for the various staff departments were also organized. Development battalions were organized at all division camps and large posts and camps for the purpose of developing men of poor physique and the instruction of illiterates and non-English-speaking men of the draft. During the fiscal year 5,377,468 officers and men were moved by railroad to and from the camps.

The operations division has during the year also

handled all matters connected with the adoption of new types of equipment, fixing allowances for various units, the preparation of tables of equipment for them, and the distribution and issue of equipment, and the determination of priorities of such issue.

It has supervised and studied the needs of camps and construction work therein, and this work in general has been characterized by marked ability and devotion to duty.

PURCHASE, STORAGE AND TRAFFIC DIVISION

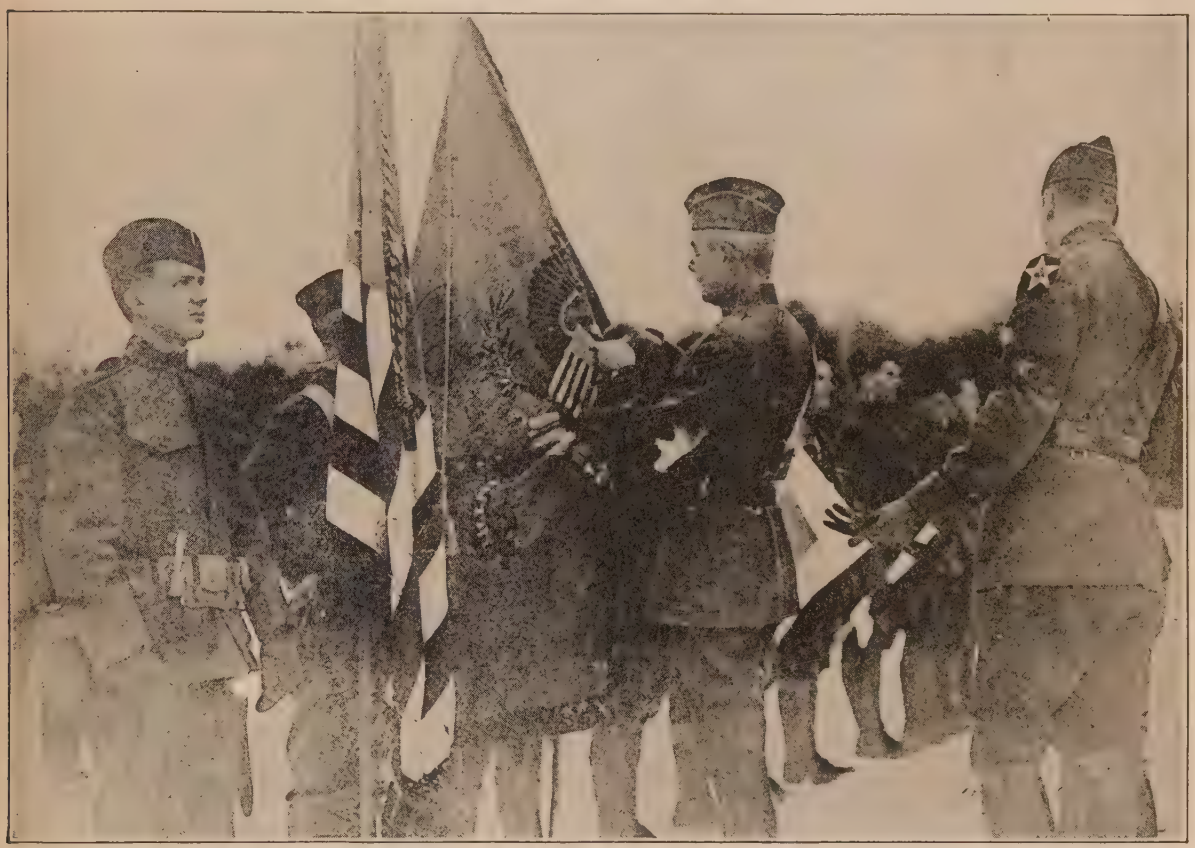
The division of purchase, storage, and traffic is under the charge of Maj.-Gen. George W. Goethals, United States Army, as assistant Chief of Staff and director of purchase, storage and traffic. This division was organized by merging divisions previously created, and which had been called "storage and traffic" and "purchase and supply." The new division thus organized was subdivided into embarkation service, storage, inland traffic service, and purchase and supply branch.

Embarkation—At the outbreak of the war the quartermaster's department had charge of the transportation of troops and supplies and continued to exercise these functions until Aug. 4, 1917, when they were transferred to a separate division of the General Staff, specially created for the purpose, and designated as the embarkation service. As already noted, this was subsequently merged with the storage and traffic division.

Two primary ports of embarkation were established, one with headquarters at Hoboken, N. J., and the other at Newport News, Va., each under the command of a general officer.

USE OF HOBOKEN PIERS

The quartermaster's department was operating a service to Panama from New York, but with the shipment of troops to France a new condition arose which was met only in part by taking over the Hoboken piers, formerly owned by the Hamburg-American and North German Lloyd Steamship companies, and the magnitude of the undertaking necessitated additional facilities. The situation at New York is complicated by the large amount of general shipping using the port, the diversified interests, even those of the Government, and the complicated jurisdiction. An effort was made to bring about such a consolidation and unification as to secure greater co-operation with increased efficiency. To this end the War Board for the port of New York was established in November, 1917. It was vested with full power and authority to make rules and regulations for operating the facilities of the port, to determine priorities, and to do what was necessary to provide for the prompt and economical dispatch of the business of the government in and about the port. Irving T. Bush was selected as the board's representative, with the title of chief executive officer. In addition to rep-



Unique Decoration of a United States Regimental Flag,—Brigadier-General Chas. E. Kilbourne Decorating the Colors of the Ninth United States Infantry, Second Division, With the Distinguished Service Cross, at Bendorf, Germany.

resenting the board, he was to arrange for the cooperative use of piers, warehouses, lighterage, terminals, railroads, trucking, and all other transportation facilities in and about the port.

In addition the need was felt for having a shipping expert closely associated with the embarkation service, familiar with the facilities at various ports, so that he could properly assign ships, select ships for the cargo to be moved, and arrange for their loading. Joseph T. Lilly was selected for this work and appointed director of embarkation.

### CARGO SHIPS TAKEN OVER

In February, 1918, the available cargo ships were not sufficient to carry the supplies needed for maintaining the troops overseas. To secure the requisite additional tonnage necessitated taking ships from the existing trade groups and determining from what imports and exports they could best be spared without interference with those which were absolutely necessary. This brought about a new situation which could be handled only by those having a knowledge of the trades as well as the characteristics of various ships serving them, since some of them were suitable for war department needs and some were not. It had happened that an advantageous exchange of ships could have been made with the Allies by which valuable time could have been saved in getting over cargo, but there was a lack of knowledge as well as lack of authority. The whole situation was gone over at a conference between the Secretary of War and the chairman of the Shipping Board, as a result of which the shipping control committee was created, consisting of P. A. S. Franklin, chairman: H. H. Raymond: and Sir Connop Guthrie, representative of the Allies' shipping interests. The allocation and distribution of available tonnage, as well as questions of exchange of ships, was vested in this committee. So far as the work of the War Department was concerned, the committee was charged with the loading and unloading cargo, coaling, supplies, repairs, and, except where vessels are commanded by the Navy, of inspection and manning. They also have charge of the management and operation of docks, piers, ships, loading and discharging facilities under the control of the department, or of any board, officers, or agency operating such facilities, together with the direction and management of minor craft to be used in connection with the handling of steamers and their cargoes in port. The amount of cargo shipped overseas, the efficiency of the loading, and the reduction

Band and Colors of the 6th Field Artillery, First Division, U. S. A., Passing Through the Streets of Hetzerath, Germany, on Their Way to the Rhine.

of the time of stay in the ports attest to the efficient manner in which the committee has operated, and it is not too much to say that they are to be largely credited with the results that have been accomplished.

FACILITIES AT NEWPORT NEWS

At Newport News the existing facilities were enlarged and increased under the direction of the commanding general of that port. At all the ports from which shipments are regularly made, a representative of the shipping-control committee, selected and appointed by the chairman and designated the director of shipping for the port, performed the functions vested in the committee.

The commanding general of embarkation has the management and control of all matters pertaining to the movement of troops, their discipline and inspection; guard and police for terminal facilities connected with the port; assigning passengers to ships, whether army transports, naval transports, or commercial liners; storage facilities, operation and upkeep of all docks, wharves, and terminal facilities, the payment of all rolls, rentals, and other accounts of the government in connection with the embarkation service.

NEW YORK PORT OF EMBARKATION

The port of embarkation at New York, in addition to the activities pertaining exclusively to the embarkation of troops, includes Camp Merritt, N. J., and Camp Mills, Long Island, where troops are sent for final inspection, deficiencies in clothing and equipment are made up, and they are held waiting the arrival of transports. This port has been in command of Maj.-Gen. David C. Shanks and Brig.-Gen. William V. Judson.

At Newport News the embarkation service included, in addition to wharves and the administration pertaining to the embarkation of troops, an animal embarkation depot; Camp Stewart, for use as a rest and embarkation camp; Camp Hill for organizing labor units for overseas service, military administration of storage and terminal facilities at Lambert's Point, Pig Point, and a signal corps depot at Morrison, all in Virginia. This port was in command of Brig.-Gen. Grote Hutcheson.

The Doughboy Homeward Bound with Colors Flying.—Registering on the Dock at St. Nazaire, France, Just Before Boarding the Transport for Home and Mother, as All the Homecoming Yanks were Required to Do.

Expeditionary depots were operated at Boston, Mass.; Philadelphia, Pa., and Baltimore, Md., primarily for the movement of freight. When cargo ships having accommodations for troops were loaded at these ports, troops for the available space were sent from the camps under the direction of the commanding general at Hoboken; similarly shipments of troops were made from Montreal, Canada, and Halifax, Nova Scotia, when practicable. Cargo shipments were also made from other ports on the Atlantic and Gulf coasts.

On May 25, 1918, the water transport branch of the quartermaster's department was transferred and made a part of the embarkation service.

SPEEDING UP TROOP SHIPMENTS

In April conditions abroad necessitated the speeding up shipments of troops, and brought to the service such transports as the British Government could spare for the purpose, which have been continued in use. The army transports are officered and manned by the Navy, as is the greater number of the cargo ships. The arrangements for transferring ships to naval control, as well as for convoys for troop and cargo ships, are handled through the chief of operations of the Navy, who has given every assistance. The way in which the work has been handled by the Navy is shown by the loss of no troopships which were under their protection on the eastbound trips.

Storage—Congestion at the ports was caused by the shipment direct to seaboard, as soon as procured and purchased, of all supplies for overseas use, and this was complicated by the fact that the Allies were pursuing the same practice; consequently confusion and delay were the result.

To prevent congestion it was necessary to provide the necessary reservoirs to absorb the shipments, so that storage facilities had to be secured or provided not only at the ports but at interior points at or near the centers of supply and production, to take care of the materials until they could be dispatched overseas.

STORAGE WAREHOUSE CONSTRUCTION

At the time that the division of storage and traffic was organized the engineer department had taken the necessary steps to secure or provide storage facilities in the vicinity of New York harbor and at Norfolk.

Storage warehouses for the quartermaster's department were under construction at Governor's island, Newark port terminals, and work had just been started at Norfolk.

Men of the 56th Coast Artillery Corps, U. S. A., Crowding the Decks of the Armored Cruiser "South Dakota" on Her Arrival at New York from Brest, France, January 18, 1919. This Cruiser Was One of the First Warships of the Navy Used to Bring the Boys Home From Europe.

Estimates were submitted for an appropriation of $150,000,000 for the purpose of creating storage and this was subsequently increased by an additional appropriation of $138,500,000. The amount of space that should be provided was fixed by the General Staff at one month's supply at the seaboard, one month's supply adjacent to the seaboard, and two months' supply at interior points.

The policy was adopted of acquiring all land necessary for storage purposes in fee and the construction of permanent buildings. The question of terminals at the seaboard had become a very vital one prior to the

war, and such facilities would be of value at the conclusion of hostilities, especially in view of the upbuilding of our merchant marine.

The limited amount of shipping available and the necessity of securing as rapid turn-around as possible led to the selection of Boston, New York, Philadelphia, Baltimore, Norfolk, and Charleston as the locations for the expeditionary depots at the seaboard. The Bush terminals were commandeered and plans prepared for an expeditionary depot at South Brooklyn in advance of the appropriation work to be begun as soon as money became available.

the warehouses; prepared specifications for such equipment, and effected purchases through the various procurement divisions of the several supply bureaus.

Under the appropriations secured for storage, work was begun on the expeditionary depots at Boston, New York, Norfolk, and Charleston. While plans were under consideration for the construction of warehouses and piers at Baltimore and New Orleans, additional facilities for the storage of explosives were constructed at Raritan, N. J.; Curtis Bay, Md., and Big Point, Va.; and an explosive depot is under construction at Charleston, S. C. Joint service depots for army sup-

War Brides from "Over There"—Some of the European Wives of American Soldiers, as They Arrived in New York in March, 1919, on the Army Transport "Plattsburg."

LETTING OF CONSTRUCTION CONTRACTS

The construction division had in the meantime been vested with sole authority in all matters pertaining to the design, engineering and letting of contracts and the supervision of building operations in connection with all army projects, and therefore the work has been carried on by that division. The storage branch employed engineers to keep in touch with the work and indicate changes. It also determined the types of freight-handling equipment required in the operation of

plies were constructed at Newark port terminal, Columbus, New Cumberland, South Schenectady, and Springfield. Additional quartermaster depots were provided at Baltimore, Chicago, Jeffersonville, Newport News (purchased), Philadelphia, Pittsburgh and St. Louis.

INLAND TRAFFIC SERVICE

The inland traffic service was established on Jan. 10, 1918. As the Government had taken over all of the railroads, the necessity for working in harmony with

the organization that was placed in charge was apparent, and the railroad administration was requested to recommend a competent traffic man to handle the work. This resulted in the selection and assignment of H. M. Adams as chief of the section. He in turn secured his expert assistants through the railroad administration.

At the time the section was formed approximately 15,000 carloads of war department property held in cars were congesting various Atlantic ports. Steps were taken which relieved this condition and brought about an orderly movement of the traffic when and in the quantities desired. The value of the inland traffic service was soon demonstrated and led to a reorganization, with authority to take over the transportation organizations of the various bureaus of the War Department, both at Washington and throughout the country, so that as now organized the chief of the inland traffic service exercises direct control of the transportation of troops, of the supplies of and for the various bureaus of the War Department and for the contractors working for the several bureaus. This control extends over the entire country through the medium of representatives stationed at various traffic centers.

Working in conjunction with the railroad administration has resulted in minimizing the burdens of the carriers. The work has been performed most efficiently. More than 5,000,000 troops have been moved from their homes, from one camp to another, and from camps to the points of embarkation within the period covered by this report.

Arrangements have been made by which this branch will take care of all express movements for the War Department as well as the tracing of the movements of all War Department property, including the contractors and others for the various bureaus.

PURCHASE AND SUPPLY BRANCH

The purchase and supply branch is organized into the following subsections: Supply program, purchase, production, finance, and emergency.

President Wilson Leading the Parade of Returned Soldiers in Washington on Thursday, February 27, 1919, during His Brief Appearance in the Capital on His First Return from France.

The supply program section receives the army program and compiles the requirements of the Army in terms of both articles of issue and commodities, which are furnished to the war industries board, shipping board, war trade board, and other government agencies. A comprehensive study of the requirement obligations of the United States and the Allies is in preparation, and a large number of outstanding questions of displacement have been disposed of and supplied.

The purchase section provides for the consolidation

of procurement of numerous articles of issue and raw material; has evolved a standardization in the form of contracts; prepared standard clauses for insertion in contracts to establish a standard purchase policy and legal procedure therewith; conducted investigation for reducing the number of types of articles purchased; leased and purchased all the real estate theretofore negotiated for by different departments, and supervised the commandeering and appraisal of all property for the use of the War Department. It also co-operated with the war industries board for clearances on behalf of the War Department.

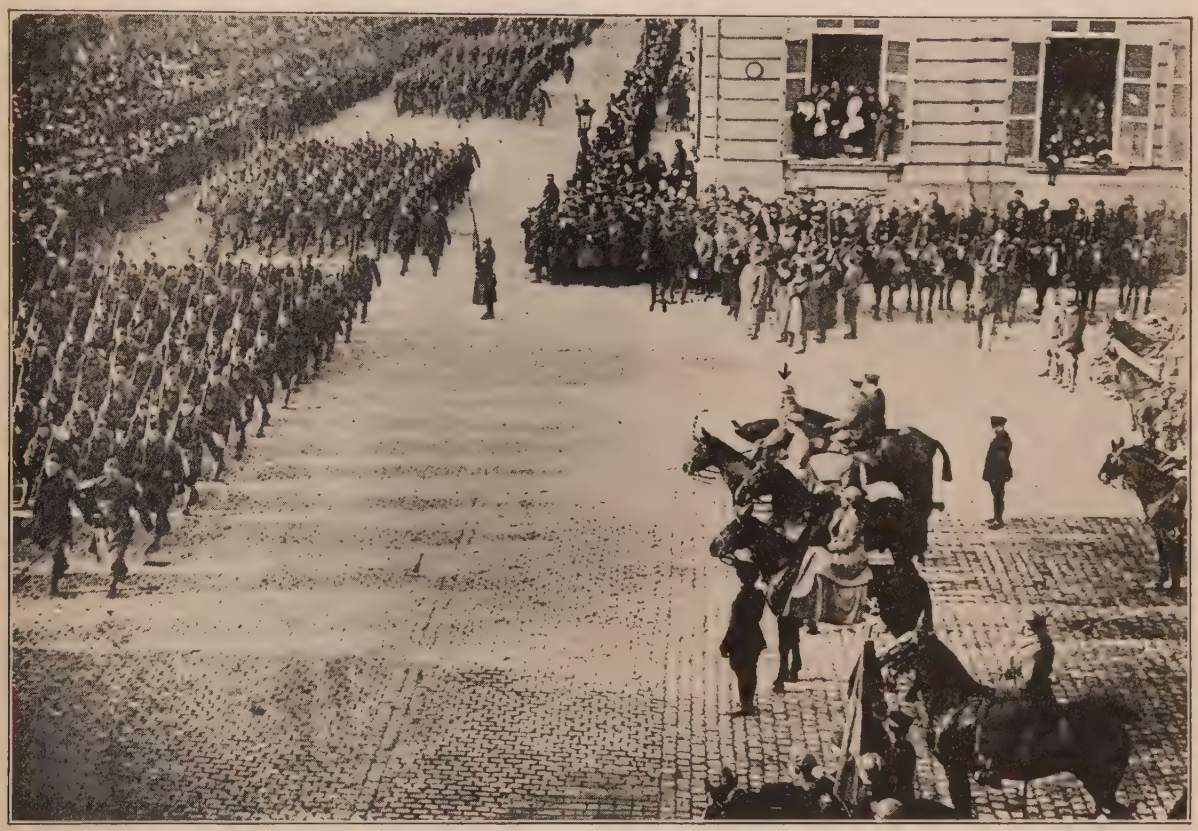
The Emergency section supervised the preparation of and issued standard specifications for paint, boxing, crating, and baling, and established a surplus inactive supply service to provide for the utilization or disposition of obsolete inactive surplus supplies.

The production section provides for the fulfillment of promised deliveries of products in accordance with approved schedules.

The finance section has standardized accounting, fiscal methods, and daily reports to show allotments, expenditures, and requisitions on the Treasury—in fact, a brief and complete statement in consolidated form of the daily financial operations of the War Department.

A liaison officer has been appointed for each of the supply agencies. These officers and their representatives form a centralized liaison organization under the direction of an officer of this branch, from which radiate lines of direct and speedy communication to each of the bureaus and corps. All contact with these supply agencies is carried on through this liaison organization, which furnishes an effective means of co-ordination.

In the administrative section of the division a branch was set up for industrial research, having for its object the saving of cargo space, and investigations were made with this end in view. Regulations were issued with reference to boxing, baling, and crating, and marking overseas shipments in co-operation with the various bureaus and outside experts. Special investigations were undertaken on the practicability of transporting boned beef to France instead of the complete carcass, as at present; the practicability of various substitutes for woolen cloth; the extent to which fiber containers can be substituted for metal containers. The work has been in charge of Dr. Arthur A. Hamerschlag.



American Troops Reviewed by the King and Queen of Belgium in the Main Square of Brussels, When the Belgian Rulers Made Their Triumphal Return to Their Capital After the Armistice. An Arrow Indicates King Albert.

MILITARY INTELLIGENCE DIVISION

The military intelligence division has as director Brig.-Gen. Marlborough Churchill, United States Army, assistant Chief of Staff. This division, which had been a branch, first of the war plans division and then of the executive division of the General Staff, was separated completely and made an independent division by general orders which reorganized the General Staff, thus putting the military intelligence division on a par with similar services of general staffs of other nations of the world.

The duties of the military intelligence division consist, in general in the organization of the intelligence service, positive and negative, including the collection and co-ordination of military information; the supervision of the department intelligence officers and intelligence officers at posts, stations, camps, and with commands in the field, in matters relating to military intelligence; the direction of counter-espionage work; the preparation of instruction in military intelligence work for the use of our forces; the consideration of questions of policy promulgated by the General Staff in all matters of military intelligence; the co-operation with intelligence branches of the general staffs of other countries; the supervision of the training of officers for intelligence duty; the obtaining and issuing of maps, and the disbursement of and accounting for intelligence funds.

CO-ORDINATION OF WORK

One of the important functions of the director of the military intelligence division is that of co-ordinating the work of this service with other intelligence agencies. Possible duplications of work and investigation by the State Department, Treasury Department, Department of Justice, Navy Department, War Trade Board, and the War Department are avoided or adjusted at weekly conferences held at the Department of Justice and attended by representatives of these departments, who consider matters of common interest. For a similar purpose the director of military intelligence is a member of the fire prevention committee, the war industries board, and the national research council.

For the purpose of securing close co-operation between the military intelligence services of the nations associated in the war, the British and French governments were requested by the United States to send officers to this country for liaison duty. These officers have been of great assistance in accomplishing this end, because of their knowledge of the details of intelligence work in Europe.

EIGHT SECTIONS ESTABLISHED

For the performance of the service for which the military intelligence division was developed, eight sections have been established, each dealing with its peculiar problems and working in close liaison with its fellows. They are as follows:

M. I. 1.—This is the administrative and co-ordinating section. Its duties are to assist the director in supervising the work of the various sections, to account for the intelligence funds, to keep accurate records and files of the correspondence and reports of the division, to select and commission officers for this division, and to hire and supervise personnel.

M. I. 2.—This is the positive intelligence section. It is the province of this section to gather combat information and supply it to our fighting forces. It gathers political information from all countries now in the war

Graves of American Aviators at Chierry, in the Department of the Aisne, France, Decorated by the French on All Saints' Day, 1918.

against the United States or likely to enter the war on the side of the enemy. It attempts to estimate the psychological situation in enemy or prospective enemy countries. Further than this, M. I. 2 develops plans for propaganda in foreign countries, prepares monographs on conditions in foreign countries, and keeps them up to date. It distributes this information to the proper authorities.

M. I. 3—The functions of this section consist in the organization, instruction, and supervision of the negative intelligence service within the military establishment; more specifically it protects the Army by the prevention and detection of enemy and disloyal activity among the military, including civilian personnel under military authority and in volunteer auxiliary organizations.

M. I. 7.—This section is charged with obtaining maps issued by foreign countries, with making maps of foreign countries, with keeping them up to date, with their reproduction by photography and lithography, and with the censorship of motion and still pictures of the United States forces at home and abroad.

CODE AND CIPHER SECTION

M. I. 8.—Code and cipher is handled by this section. Its duties are to code and decode messages, to prepare new code material, new code books and cipher systems, to train officers and military attachés in the use of the army code book and the official cipher, to decipher or decode messages submitted by various agents, and to test for secret writing. This section also receives

United States Quartermaster's Depot in a French Railroad Yard, Where Food and Clothing for the American Troops Were Unloaded and Handled in Enormous Quantities.

WATCH ON ENEMY AGENTS

M. I. 4.—The function of M. I. 4 is the collection, collation, and proper dissemination of information with respect to the activities of enemy agents and propagandists in this country, and movements outside the Army calculated to hinder the successful prosecution of the war.

M. I. 5.—This section is concerned with the maintenance of close correspondence with military attachés abroad, who collect information concerning the activities of enemy agents and other matters of military value. It digests all such information and places it in the proper channels for use.

M. I. 6.—The work of this section is to translate for the War Department the mass of material in foreign languages which it receives and which may be of value to the military organizations.

and transmits messages from and to military attachés and intelligence officers, and encodes and decodes those that require secrecy. The messages of the American Protective League are also handled here.

It may not be amiss to call attention to the enthusiastic co-operation which this division has consistently received from the various other intelligence agencies, civilian and others. The American Protective League, the Department of Justice, the Office of Naval Intelligence, the Customs, the War Trade Intelligence, have all co-operated in the heartiest manner with each and every effort of the military intelligence division. Indeed it is hardly saying too much to state that the success of the military intelligence division has in a very large measure been due to the loyal assistance which it has received at all times from the various agencies whose functions are similar to its own.

WAR PLANS DIVISION

The war plans division of the General Staff is under the direction of Brig.-Gen. Lytle Brown as director and assistant Chief of Staff. A very large volume of work has been accomplished by this division during the year. Exclusive of subjects pertaining to the historical branch, the inventions section and routine matters, 9,287 cases were handled by the division during the year.

These included studies as to policies for defense and the organization of the military forces in general as published in tables of organization, completed studies on the policy and plans for training the Army in general, training replacement troops, training cadres, training centers, training schools, schools for senior and staff officers, and plans for physical reconstruction and vocational training of wounded soldiers.

In addition, through the training section, the war plans division has handled numerous changes in army regulations and War Department orders made necessary by the present emergency, and has considered bills before Congress pertaining to the Army.

THE HISTORICAL BRANCH

The historical branch of the General Staff was organized March 5, 1918, to collect and compile the records pertaining to the war under the approved policy, and satisfactory progress is being made. To June 30, 1918, 67,022 photographs and 2,590 feet of motion picture film had been received.

The inventions section was organized April 16, 1918. This section has taken over from the different agencies of the Government the preliminary consideration of inventions of a military nature, with a view to placing before the proper bureaus of the War Department those having sufficient military value to warrant test and development at the expense of the Government. From April 16, 1918, to June 30, 1918, a total of 4,645 cases were handled, a number of which were of exceptional merit and have already been put to use.

The work of the inventions sections is not the development of ideas or inventions, but is to give them such preliminary study and consideration as to determine whether or not development should be pursued, and to forward them, if the consideration has been favorable, to such agencies as are particularly interested in the development and have the necessary funds for the purpose.

The Chief of Staff has as his principal assistant Maj.-Gen. Frank McIntyre, United States Army, who acts as executive officer for the General Staff and also for the Chief of Staff in his absence.

THE MORALE SECTION

Besides the General Staff divisions which have been referred to in the foregoing, there has been established

Miss Marcia Dunham, the Only American Woman Worker in Russia, Serving American and French Soldiers in a Y. M. C. A. Canteen in the Frozen North.

in the General Staff a morale section, under charge of Brig.-Gen. E. L. Munson, United States Army, which has for its object primarily the stimulation of morale throughout the Army, and maintaining a close connection and liaison with similar activities in civil life. This secton had only gotten fairly into operation before the signing of the armistice, but had already shown its value as a military asset.

Another important addition to the organization of the General Staff has been the establishment of a personnel section, under charge of Brig.-Gen. P. P. Bishop, United States Army. In this section has been consolidated the handling of appointments, promotions, and commissions of the entire official personnel of the United States Army. This section has proved to be of the greatest value and has come to stay.

American Officers at the Regimental Headquarters of the 339th Infantry, U. S. A., at Archangel, Russia. The Central Figure in the Front Row Is Colonel George E. Stewart, Commanding American Expeditionary Force.

### LOST MOTION REVEALED

A general survey of the staff activities of the War Department revealed to me clearly that there was a great deal of lost motion in the matters of procurement of supplies of all kinds and in its storage and transportation. All the different staff corps were competing with each other for standard articles of purchase, and no attempt was made by the department to centralize the supply of such standard articles. The same thing was true of storage—each one of the staff corps having its own system of storage with the most uneconomical organization possible. The same situation was true with reference to the personnel, all the different arms of the service seeking the same class of men, instead of the men themselves being assigned by selective process to the position in the Army for which they were best suited by their previous education and where they could do the most toward the common good.

In the matter of supplies the director of purchase, storage, and traffic was given authority by me to take over from the various bureaus of the War Department certain functions of procurement and storage, not interfering in any way with engineering or technical matters pertaining to specialized corps. This process was accompanied by the establishment of the office of director of finance, in whom has been vested the handling of certain portions of the appropriations which hitherto have been handled by heads of the staff corps.

### THE PERSONNEL SECTION

The same general idea is the basis of the establishment of the personnel section. Under the new system, if the head of a staff bureau desires the appointment

of officers possessing certain qualifications, instead of himself submitting names of men to be appointed officers, he calls upon personnel for the appointment of a number of men having the qualifications he has in mind, and the personnel section, from its classification of all men in the United States suitable for the work in question, is able to have commissioned for all the technical bureaus men with qualifications desired.

The signing of the armistice has interrupted the conclusion of the organization now under way for the consolidation of procurement and storage under the director of purchase, storage and traffic, but the principle is sound from the standpoint of organization and extremely economical in its results.

In addition to the changes indicated in the foregoing, a number of entirely new organizations have been created in the War Department. The handling of production and personnel pertaining to the gas service, which I found was scattered among four different staff bureaus, was consolidated in the chemical warfare service and placed under the charge of Maj.-Gen. William L. Sibert, United States Army, with a resulting marked increase in efficiency of the service itself.

A similar consolidation of all the motor transport facilities, which were scattered throughout the various supply bureaus of the Government, into a motor transport corps, under Brig.-Gen. Charles B. Drake, United States Army, has placed this important development of modern warfare under a sound organization.

### SIMILAR ORGANIZATIONS OVERSEAS

The organization of these services in the United States was accompanied by similar organizations in the American Expeditionary Force in France.

The supply of officers for the very large military program has been throughout one of the most important problems which confronted the General Staff. I have already indicated in the statement of the functions of the operations division of the General Staff the organization of central training camps for officers throughout the United States. When, however, we embarked upon the final program of placing eighty divisions in France and eighteen at home by June 30, 1919, which involved an army of approximately 4,800,000, the problem of the supply of officers became so serious that an understanding was obtained with the great mass of educational institutions throughout the United States, resulting in the development of the Student Army Training Corps. This scheme absorbed for military purposes the academic plants of some 518 colleges and universities throughout the country, and for vocational training in the Army embraced some eighty more. This corps was put under the charge of Brig.-Gen. Robert I. Rees, United States Army, and in its development we have had the energetic co-operation of college presidents and responsible college authorities throughout the entire United States. At the same time, in order to increase the supply of officers, the course at West Point was cut down to one year's intensive training, with the idea of placing at the disposal of the Government 1,000 officers a year graduated from that extremely efficient plant, rather than the graduation of about 200, which had been the case previously throughout the war.

### AIR SERVICE AND SIGNAL CORPS

The separation of the Air Service from the Signal Corps, under the provisions of the Overman bill, and the establishment of a bureau of military aeronautics, under Maj.-Gen. William L. Kenly, United States Army, and of a bureau of aircraft production, under John D. Ryan, marked an extremely important step forward in the development of this portion of the military establishment. The armistice closes out this matter with the two branches of the Air Service in a state of marked efficiency and establishes unquestionably the necessity for the permanent separation of the Air Service from the Signal Corps in the reorganization of the Army.

During this period another new agency created in the War Department by executive order was the office of the chief of field artillery. This office has been filled by Maj.-Gen. William J. Snow, United States Army. This establishment was accompanied by the creation in the American Expeditionary Force in France of the office of chief of field artillery on General Pershing's staff, having similar relations to all the artillery of the Expeditionary Force which the chief of field artillery has toward the mobile artillery at home. The work of this office has been accompanied by a marked increase in the efficiency of the training system in the various field artillery camps, and the office itself has proved to be of distinct value.

### PLAN FOR ARMY REORGANIZATION

I have directed the divisions of the General Staff concerned to study and submit for your consideration a plan for the reorganization of our army, which will take advantage of our experience in this war, which has brought about many changes in organization of all arms of the service and has developed new arms not known when the war started. The air service, the tank corps, the development of heavy mobile artillery, the proper organization of divisions, corps, and armies, all will be set forth in the scheme which will be submitted to you with the recommendation that it be transmitted for the consideration of Congress.

This historical section of the General Staff, which has been organized for the purpose of digesting all information concerning the operations of all American forces, will in due process of time be able to completely summarize the work of the American Expeditionary Force in France, but at this time it has been out of the question for a complete statement of our operations to be more than indicated. I have therefore had prepared a chronology of the major American operations in France, covering the period from the first occupation of a sector of the line by American troops in April, 1918, to the time of the armistice, which is appended hereto as a matter of historical interest.

### AMERICA'S PRIDE IN HER ARMIES

The conduct of the American troops in France, their progressive development in military experience and ability, the fine staff work, and the modesty and gallantry of the individual soldier are a matter of pride to all Americans. General Pershing and his command have earned the thanks of the American people.

The work of General Tasker H. Bliss as military representative of the War Department with the American section of the Supreme War Council at Versailles has been of the greatest value to the War Department.

I cannot close this report without making of record the appreciation of the War Department of the work of the many trained and patriotic officers of the Army whom the destiny of war did not call to France. These officers, forced to remain behind in the United States by the imperative necessity of having trained men to keep the machine moving, have kept up their work with such intelligence, zeal, and devotion to duty as to show a high order of patriotism. The officers and men who have not been able on account of the armistice to be transported to France deserve also, with their comrades in France, the thanks of the American people.

P. C. MARCH,
*General, Chief of Staff, U. S. A.*

# Official Chronology of American Operations in France

## CHAPTER IX

(FROM REPORT OF THE CHIEF OF STAFF, GENERAL PEYTON C. MARCH, U. S. A.)

**April 28-29, 1918**—A sector in the vicinity of Breteuil, northwest of Montdidier, was occupied by the First Division.

**May 28**—Cantigny was captured by the First Division. A detachment of our troops, reinforced by French artillery, successfully attacked the enemy on a front of about 2,200 yards. We occupied Cantigny, captured some 200 prisoners and inflicted severe losses on the enemy.

**June 10**—The Second Division attacked in Bois de Belleau, advancing the line 900 yards on a front of one and one-half miles, capturing 300 prisoners, thirty machine guns, four trench mortars, and stores of small arms, ammunition, and equipment. Held all of Hill 204 down to the village on the northeast slope, thus preventing the enemy from concentrating his forces in the northern part of Chateau Thierry.

**June 11**—The Second Division continued its advance in the Bois de Belleau, capturing more prisoners and machine guns and two 77-millimeter field pieces. Our aviators executed their first bombing raid, dropping numerous bombs on the railway station at Dommary-Barrancourt, northwest of Metz. All of our planes returned in safety. The artillery of the Second Division shelled the enemy in their areas, preventing concentration near Torcy, Monthiers, Hill 128, and LaGonetrie Farm. It discovered and dispersed a group of 210 machine guns in the wood south of Etrepilly. The Second Division captured the last of the German positions in the Bois de Belleau, taking fifty prisoners, machine guns, and trench mortars.

**July 18**—French and American troops advanced under the cover of a heavy storm on the front between Soissons and Chateau Thierry. The greatest advance was in the northern part of the sector, where a depth of five miles was attained, and we reached the heights southwest of Soissons, dominating the railroad and highways.

**July 24**—The advance of the Franco-American forces continued and in the evening the line ran east of Buzancy to Tigny, to Hartennes, Grand Rozoy, Ouichy-le-Chateau Armentières, Coincy, Courpoil, and then joined the old line at Jaulgonne. West of Reims, Marfaux was retaken and the line ran from Aubilly, through Mezy, and joined the old line at Coulommes.

**July 25**—The line ran from the Ourcq to the Marne, where the allied troops advanced six kilometers in the center and three to four kilometers on the flanks. The line in the evening ran from Armentières to Bruyères, the eastern edge of the Bois de la Tournelle, the eastern edge of Beuvardes, the eastern edge of LeCharnel, the crossroads at Gros Chene, La Boulangere, the northern edge of Treloup, Chassins.

**July 26**—The line ran: Nanteuil, Notre Dame, Hill 123, Hill 118, La Misere, Hill 100, southwestern part of Bois de la Tournelle, Hill 111, Le Charnel. Hard fighting continued all day and the French and Americans steadily advanced on Fere.

**July 27**—The Forty-second Division tried to cross the Ourcq, but was driven back by heavy artillery fire.

**July 28**—The Forty-second Division renewed the assault, crossed the river, and after vigorous fighting took Seringes-et-Nesles, Nesles, and Sergy. The Twenty-eighth Division held the line about one kilometer north of the Ourcq. During the day slow progress was made, the enemy slowly falling back after bitter rear-guard action.

**July 29**—Franco-American troops advanced three kilometers from Ouichy to Villers Agron and Bougneux. Sapony, Seringes, Nesles, and Gierges were included within our lines.

**July 30**—Our pressure continued on the right bank of the Ourcq. The railroad station at Fere and Cayenne Farm remained in our possession. We lost Seringes-et-Nesles, but reoccupied Sergy, Hill 312, and the woods eight kilometers north of Roncheres.

**July 31**—The Twenty-eighth Division retook Seringes-et-Nesles. The Thirty-second Division attacked in Crimpettes Woods with success; the woods were taken, and troops advanced to Cierges. German counter-attacks were brilliantly repulsed with the bayonet, and an immense amount of material and equipment was taken from the enemy.

**Aug. 3**—After continuous fighting late in the evening Soissons was taken, and a line extending along the Vesle to between Braisne and Bazoches was being consolidated. South of the Aisne our troops drove back the enemy rearguard. Acting with the Fourth Division, the Thirty-second Division reached a line from Ville Savoye to a point just north of St. Gilles.

**Aug. 4**—A large enemy patrol attacked in the vicinity of Coulees, but was driven off by a combat group of the Fifth Division, which had been reinforced. Our troops were very active in patrolling, having sent out over seven reconnaissance, combat and ambush patrols. The Thirty-second Division took Fismes. In an eight-day battle this division forced the passage of the Ourcq, took prisoners from six enemy divisions, met, routed and decimated a crack division of the Prussian guards, a Bavarian division and one other enemy division, and drove the enemy line back for sixteen kilometers.

**Aug. 6**—The Twenty-eighth Division launched an attack, the objective of which was the north bank of the Vesle. The attack was met by exceedingly heavy machine gun and artillery fire. On the right our

troops succeeded in crossing the river and advancing to the highway which runs from Reims to Soissons. On the left the advance was held up by the enemy's fire.

**Aug. 7**—The units on the left advanced across the river and occupied the railroad lines on the north bank. The casualties resulting from this operation were considerable. A violent enemy counter-attack was completely repulsed and a number of prisoners and machine guns were left in our hands.

**Aug. 8**—As a result of successful operations in the evening eleven companies of infantry and some machine gun detachments of the Twenty-eighth Division reached the north bank of the Vesle.

**Aug. 10**—The Twenty-eighth Division launched an attack in Fismette. A creeping barrage moved ahead of them. They made some progress, but were soon exposing to flanking fire from both the east and the west, and were forced to fall back into Fismette. The position here was very difficult. Flanking machine gun fire came from both sides and heavy casualties were reported. A box barrage was placed around the town and ammunition was sent up. The town was held by one battalion, with one machine gun platoon, which received orders to hold the position at all costs.

**Aug. 17**—After strong artillery preparation the infantry of the Fifth Division captured the village of Frapelle and consolidated the lines north of the road running into the town from the southeast.

**Aug. 19**—The enemy continued shelling Frapelle positions and the artillery of the Fifth Division replied actively.

**Aug. 21**—The Fifth Division repulsed hostile attack with heavy loss to the enemy and with no casualties to ourselves. The Thirty-second Division, acting with the Tenth French army, advanced to and held Juvigny. The Seventy-seventh Division cleared the small wood between the Vesle and the railroad west of Chateau du Diable.

**Sept. 3**—During the five days prior to September 3 the Thirty-second Division made daily advances against the enemy, gaining six kilometers through very difficult terrain and against violent opposition. It captured eleven officers and 920 enlisted men. A large amount of guns and munitions was captured. A patrol of the Seventy-seventh Division penetrated to Bazoches.

**Sept. 5**—French and American units advanced in the Oise-Reims area as far as Conde. Strong patrols of the Seventy-seventh Division were pushed forward north of the Vesle and were encountered by machine gun resistance. Our casualties were slight. The Twenty-eighth Division crossed the Vesle in force and pursued the enemy to the north.

**Sept. 6**—The artillery of the Twenty-eighth Division directed harassing and destructive fire on the Aisne bridges, while the enemy harassed the villages in our rear areas, using a great number of gas shells.

**Sept. 7**—The Twenty-eighth Division repulsed two enemy counter-attacks. The Seventy-seventh Division drove the enemy out of LaCendriere Farm and passed the Aisne canal.

**Sept. 12**—After four hours' bombardment our troops advanced on the south and west flanks of the St. Mihiel salient at 5 a. m. By 7:30 a. m. the forces operating on the south had reached the southern edge of the Bois Juli, the Quart de Reserve, and the northern edge of the Bois de Mort Mare. By noon they had reached Essey and Vieville, and the army operating in the difficult ground in the west had captured Les Eparges. At 6 p. m. the troops had reached a point one kilometer east of Senzey and had taken St. Remy and Combres. During the night the troops on the western flank of the salient advanced five miles in five hours, reaching Vigneulles by 3 a. m.

**Sept. 14**—There was general advance along the entire line, and the American army established itself on the following front: Menheulles, Fresnes, Pintheville, St. Hilaire, Doncourt, northeast of Woel, south end of the Etang de Lachaussee, Vandieres, and across the Moselle at Champey.

**Sept. 17**—American troops advanced along the Moselle within 300 yards of Paguy.

**Sept. 18**—The Twenty-sixth Division made two raids during the night. One against St. Hilaire was without result, as the enemy had retired; the other against the Bois de Warville resulted in the capture of fifteen prisoners.

**Sept. 19**—The Ninety-second Division repulsed an attempted enemy raid in the St. Die sector.

**Sept. 20**—The Ninety-second Division repulsed two enemy raids in the region of Lesseux.

**Sept. 26**—The First Army attacked northwest of Verdun on a front of twenty miles and penetrated to an average depth of seven miles.

**Sept. 27**—The 107th Regiment of the Twenty-seventh Division attacked east of Bellicourt and attained its objectives.

**Sept. 29**—In the Argonne the Americans met with furious resistance. Their losses were heavy and they were unable to do more than hold their own.

**Sept. 30**—The Twenty-seventh and Thirtieth Divisions took prisoners north of St. Quentin, totaling 210 officers and more than 1,200 men.

**Oct. 1**—The Twenty-eighth Division repulsed a hostile counter-attack on the entire divisional front in the Aire valley, with very heavy losses to the enemy.

**Oct. 3**—The Twenty-eighth Division, operating with the Fourth French Army, made an advance of two kilometers, reaching Medeah Farm in the afternoon. In the evening the Second Division advanced about three kilometers and their line ran from Medeah Farm southwest along the road to Blanc Mont. They captured 1,000 prisoners and casualties were estimated at 500.

**Oct. 4**—The First Division attacked on both sides of Exermont and made progress in spite of strong opposition from the enemy, who resisted with machine guns in organized opposition. Approximately 300 prisoners were taken and our casualties were 1,500.

**Oct. 5**—The First Division captured Ariétal farm, and the line was advanced 400 yards beyond. The Sixth Division repulsed a large enemy raid on Sondernach.

**Oct. 7**—A brigade of the Eighty-second Division advanced seven kilometers, occupying Hill 223, north of Chatel Chéhéry; 46 prisoners were captured, including one officer. Our casualties were light. Later the enemy counter-attacked and reoccupied Hill 223, north of Chatel Chéhéry.

**Oct. 8**—The Fifty-ninth Brigade of the Thirtieth Division attacked at 5 a. m., over a front of 5,000 yards, gained all first objectives by 9 a. m., and second objectives by noon. Fifty officers, 1,500 men and four 101-millimeter guns were taken.

**Oct. 8-9**—The Second Corps advanced about seven miles on a front of 4,000 yards and captured about 2,000 prisoners and 30 guns.

**Oct. 9**—In spite of strong resistance the First Division advanced in the sector east of Flêville and captured 230 prisoners.

The Thirty-third Division, operating with the Seventeenth French Army Corps, attacked early in the morning north of Consenvoye and reached its final objective about 9 a. m. About 650 prisoners were taken.

**Oct. 10**—The First Corps reached Cornay-La-Besogne Ridge and passed Malassise farm, east of Grand Ham.

The Sixtieth Brigade of the Thirtieth Division advanced six kilometers, reaching the Selle River, and held the St. Benin-St. Souplet-La Haie-Menneresse line. Up to the evening of the 9th, 50 officers, 1,800 men and 32 guns were captured.

**Oct. 12**—The Fourth Division repulsed two counter-attacks by machine-gun fire, with severe loss to the enemy.

**Oct. 13**—An attack on Grandpré this morning met very heavy machine-gun fire, and troops of the Second Corps were finally forced to retire south of the Aire. A hostile counter-attack at 8 p. m. south of Landres-et-St. Georges was repulsed.

The Eighty-first Division repulsed an enemy raid in St. Die sector.

The Seventy-seventh Division took Grandprê.

**Oct. 17**—The Twenty-ninth Division advanced to the summit of Bois de la Grand Montagne, east of the Meuse.

The Forty-second Division took Côte de Châtillon.

The Second Battalion of the Seventy-sixth Division reached the northern edge of Bois des Loges, west of Champigneulle.

In an attack on a 4,000-yard front from St. Souplet to Molain our troops advanced 3,000 yards against very stiff resistance. All counter attacks repulsed. Prisoners taken were estimated at 2,500.

**Oct. 19**—The Thirtieth Division attacked with the British at dawn and advanced 2,000 yards. Prisoners captured since the morning of the 17th totaled 44 officers and over 1,500 men.

The Seventy-eighth Division pushed their lines forward to Bellejoyeuse farm and began to mop up the Bois des Loges.

**Oct. 21**—In attacks on the Bois des Rappes the Fifth Division met with stubborn resistance by machine guns, supported by artillery and infantry fire. It captured the entire position with 170 prisoners, including five officers. An enemy counter attack, supported by heavy artillery fire, was repulsed with heavy losses.

The Fifth and Third Divisions took Hill 297 and Bois des Rappes.

Attacking in the evening, the Eighty-ninth Division occupied the northern and eastern edge of the Bois de Bantheville.

**Oct. 23**—Troops of the Third Corps reached the ridge north of the village of Bantheville, taking 171 prisoners.

The Twenty-ninth Division captured the ridge of Bois d'Etrayes and Hill 361.

**Oct. 27**—The Seventy-eighth Division entered Bellejoyeuse farm, northeast of Grandpré, and found it unoccupied. The occupation of the right of way north and northwest of Grandpré was completed.

**Oct 30**—On October 30 patrols were active along the entire front of the Twenty-eighth Division. The Thirty-third Division, in the face of heavy artillery and machine-gun fire, north of Grandpré, advanced its lines and occupied the Bellejoyeuse farm. On October 30, 2,000 high explosive and gun shells fell in the vicinity of Fresnes. One of the divisional patrols captured five prisoners.

**Nov. 1**—The troops of the First Army captured Clery-le-Grand. North of Ancreville they took 53 additional prisoners and continued their advance into the Bois des Bantheville. During the night of November 1-2 the troops of the Thirty-seventh Division consolidated their positions and effected a crossing of the River Scheldt, confronted by enemy machine-gun and rifle fire. The Ninety-first Division, supported by artillery and machine-gun fire, rapidly advanced over six kilometers in spite of enemy artillery and machine-gun fire. The enemy was driven from the west bank of the Scheldt and at noon the heights northwest of Audenarde were taken.

**Nov. 2**—On the evening of November 2 the troops of the Seventy-eighth Division drove the enemy from the Bois des Loges and closely followed his retreat. The Ninety-second Division, in spite of machine-gun resistance, pushed forward and advanced the line three kilometers.

**Nov. 3**—The Ninety-first Division, in spite of active machine-gun resistance, forced their way towards the bank of the Scheldt in the vicinity of Eyne.

**Nov. 4**—On November 4 a brigade of the Seventy-ninth Division attacked an enemy sector, taking 81 prisoners and eight machine guns, encountering strong resistance and repulsing several counter attacks.

**Nov. 5**—On November 5 the troops of the Seventy-seventh Division engaged in severe fighting, overcame strong enemy resistance along the entire line. The artillery was active, firing on the enemy's retreating column. Harassing artillery fire was returned by the enemy. Aviation was active on both sides. The enemy flew over our front lines and delivered machine-gun fire on our advancing troops. Two enemy planes were brought down.

**Nov. 6**—Our troops of the First Corps continued their successful advance, forcing the enemy to retire. The towns of Flabas, Raucourt, Haracourt and Autrecourt were taken, and patrols pushed on as far as the Meuse. Large quantities of matériel were captured during the advance.

Following heavy bombardment on the enemy's divisions the troops of the Fifth Division attacked, rapidly overcoming the enemy's resistance, capturing Lion-devant-Dun, Murvaux, Fontaine and Vilosnes-sur-Meuse, taking more than 250 prisoners.

**Nov. 7**—The troops of the Second Division cleared the west bank of the Meuse of the remaining machine guns and snipers in the vicinity of Mouzon. The Fifth Division, supported by artillery fire, continued their advance despite the enemy's continued resistance, principally with machine guns. Most of the Artillery crossed to the east bank of the Meuse,

following in support of the Infantry. Additional prisoners were taken, including two officers and 132 men.

**Nov. 8**—The patrols of the Second Division crossed the Meuse south of Mouzon. The troops of the Thirty-third Division, aided by barrage fire, carried out a successful raid on Château Aulnois, capturing one officer and 22 men. Strong combat patrols were sent out from the lines of the Ninety-second Division (colored). Prisoners were captured and casualties inflicted on the enemy.

**Nov. 9**—On midnight of November 9 the patrols of the Fifth Division drove back the enemy, inflicting many casualties and capturing six prisoners. The troops consolidated and, despite stubborn resistance, principally from machine guns, drove the enemy from Bois du Canol and La Sentinelle and captured Brandeville. In these operations 47 prisoners, 125 machine guns, and other matériel were captured. A strong combat patrol was active along the entire front of the Thirty-third Division, meeting with heavy machine-gun resistance from the enemy, and a patrol of one company captured eight prisoners in the Bois de Warville. The troops of the Seventy-ninth Division advanced in a generally northeasterly direction, with the right flank in Bois de Damvillers. The Forty-second and units of the First seized the heights south of Sedan.

**Nov. 10**—The Thirty-third Division carried out a successful raid on Marcheville, occupying the town and taking 80 prisoners, including three officers. Strong patrols from the line engaged in sharp fighting. The Thirty-seventh Division, operating with the Thirty-fourth French Army Corps, attacked in order to force a crossing of the Scheldt. Violent enfilading machine-gun fire, heavy artillery, and the flooded condition of the terrain delayed the construction of bridges and crossings. In the face of continuous heavy artillery fire, supported by machine guns, the troops advanced about two kilometers. The Ninetieth Division advanced toward Baâlon, encountering no resistance. The Ninety-second Division reached Bois Frehaut and captured 710 prisoners.

**Nov. 11**—The Third Division advanced three kilometers east of Bréhéville. Despite increased resistance by machine-gun and artillery fire, the Fifth Division continued to advance, capturing 18 prisoners, three large-caliber guns, six minenwerfers, and considerable matériel. In accordance with the terms of the armistice, hostilities on the front of the American armies ceased at 11 a. m.

Home at Last—and the Girl He Left Behind Him.

# Getting the Army Overseas

## CHAPTER X

BY COMMANDER CHARLES C. GILL, U. S. N.

[Approved by Rear Admiral Albert Gleaves, Commander of the Cruiser and Transport Force, United States Atlantic Fleet—Publication Authorized by the Secretary of the Navy, Hon. Josephus Daniels.]

Previous to 1916 the idea of a United States overseas expeditionary force numbered by millions would have been generally regarded as a remote if not impossible contingency. Consequently no extensive peace-time preparations had been made for such an undertaking. The task of providing a transport fleet was, therefore, a pioneer work. Ships had to be obtained, officers and crews enrolled and trained. It was necessary to provide docks, storehouses, lighters and tugs, coaling equipment, repair facilities, and all the varied machinery for operating and maintaining a large transportation service. An efficient administrative organization had to be developed.

Such, in brief, was the problem confronting Rear Admiral Albert Gleaves, then Commander of the Destroyer Force of the Atlantic Fleet, when, on May 29, 1917, he received orders designating him Commander of United States Convoy Operations in the Atlantic in addition to his other duties.

The work of the Navy in connection with the transportation of troops to France constituted a distinct phase of the war. The attending political and military circumstances incident to the collapse of Russia, the critical situation on the western front, and the threat of the German submarine combined to make this phase of special significance. Throughout the year following the entry of the United States into the war the military and naval developments were such that the safe transportation across the Atlantic of troops and supplies became a problem of more and more pressing importance.

The United States Army in France was a decisive factor in obtaining speedy victory. The transportation of this army overseas under naval protection was, therefore, a major operation of first importance. A large share of this urgent mission devolved on the United States Navy, and its successful accomplishment in the face of great difficulties adds another page to the record of the service in keeping with its past history and traditions.

Much confusion of thought has existed as to just how the vast work of transporting a United States Army numbering 2,079,880 souls to Europe was accomplished. It is unfortunate that misinformation should have been disseminated respecting an operation in which the different organizations concerned performed their respective functions in utmost harmony and co-operation. All did their allotted parts splendidly and efficiently. All share in the satisfaction resulting from the successful accomplishment of a difficult and urgent undertaking.

At the time the United States entered the war the enormous toll of shipping gathered by the U-boats in the East Atlantic and the boast of Von Hindenburg that the submarine blockade of England would starve her out and win the war, indicated the seriousness of the naval situation in those waters at that time. Inasmuch as the principal field of British naval activities was the North Sea and English Channel, the task of breaking the U-boat blockade in the Atlantic naturally became the immediate mission of the United States Navy. The prompt dispatching of destroyers, yachts, and all other available craft of a type useful against the submarine to the East Atlantic, and the splendid work these vessels and others later sent to augment their strength did in cleaning up these waters of U-boat devastation is a matter of record, the importance of which in winning the war is conceded from all quarters. This was the first step in preparation for sending the United States Army overseas.

The next step was the development of the transport service and the convoy and escort system. In this work the Cruiser and Transport Force co-operated with the destroyers and other anti-submarine craft abroad. In addition, Great Britain, France, and Italy supplied troop ships. As would be expected from Great Britain's enormous merchant marine, she was able to supply the greatest carrying capacity. She had the ships ready for this use, and 48¼ per cent. of the American Army was transported in British steamers; 2½ per cent. were carried in French ships, and 3 per cent. in Italian. The remaining 46¼ per cent. were carried in United States

ships, and all but 2½ per cent. of these sailed in United States naval transports.

All the troops carried in United States ships were escorted by United States men-of-war; that is, cruisers, destroyers, converted yachts, and other anti-submarine craft. Also for the most part the troops carried in British, French, and Italian ships were given safe conduct through the danger zones by United States destroyers. Roughly, 82¾ per cent. of the maximum strength of the naval escorts provided incident to the transportation of United States troops across the Atlantic was supplied by the United States Navy, 14⅛ per cent. by the British Navy, and 3⅛ per cent. by the French Navy.

The splendid co-operation of the Army made this possible. The Army organized and developed an efficient system for loading and unloading the ships at the terminal ports. The navy transported the troops and safeguarded them en route.

On homeward-bound voyages, however, we were not so fortunate. In a measure this was due to the need of concentrating maximum naval escort protection on troop-laden convoys. Frequently this necessitated lighter escort for the ships returning, and it was on these homeward-bound vessels that the submarines scored their successes. The United States naval transports Antilles, President Lincoln, and Covington were

## Table Showing Total of United States Troops Transported and the Ships That Carried Them

**Prepared by Ensign WALTER LOGAN, U. S. N., Statistical Officer, Cruiser and Transport Force, United States Atlantic Fleet.**

| 1917. | Carried by United States Naval Transports | No. of United States Naval Transports Sailed | Carried by British Ships | Number of British Ships Sailed | Carried by British-Leased Italian Ships. | No. of British-Leased Italian Ships Sailed. | Carried by Other United States Ships. | Number of Other United States Ships Sailed | Carried by Other Ships (French, Italian, &c.) | Number of Other Ships Sailed (French, Italian, &c.) | Total United States Troops Transported | Total Ships Sailed | Percentage Carried by United States Naval Transports | Percentage Carried by British Ships | Percentage Carried by British-Leased Italian Ships | Percentage Carried by Other U. S. Ships | Percentage Carried by Other Ships | Under United States Naval Escort | Under British Naval Escort | Under French Naval Escort | Percentage Under U. S. Naval Escort | Percentage Under British Naval Escort | Percentage Under French Naval Escort |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| May | 1,035 | 3 | 508 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1,543 | 5 | 67 | 33 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 258 | 1,285 | 0 | 17 | 83 | 0 |
| June | 8,855 | 9 | 1,080 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 5,156 | 8 | 0 | 0 | 15,091 | 18 | 59 | 6½ | 0 | 34½ | 0 | 15,032 | 59 | 0 | 99 | 1 | 0 |
| July | 5,281 | 8 | 7,290 | 6 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 296 | 1 | 12,876 | 15 | 41 | 57 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 10,063 | 2,566 | 247 | 78½ | 20 | 1½ |
| Aug. | 4,310 | 6 | 11,890 | 7 | 0 | 0 | 1,109 | 2 | 2,094 | 2 | 19,403 | 17 | 22 | 61 | 0 | 6 | 11 | 12,259 | 4,129 | 3,015 | 63 | 21 | 16 |
| Sep. | 13,917 | 15 | 19,671 | 12 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 33,588 | 27 | 41 | 59 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 17,432 | 12,898 | 3,258 | 51½ | 39 | 9½ |
| Oct. | 25,098 | 14 | 13,013 | 9 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1,916 | 1 | 40,027 | 24 | 62½ | 32½ | 0 | 0 | 5 | 36,893 | 3,134 | 0 | 92½ | 7½ | 0 |
| Nov. | 9,088 | 9 | 10,669 | 7 | 0 | 0 | 1,235 | 2 | 1,830 | 1 | 23,722 | 19 | 41½ | 46 | 0 | 4½ | 8¼ | 13,246 | 10,476 | 0 | 56½ | 43½ | 0 |
| Dec. | 37,445 | 16 | 11,370 | 9 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 48,815 | 25 | 77 | 23 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 42,783 | 6,032 | 0 | 87½ | 12½ | 0 |
| 1918. | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| Jan. | 25,662 | 16 | 20,514 | 9 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 1,879 | 1 | 48,055 | 26 | 53 | 42½ | 0 | 0 | 4½ | 35,827 | 12,228 | 0 | 75 | 25 | 0 |
| Feb. | 39,977 | 17 | 9,259 | 4 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 1 | 49,239 | 22 | 81½ | 18½ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 48,795 | 444 | 0 | 99 | 1 | 0 |
| Mar. | 56,278 | 26 | 27,626 | 14 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 1,895 | 4 | 85,710 | 45 | 65 | 33 | 0 | 0 | 2 | 73,095 | 12,615 | 0 | 85 | 15 | 0 |
| Apr. | 67,553 | 27 | 47,362 | 20 | 2,626 | 2 | 737 | 11 | 1,794 | 3 | 120,072 | 63 | 56 | 39½ | 2 | 1 | 1½ | 91,308 | 28,764 | 0 | 75½ | 24½ | 0 |
| May | 96,278 | 33 | 133,795 | 75 | 12,127 | 6 | 3,288 | 22 | 2,231 | 5 | 247,714 | 141 | 39 | 53½ | 5 | 1½ | 1 | 220,463 | 26,652 | 599 | 88½ | 11 | ½ |
| June | 115,256 | 36 | 140,172 | 70 | 14,465 | 7 | 6,003 | 11 | 4,538 | 4 | 280,434 | 128 | 41¼ | 50 | 5 | 2¼ | 1½ | 244,631 | 30,912 | 4,891 | 87½ | 11 | 1½ |
| July | 108,445 | 33 | 175,526 | 89 | 11,502 | 7 | 4,020 | 13 | 11,866 | 5 | 311,359 | 147 | 35 | 56½ | 3½ | 1 | 4 | 258,332 | 46,329 | 6,698 | 83 | 15 | 2 |
| Aug. | 116,401 | 36 | 137,745 | 74 | 9,376 | 6 | 8,495 | 15 | 14,358 | 9 | 286,375 | 140 | 41 | 48 | 3 | 3 | 5 | 237,920 | 22,572 | 25,883 | 83 | 8 | 9 |
| Sep. | 107,025 | 35 | 134,576 | 69 | 7,052 | 4 | 5,511 | 18 | 5,506 | 3 | 259,670 | 129 | 41 | 52 | 3 | 2 | 2 | 224,298 | 20,681 | 14,691 | 86 | 8 | 6 |
| Oct. | 72,092 | 48 | 94,214 | 57 | 11,098 | 7 | 4,709 | 17 | 1,950 | 5 | 184,063 | 127 | 39 | 51 | 6 | 3 | 1 | 130,274 | 51,454 | 2,335 | 70½ | 28½ | 1 |
| To Nov. 11. | 1,101 | 9 | 10,698 | 12 | 0 | 0 | 235 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 12,124 | 24 | 10 | 88 | 0 | 2 | 0 | 7,451 | 4,673 | 0 | 61¾ | 38¼ | 0 |
| Total | 912,082 | 391 | 1,006,987 | 546 | 68,246 | 39 | 40,499 | 123 | 52,066 | 43 | 2,079,880 | 1,142 | 43¾ | 48¼ | 3 | 2½ | 2½ | 1,720,360 | 297,903 | 61,617 | 82¾ | 14½ | 3⅛ |

The declaration of war with Germany found the United States without a transport fleet and without a merchant marine capable of supplying ships for transporting a large military expedition. It is a remarkable and noteworthy example of American ingenuity and zeal that, starting with almost nothing at the beginning of the war, a United States naval transport service was built up which carried almost a million soldiers to Europe. In spite of the determined efforts of submarines to prevent it this was accomplished without the loss of a single soldier by the hand of the enemy.

torpedoed and sunk. The Finland and Mount Vernon were torpedoed, but were able to reach port for repairs. The United States armored cruiser San Diego struck a mine laid by a German submarine and was sunk.

The service was not without hazard, as is shown by the fact that more than half of the war casualties in the United States Navy were suffered in the Cruiser and Transport Force. Nor were enemy guns and torpedoes the only menace—danger from fire and internal damage was enhanced by the machinations of enemy secret agents, and the likelihood of collision was

increased by the necessity of manoeuvring without lights in convoy formation vessels manned for the most part by inexperienced crews.

In connection with the operation of the ships special mention should be made of the volunteer and reserve personnel, particularly the officers and men from the United States merchant marine service who enrolled in the Navy for the period of the war. These rendered splendid service, and the interests of the United States for the future require that the cordial relations of cooperation established between the merchant marine and the Navy be maintained. In the larger transports it was the policy of the Department to have the captains, executive officers, chief engineers, gunnery officers, and senior supply officers detailed from the regular Navy, and the remainder of the officer complement filled from the various classes of reserve and volunteer officers. This worked very well, and too much credit cannot be given the latter for the loyal service rendered and the aptitude shown in adapting themselves to naval war conditions.

In special cases it was possible, after a certain amount of experience had been gained, to relieve heads of departments, originally assignments of regular naval officers, by reserve officers. For example, in the case of the Harrisburg, Louisville, Plattsburg, Manchuria, Mongolia, and Finland, after a few trips the reserve captains took over command of the ships. Credit is also due the navy yards, provision and clothing depots, and the ship repair plants which supplemented the navy yards in performing the work incident to making ready and keeping in service this large United States Naval Cruiser and Transport Force, commanded by Rear Admiral Gleaves, and numbering at the time of the armistice twenty-four cruisers and forty-two transports, manned, exclusive of troops carried, by about 3,000 officers and 42,000 men.

On Guard in the Argonne, Northwest of Verdun.—A Vigilant American Sentinel in the French Line Won From the Enemy.

KIEL CANAL TO ALLIES
Germany - Poland
Schleswig-Holstein
Wurttemberg
Bavaria - Saxony
SCALE OF MILES
0 20 40 60 80 100
DENMARK
SWEDEN
RUSSIA
POLAND
GERMANY
AUSTRIA
HUNGARY
CZECHO-SLOVAKIA
SWITZERLAND
LUXEMBURG
NORTH SEA
BALTIC SEA
Berlin
Hamburg
Bremen
Hanover
Leipzig
Dresden
Munich
Stuttgart
Frankfurt
Cologne
Strassburg
Breslau
Konigsberg
Danzig
Vienna
Prague
Warsaw
Krakow
Longitude 12° East 11° from 16° Greenwich 18°

# THE MARINES

By

## Secretary Josephus Daniels

No achievement in the entire war stands forth more brilliantly than the share of American troops in stopping the Germans. The Germans were within less than fifty miles from Paris. Apparently all that was needed was the final push.

Because the Marines bore the greater share of the fighting at Chateau Thierry and Belleau Wood, Secretary of the Navy Daniels deals extensively with these engagements in his annual report for 1918. Also, a bit of Foch's strategy, not before made public, is hinted at in the report. Secretary Daniels indicates that Marshal Foch realized the strength, courage and efficiency of the Americans before the rest of Europe awoke to them, and that in his confidence he dangled an apparently open road to Paris before the eyes of the German Crown Prince as a bait and that the indomitable Americans were the steel jaws of the trap he was to spring.

Following is that portion of Secretary Daniels' report which deals with the fighting at Chateau Thierry and Belleau Wood, renamed by the French in honor of the U. S. Marine Corps, and which was the first detailed and accurate narrative made public:

MARINE CORPS WINS GLORY.

This efficient fighting, building, and landing force of the Navy has won imperishable glory in the fulfillment of its latest duties upon the battle fields of France, where the Marines, fighting for the time under Gen. Pershing as a part of the victorious American Army, have written a story of valor and sacrifice that will live in the brightest annals of the war. With heroism that nothing could daunt the Marine Corps played a vital role in stemming the German rush on Paris, and in later days aided in the beginning of the great offensive, the freeing of Rheims, and participated in the hard fighting in Champagne, which had as its object the throwing back of the Prussian armies in the vicinity of Cambrai and St. Quentin.

Allied Motor Transport Halted on the Western Front.

With only 8,000 men engaged in the fiercest battles, the Marine Corps casualties numbered 69 officers and 1,531 enlisted men dead and 78 officers and 2,435 enlisted men wounded seriously enough to be officially reported by cablegram, to which number should be added not a few whose wounds did not incapacitate them from further fighting. However, with a casualty list that numbers over half the original 8,000 men who entered battle, the official reports account for only 57 United States Marines who have been captured by the enemy. This includes those who were wounded far in advance of their lines and who fell into the hands of the Germans while unable to resist.

STOPPED DRIVE ON PARIS.

Memorial Day shall henceforth have a greater, deeper significance for America, for it was on that day, May 30, 1918, that our country really received its first call to battle—the battle in which American troops had the honor of stopping the German drive on Paris, throwing back the Prussian hordes in attack after attack, and beginning the retreat which lasted until Imperial Germany was beaten to its knees and its emissaries appealing for an armistice under the flag of truce. And to the United States Marines, fighting side by side with equally brave and equally courageous men in the American Army, to that faithful sea and land force of the Navy fell the honor of taking over the lines where the blow of the Prussian would strike the hardest, the line that was nearest Paris and where, should a breach occur, all would be lost. The world knows today that the United States Marines held that line; that they blocked the advance that was rolling on toward Paris at a rate of six or seven miles a day; that they met the attack in American fashion and with American heroism; that Marines and soldiers of the American Army threw back the crack guard divisions of Germany, broke their advance, and then, attacking, drove them back in the beginning of a retreat that was not to end until the "cease firing" signal sounded for the end of the world's greatest war. In this connection Melville Stone, general manager of the Associated Press, said, following an exhaustive trip of investigation in Europe:

This shell case is now in possession of President Wilson because it contained the first shot fired by American troops at the enemy. An American officer of the forces overseas is shown holding the historic shell case.

"They (the Marines) had before them the best Prussian Guards and shock troops —the Germans were perfectly sure they could drive the 'amateurs' back.

"It was a dramatic situation, for success meant that the Germans could probably push for Calais and other channel ports; but Foch dangled Paris before their eyes by putting raw Americans at a point across the direct road to Paris, in the pocket between Rheims and Soissons. Instead of driving back the 'amateurs,' the 'amateurs' drove them and gave them also a very sound thrashing. Their losses were very heavy, but they did the work, and in doing it also did three things: They saved Paris; they seriously injured the morale of the best German troops; and they set a standard and fixed a reputation for Ameri-

can troops that none other dared tarnish."

Such is the opinion of the head of a great news-gathering force regarding the achievements of the United States Marines at Chateau Thierry, where in the battle field of Bois de Belleau, now named the Bois de la Brigade de la Marine by official order of the French Staff, this branch of the Navy met the Germans and blocked their drive on Paris.

ORDERED TO FRONT ON MEMORIAL DAY.

It was on the evening of May 30, after a day dedicated to the memory of their comrades who had fallen in the training days and in the Verdun sector, that the Fifth and Sixth Regiments and the Sixth Machine Gun Battalion, United States Marines, each received the following orders:

"Advance information official received that this regiment will move at 10 p. m. 30 May by bus to new area. All trains shall be loaded at once and arrangements hastened. Wagons, when loaded, will move to Serans to form train."

All through the night there was fevered activity among the Marines. Then, the next morning, the long trains of camions, busses, and trucks, each carrying its full complement of United States Marines, went forward on a road which at one place wound within less than 10 miles of Paris, toward Meaux and the fighting line.

Through the town of Meaux went the long line of camions and to the village of Montriel-aux-Lions, less than 4 miles from the rapidly advancing German line. On this trip the camions containing the Americans were the only traffic traveling in the direction of the Germans; everything else was going the other way—refugees, old men and women, small children, riding on every conceivable conveyance, many trudging along the side of the road driving a cow or calf before them, all of them covered with the white dust which the camion caravan was whirling up as it rolled along; along that road only one organization was advancing, the United States Marines.

GOT INTO LINE ON JUNE 2.

At last, their destination reached early on the morning of June 2, they disembarked, stiff and tired after a journey of more than 72 miles, but as they formed their lines and marched onward in the direction of the line they were to hold they were determined and cheerful. That evening the first field message from the Fourth Brigade to Maj. Gen. Omar Bundy, commanding the Second Division, went forward:

"Second Battalion, Sixth Marines, in line from Le Thiolet through Clarembauts Woods to Triangle to Lucy. Instructed to

The Gas Mask Adopted by the United States. Close up view of an American trooper accoutred with new style gas-mask. He penetrated a gas cloud, generated for the occasion, and came out unharmed, although it usually takes an experienced hand to put on a mask securely.

hold line. First Battalion, Sixth Marines, going into line from Lucy through Hill 142. Third Battalion in support at La Voie du Chatel, which is also the post command of the Sixth Marines. Sixth machine-gun battalion distributed at line."

Meanwhile the Fifth Regiment was moving into line, machine guns were advancing, and the artillery taking its position. That night the men and officers of the Marines slept in the open, many of them in a field

Funeral of first Americans to die in France. Impressive rituals marked the burial of Corporal James D. Gresham, Private Thomas F. Enright and Private Merle D. Hay, of Company F, 16th Infantry.

that was green with unharvested wheat, awaiting the time when they should be summoned to battle. The next day at 5 o'clock, the afternoon of June 2, began the battle of Chateau Thierry, with the Americans holding the line against the most vicious wedge of the German advance.

BATTLE OF CHATEAU THIERRY.

The advance of the Germans was across a wheat field, driving at Hill 165 and advancing in smooth columns. The United States Marines, trained to keen observation upon the rifle range, nearly every one of them wearing marksman's medal or better, that of the sharpshooter or expert rifleman, did not wait for those gray-clad hordes to advance nearer. Calmly they set their sights and aimed with the same precision that they had shown upon the rifle ranges at Paris Island, Mare Island, and Quantico. Incessantly their rifles cracked, and with their fire came the support of the artillery. The machine-gun fire, incessant also, began to make its inroads upon the advancing forces. Closer and closer the shrapnel burst to its targets. Caught in a seething wave of machine-gun fire, of scattering shrapnel, of accurate rifle fire, the Germans found themselves in a position in which further advance could only mean absolute suicide. The lines hesitated. They

stopped. They broke for cover, while the Marines raked the woods and ravines in which they had taken refuge with machine gun and rifle to prevent them making another attempt to advance by infiltrating through. Above, a French airplane was checking up on the artillery fire. Surprised by the fact that men should deliberately set their sights, adjust their range, and then fire deliberately at an advancing foe, each man picking his target instead of firing merely in the direction of the enemy, the aviator signalled below "Bravo!" In the rear that word was echoed again and again. The German drive on Paris had been stopped.

Honoring Old Glory on German territory.

### FIERCE FIGHTING IN BELLEAU WOOD.

For the next few days the fighting took on the character of pushing forth outposts and determining the strength of the enemy. Now, the fighting had changed. The Germans, mystified that they should have run against a stone wall of defense just when they believed that their advance would be easiest, had halted, amazed; then prepared to defend the positions they had won with all the stubbornness possible. In the black recesses of Belleau Wood the Germans had established nest after nest of machine guns. There in the jungle of matted underbrush, of vines, of heavy foliage, they had placed themselves in positions they believed impregnable. And this meant that unless they could be routed, unless they could be thrown back, the breaking of the line would be only a matter of time. There would come another drive and another. The battle of Chateau Thierry was therefore not won and could not be won until Belleau Wood had been cleared of the enemy.

It was June 6 that the attack of the American troops began against that wood and its adjacent surroundings, with the wood itself and the towns of Torcy and Bouresches forming the objectives. At 5 o'clock the attack came, and there began the tremendous sacrifices which the Marine Corps gladly suffered that the German fighters might be thrown back.

FOUGHT IN AMERICAN FASHION.

The Marines fought strictly according to American methods—a rush, a halt, a rush again, in four-wave formation, the rear waves taking over the work of those who had fallen before them, passing over the bodies of their dead comrades and plunging ahead, until they, too, should be torn to bits. But behind those waves were more waves, and the attack went on.

"Men fell like flies"; the expression is that of an officer writing from the field. Companies that had entered the battle 250 strong dwindled to 50 and 60, with a sergeant in command; but the attack did not falter. At 9:45 o'clock that night Bouresches was taken by Lieut. James F. Robertson and twenty-odd men of his platoon; these soon were joined by two reinforcing platoons. Then came the enemy counter attacks, but the Marines held.

CHARGING MACHINE-GUN NESTS.

In Belleau Wood the fighting had been literally from tree to tree, stronghold to stronghold; and it was a fight which must last for weeks before its accomplishment in victory. Belleau Wood was a jungle, its every rocky formation forming a German machine-gun nest, almost impossible to reach by artillery or grenade fire. There was only one way to wipe out these nests—by the bayonet. And by this method were they wiped out, for United States Marines, bare chested, shouting their battle cry of "E-e-e-e-e y-a-a-h-h-h yip!" charged straight into the murderous fire from those guns, and won! Out of the number that charged, in more than one instance, only one would reach the stronghold. There, with his bayonet as his only weapon, he would either kill or capture the defenders of the nest, and then swinging the gun

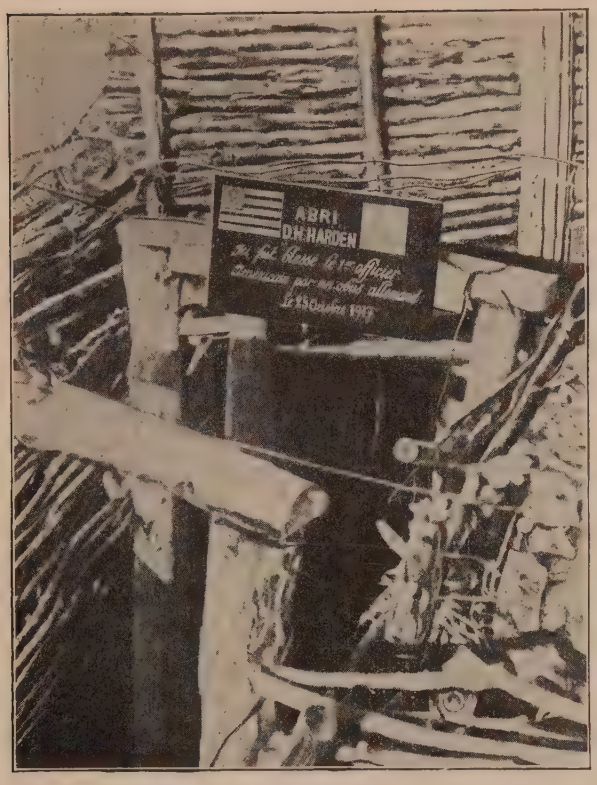
Paris gives wonderful reception to American troops.

about in its position, turn it against the remaining German positions in the forest. Such was the character of the fighting in Belleau Wood; fighting which continued until July 6, when after a short relief the invincible Americans finally were taken back to the rest billet for recuperation.

HELD THE LINE FOR MANY WEARY DAYS.

In all the history of the Marine Corps there is no such battle as that one in Belleau Wood. Fighting day and night without relief, without sleep, often without water, and for days without hot rations, the Marines met and defeated the best divisions that Germany could throw into the line. The heroism and doggedness of that battle are unparalleled. Time after time officers seeing their lines cut to pieces, seeing their men so dog tired that they even fell asleep under shell fire, hearing their wounded calling for the water that they were unable to supply, seeing men fight on after they had been wounded and until they dropped unconscious; time after time officers seeing these things, believing that the very limit of human endurance had been reached, would send back messages to their post command that their men were exhausted. But in answer to this would come the word that the lines must hold, and if possible those lines must attack, and the lines obeyed. Without water, without food, without rest they went forward—and forward every time to victory. Companies had been so torn and lacerated by losses that they were hardly platoons; but they held their lines and advanced them. In more than one case companies lost every officer, leaving a sergeant and sometimes a corporal to command, and the advance continued. After 13 days in this inferno of fire a captured German of-

The American Red Cross workers at this station are feeding the Saloniki refugees, who are sheltered in the tents that dot the plain.




Where first American officer was wounded in France. Lieut. De Vere H. Harden, of the Signal Corps, is the man who was wounded, and his distinction is a noteworthy one.

ficer told with his dying breath of a fresh division of Germans that was about to be thrown into the battle to attempt to wrest from the Marines that part of the wood they had gained. The Marines, who for days had been fighting on their sheer nerve, who had been worn out from nights of sleeplessness, from lack of rations, from terrific shell and machine-gun fire, straightened their lines and prepared for the attack. It came—as the dying German officer had predicted.

GERMAN CRACK TROOPS REPULSED AND BEATEN.

At 2 o'clock on the morning of June 13 it was launched by the Germans along the whole front. Without regard for men, the enemy hurled his forces against Bouresches and the Bois de Belleau, and sought to win back what had been taken from Germany by the Americans. The orders were that these positions must be taken at all costs; that the utmost losses in men must be endured that the Bois de Belleau and Bouresches might fall again into German hands. But the depleted lines of the Marines held; the men who had fought on their nerve alone for days once more showed the mettle of which they were made. With their backs to the trees and boulders of the Bois de Belleau, with their sole shelter the scattered ruins of Bouresches, the thinning lines of the Marines repelled the attack and crashed back the new division which had sought to wrest the position from them.

And so it went. Day after day, night after night, while time after time messages like the following traveled to the post command:

"Losses heavy. Difficult to get runners through. Some have never returned. Morale excellent, but troops about all in. Men exhausted."

Exhausted, but holding on. And they continued to hold on in spite of every difficulty. Advancing their lines slowly day by day, the Marines finally prepared their positions to such an extent that the last rush for the possession of the wood could be made. Then, on June 24, following a tremendous barrage, the struggle began.

The barrage literally tore the woods to pieces, but even its immensity could not wipe out all the nests that remained; the emplacements that were behind almost every clump of bushes, every jagged, rough group of boulders. But those that re-

The grave of Lieut. Quentin Roosevelt, aviator, and son of ex-President Roosevelt, who was killed during an air raid over enemy lines on July 14 last, has been located in France.

mained were wiped out by the American method of the rush and the bayonet, and in the days that followed every foot of Belleau Wood was cleared of the enemy and held by the frayed lines of the Americans.

PRAISE FROM FRENCH STAFF

It was, therefore, with the feeling of work well done that the depleted lines of the Marines were relieved in July, that they might be filled with replacements and made ready for the grand offensive in the vicinity of Soissons, July 18. And in recognition of their sacrifice and bravery this praise was forthcoming from the French:

"ARMY HEADQUARTERS, *June 30, 1918.*

In view of the brilliant conduct of the Fourth Brigade of the Second United States Division, which in a spirited fight took Bouresches and the important strong point of Bois de Belleau, stubbornly defended by a large enemy force, the general commanding the Sixth Army orders that henceforth, in all official papers, the Bois de Belleau shall be named 'Bois de la Brigade de Marine.'

"DIVISION GENERAL DEGOUTTE,
*"Commanding Sixth Army."*

GEN. PERSHING PERSONALLY CONGRATULATES MARINES

Gen. Pershing's congratulations also were contained in the following order, issued by the brigade commander, dated June 9, 1918, to the units of his command:

"The brigade commander takes pride in announcing that, in addition to the commander in chief's telegram of congratulation to the Fourth Brigade, published in an indorsement from the division commander, dated June 9, Gen. Pershing has today visited division headquarters and sent his personal greetings and congratulations to the Marine Brigade. He also added that Gen. Foch, commander in chief of the allied armies in France, especially charged him this morning to give the Marine Brigade his love and congratulations on their fine work of the past week.

"By command of Brig. Gen. Harbord.

"H. LAY, *Major, Adjutant.*"

A member of an American Field Battalion is shown carrying an aged French woman into a cellar while a Hun air raid is going on.

Husky Americans landing at Bordeaux.

GEN. HARBORD'S COMMENDATION

On July 18 the Marines were again called into action in the vicinity of Soissons, near Tigny and Vierzy. In the face of a murderous fire from concentrated machine guns, which contested every foot of their

advance, the United States Marines moved forward until the severity of their casualties necessitated that they dig in and hold the positions they had gained. Here, again, their valor called forth official praise, which came in the following:

"General Orders, No. 46.

"It is with keen pride that the divisional commander transmits to the command the congratulations and affectionate greetings of Gen. Pershing, who visited the divisional headquarters last night. His praise of the gallant work of the division on the 18th and 19th is echoed by the French high command, the Third Corps commander, American Expeditionary Forces, and in a telegram from the former divisional commander. In spite of two sleepless nights, long marches through rain and mud, and the discomfort of hunger and thirst, the division attacked side by side with the gallant First Moroccan Division, and maintained itself with credit. You advanced over 6 miles, captured over 3,000 prisoners, 11 batteries of artillery, over 100 machine guns, minnenwerfers, and supplies. The Second Division has sustained the best traditions of the Regular Army and the Marine Corps. The story of your achievements will be told in millions of homes in all allied nations tonight.

"J. G. HARBORD,
"*Major General, N. A.*
"FRANCE, *July 21.*"

American troops learning how to go "over the top." With veterans of the battlefield as instructors, and their native dash, they soon made good soldiers.

IN BATTLE FOR ST. MIHIEL SALIENT

Then came the battle for the St. Mihiel salient. On the night of September 11 the Second Division took over a line running from Remenauville to Limey, and on the night of September 14 and the morning of September 15 attacked, with two days' objectives ahead of them. Overcoming the enemy resistance, they romped through to the Rupt de Mad, a small river, crossed it on stone bridges, occupied Thiacourt, the

first day's objective, scaled the heights just beyond it, pushed on to a line running from the Zammes-Jouiney Ridges to the Binvaux Forest, and there rested, with the second day's objectives occupied by 2:50 o'clock of the first day. The casualties of the division were about 1,000, of which 134 were killed. Of these, about half were Marines. The captures in which the Marines participated were 80 German officers, 3,200 men, ninety-odd cannon, and vast swept the enemy from the field.

"JOHN A. LEJEUNE,

*"Major General,*

*"United States Marine Corps."*

CAPTURE OF BLANC MONT RIDGE

But even further honors were to befall the fighting, landing, and building force, of which the Navy is justly proud. In the early part of October it became necessary

United States nurses arriving in England on their way to France. The wonderfully humane work done by the nurses at the front was the subject of hearty praise by General Pershing.

stores. In his congratulations, following the battle, Gen. Lejeune said:

"SEPTEMBER 17, 1918.

"General Orders, No. 54.

"I desire to express to the officers and men my profound appreciation of their brilliant and successful attack in the recent engagement.

"Our division maintained the prestige and honor of the country proudly and

for the allies to capture the bald, jagged ridge 20 miles due east of Rheims, known as Blanc Mont Ridge. Here the armies of Germany and the allies had clashed more than once, and attempt after attempt had been made to wrest it from German hands. It was a keystone of the German defense, the fall of which would have a far-reaching effect upon the enemy armies. To the glory of the United States Marines, let it be said, that they were again a part of that

splendid Second Division which swept forward in the attack which freed Blanc Mont Ridge from German hands, pushed its way down the slopes, and occupied the level ground just beyond, thus assuring a victory, the full import of which can best be judged by the order of Gen. Lejeune, following the battle:

"FRANCE, *October 11, 1918.*

"*Officers and men of the Second Division:*

"It is beyond my power of expression to describe fitly my admiration for your heroism. You attacked magnificently and you seized Blanc Mont Ridge, the keystone of the arch constituting the enemy's main position. You advanced beyond the ridge, breaking the enemy's lines, and you held the ground gained with a tenacity which is unsurpassed in the annals of war.

"As a direct result of your victory, the German armies east and west of Rheims are in full retreat, and by drawing on yourselves several German divisions from other parts of the front you greatly assisted the victorious advance of the allied armies between Cambrai and St. Quentin.

"Your heroism and the heroism of our comrades who died on the battle field will live in history forever, and will be emulated by the young men of our country for generations to come.

Americans Going Forward to the first line trenches. Troops of the 7th Infantry are climbing aboard trucks of the Motor Transport Service on the way to the firing line, relieving those who have already ridden part of the way.

"To be able to say when this war is finished, 'I belonged to the Second Division; I fought with it at the Battle of Blanc Mont Ridge,' will be the highest honor that can come to any man.

"JOHN A. LEJEUNE,

"*Major General,*

"*United States Marine Corps,*

"*Commanding.*"

MARKSMANSHIP AMAZES ALLIES

Thus it is that the United States Marines have fulfilled the glorious traditions of their corps in this their latest duty as the "soldiers who go to sea." Their sharpshooting—and in one regiment 93 per cent of the men wear the medal of marksmanship, a sharpshooter, or an expert rifleman—has amazed soldiers of European armies, accustomed merely to shooting in the general direction of the enemy. Under the fiercest fire they have calmly adjusted their sights, aimed for their man, and killed him, and in bayonet attacks their advance on machine gun nests has been irresistible. In the official citation lists more than one American Marine is credited with taking an enemy machine gun single handed, bayoneting its crew and then turning the gun against the foe. In one battle alone, that of Belleau Wood, the citation lists bear the names of fully 500 United States marines who so distinguished themselves in battle as to call forth the official commendation of their superior officers.

German Trenches Captured by the Allies.

CORPS FULFILLED EVERY GLORIOUS TRADITION

More than faithful in every emergency, accepting hardships with admirable morale, proud of the honor of taking their place as shock troops for the American legions, they have fulfilled every glorious tradition of their corps, and they have given to the world a list of heroes whose names will go down to all history. Let one, therefore, stand for the many, one name denote all, one act of heroism tell the story of the countless deeds of bravery that stand forth brilliantly upon the victorious pages of America's participation in this the world's greatest war:

"First Sergt. Daniel Daly, Seventy-third (Machine Gun) Company, twice holder of the medal of honor, repeatedly performed deeds of valor and great service. On June 5 he extinguished, at risk of his life, fire in the ammunition dump at Lucy-le-Bocage. On June 7, while sector was under one of its heaviest bombardments, he visited all gun crews of his company, then posted over a wide section of front, cheering the men. On June 10, single-handed, he attacked enemy machine-gun emplacement and captured it by use of hand grenades and his automatic pistol. On the same date, during enemy attack on Bouresches, he brought in wounded under fire. At all times, by his reckless daring, constant attention to the wants of his men, and his unquenchable optimism, he was a tower of strength until wounded by enemy shrapnel fire on June 20. A peerless soldier of the old school, twice decorated for gallantry in China and Santo Domingo."

I must add this citation of a typical deed of self-sacrifice, illustrative of the spirit of the noble privates in the corps:

"Pvt. Albert E. Brooks, Company F, Sixth Marines: Conspicuous for his heroic action in placing his body in front of his platoon leader while under heavy machine-gun fire in order to dress the latter's wounds. He was shot twice in the hip while performing this act of mercy."

"America," the First Large American Built Tank, Completed. Front view of the "America," the first large American built tank, which is much larger in every way than the Tank Britannia, which was on exhibition in many cities of the United States. The "America" made its first public appearance on the streets of Boston in a Red Cross parade. The massiveness of the tank can be seen from this photograph, the first taken.

# The Treaty of Peace

## CHAPTER XII

OFFICIAL SUMMARY OF THE COVENANT OF THE LEAGUE OF NATIONS AND TERMS IMPOSED UPON GERMANY AS DECIDED BY THE PEACE CONFERENCE.

The official summary of the treaty of peace, given to the public on May 7, 1919, at the time the text of the treaty was handed to the German peace delegates, was as follows:

The preamble names as parties of the one part the United States, the British empire, France, Italy, and Japan, described as the five allied and associated powers, and Belgium, Bolivia, Brazil, China, Cuba, Ecuador, Greece, Guatemala, Haiti, the Hedjaz, Honduras, Liberia, Nicaragua, Panama, Peru, Poland, Portugal, Roumania, Serbia, Siam, Czecho-Slovakia, and Uruguay, who with the five above are described as the allied and associated powers, and on the other part Germany.

It states that: Bearing in mind that on the request of the then imperial German government an armistice was granted on November 11, 1918, by the five allied and associated powers in order that a treaty of peace might be concluded with her, and whereas the allied and associated powers being equally desirous that the war in which they were successfully involved, directly or indirectly, and which originated in the declaration of war by Austria-Hungary on July 28, 1914, against Serbia, the declaration of war by Germany against Russia on August 1, 1914, and against France on August 3, 1914, and in the invasion of Belgium, should be replaced by a firm, just, and durable peace, the plenipotentiaries having communicated their full powers found in good and due form have agreed as follows:

From the coming into force of the present treaty, the state of war will terminate. From the moment and subject to the provisions of this treaty official relations with Germany, and with each of the German states, will be resumed by the allied and associated powers.

### The League of Nations

#### SECTION I

The covenant of the league of nations constitutes section 1 of the peace treaty, which places upon the league many specific duties in addition to its general duties.

It may question Germany at any time for a violation of the neutralized zone east of the Rhine as a threat against the world's peace.

It will appoint three of the five members of the Saar commission, oversee its regime, and carry out the plebiscite.

It will appoint the high commissioner of Danzig, guarantee the independence of the free city, and arrange for treaties between Danzig and Germany and Poland.

It will work out the mandatory system to be applied to the former German colonies and act as a final court in part of the plebiscites of the Belgian-German frontier and in disputes as to the Kiel canal, and decide certain of the economic and financial problems.

An international conference on labor is to be held in October under its direction, and another on the international control of ports, waterways, and railways is foreshadowed.

The members of the league will be the signatories of the covenant and other states invited to accede, who must lodge a declaration of accession without reservation within two months.

A new state, dominion, or colony may be admitted provided its admission is agreed to by two-thirds of the assembly.

A state may withdraw upon giving two years' notice, if it has fulfilled all its international obligations.

#### SECTION II

A permanent secretariat will be established at the seat of the league, which will be at Geneva.

**Assembly**—The assembly will consist of representatives of the members of the league, and will meet at stated intervals. Voting will be by states. Each member will have one vote and not more than three representatives.

**Council**—The council will consist of representatives of the five great allied powers, together with representatives of four members selected by the assembly from time to time; it may co-operate with additional states and will meet at least once a year. Members not represented will be invited to send a representative when questions affecting their interests are discussed. Voting will be by states. Each state will have one vote and not more than one representative. Decisions taken by the assembly and council must be unanimous, except in regard to procedure and in certain cases specified in the covenant and in the treaty, where decisions will be by a majority.

**Armaments**—The council will formulate plans for a reduction of armaments for consideration and adoption. These plans will be revised every ten years. Once they are adopted, no member must exceed the armaments text without the concurrence of the council. All members will exchange full information as to armaments and programs, and a permanent commission will advise the council on military and naval questions.

**Preventing of War**—Upon any war or threat of war the council will meet to consider what common action shall be taken. Members are pledged to submit matters of dispute to arbitration or inquiry and not to resort to war until three months after the award.

Members agree to carry out an arbitral award and not to go to war with any party to the dispute which complies with it; if a member fails to carry out the award the council will propose the necessary measures.

The council will formulate plans for the establishment of a permanent court of international justice to determine international disputes or to give advisory opinions.

Members who do not submit their cases to arbitration must accept the jurisdiction of the assembly. If the council, less the parties to the dispute, is unanimously agreed upon the rights of it, the members agree that they will not go to war with any party to the dispute which complies with its recommendations. In this case a recommendation by the assembly, concurred in by all its members represented, less the parties to the dispute will have the force of a unanimous recommendation by the council.

In either case if the necessary agreement cannot be secured the members reserve the right to take such action as may be necessary for the maintenance of right and justice.

Members resorting to war in disregard of the covenant will immediately be debarred from all intercourse with other members. The council will in such cases consider what military or naval action can be taken by the league collectively for the protection of the covenants and will afford facilities to members co-operatting in this enterprise.

**Validity of Treaties**—All treaties or international engagements concluded after the institution of the league will be registered with the secretariat and published.

The assembly may from time to time advise members to reconsider treaties which have become inapplicable or involve danger of peace.

The covenant abrogates all obligations between members inconsistent with its terms, but nothing in it shall affect the validity of international engagements, such as treaties of arbitration or regional understandings, like the Monroe doctrine, for securing the maintenance to peace.

**The Mandatory System**—The tutelage of nations not yet able to stand by themselves will be intrusted to advanced nations who are best fitted to undertake it.

The covenant recognizes three different stages of development, requiring different kinds of mandatories:

Communities like those belonging to the Turkish empire, which can be provisionally recognized as independent, subject to advice and assistance from a mandatory in whose selection they would be allowed a voice.

Communities like those of Central Africa, to be administered by the mandatory, under conditions generally approved by the members of the league, where equal opportunities for trade will be allowed to all members; certain abuses, such as trade in slaves, arms, and liquor, will be prohibited, and the construction of military and naval bases and the introduction of compulsory military training will be disallowed.

Other communities, such as Southwest Africa and the south Pacific islands, but administered under the laws of the mandatory as integral portions of its territory. In every case the mandatory will render an annual report, and the degree of its authority will be defined.

### Conditions of World Labor

Subject to and in accordance with the provisions of international conventions existing, or hereafter to be agreed upon, the members of the league will, in general, endeavor through the international organization established by the labor convention to secure and maintain fair conditions of labor for men, women and children in their own countries, and other countries, and undertake to secure just treatment of the native inhabitants of territories under their control; they will intrust the league with the general supervision over the execution of agreements for the suppression of traffic in women and children, etc.; and the control of the trade in arms and ammunition with countries in which control is necessary; they will make provision for freedom of communications and transit and equitable treatment for commerce of all members of the league, with special reference to the necessities of regions devastated during the war; and they will endeavor to take steps for international prevention and control of disease.

International bureaus and commissions already established will be placed under the league, as well as those to be established in the future.

Amendments to the covenant will take effect when ratified by the council and by a majority of the assembly.

### New Limits for Germany

**Boundaries of Germany**—Germany cedes to France Alsace-Lorraine, 5,600 square miles, it to be southwest, and to Belgium two small districts between Luxemburg and Holland totaling 382 square miles.

She also cedes to Poland the southeastern tip of Silesia, beyond and including Oppeln, most of Posen, and West Prussia, 27,686 square miles, East Prussia being isolated from the main body by a part of Poland.

She loses sovereignty over the northeasternmost tip of East Prussia, forty square miles north of the river Memel, and the internationalized areas about Danzig, 729 square miles, and the basin of the Saar, 738 square miles, between the western border of the Rhenish Palatinate of Bavaria and the southeast corner of Luxemburg.

The Danzig area consists of the V between the Nogat and Vistula rivers made a W by the addition of a similar V on the west, including the city of Danzig.

The southeastern third of East Prussia and the area between East Prussia and the Vistula north of latitude 53 degrees 3 minutes is to have its nationality determined by popular vote, 5,785 square miles, as is to be the case in part of Schleswig, 2,787 square miles.

### Recovered Lands

SECTION III

**Belgium**—Germany is to consent to the abrogation of the treaties of 1839, by which Belgium was established as a neutral state, and to agree in advance to any convention with which the allied and associated powers may determine to replace them.

Germany is to recognize the full sovereignty of Belgium over the contested territory of Morenet and over part of Prussian Morenet, and to renounce in favor of Belgium all rights of the circles of Eupen and Malmedy, the inhabitants of which are to be entitled, within six months, to protest against this change of sovereignty, either in whole or in

part, the final decision to be reserved to the league of nations.

A commission is to settle the details of the frontier, and various regulations for change of nationality are laid down.

**Luxemburg**—Germany renounces her various treaties and conventions with the Grand Duchy of Luxemburg, recognizes that it ceased to be a part of the German Zollverein from January 1, last, renounces all right of exploitation of the railroads, which the council of the league of nations may think it necessary to address to her.

**Alsace-Lorraine**—After recognition of the moral obligation to repair the wrong done in 1871 by Germany to France and the people of Alsace-Lorraine, the territories ceded to Germany by the treaty of Frankfort are restored to France with their frontiers as before 1871, to date from the signing of the armistice, and to be free of all public debts.

Citizenship is regulated by detailed provisions, dis-

President Wilson Delivering His Address on the League of Nations in Mechanics Hall, Boston, February, 1919, on His First Return from Europe.

adheres to the abrogation of its neutrality, and accepts in advance any international agreement as to it, reached by the allied and associated powers.

**Left Bank of the Rhine**—As provided in the military (armistice) clauses, Germany will not maintain any fortifications or armed forces less than fifty kilometers to the east of the Rhine, hold any maneuvers, nor maintain any works to facilitate mobilization.

In case of violation, "she shall be regarded as committing a hostile act against the powers who sign the present treaty and as intending to disturb the peace of the world."

By virtue of the present treaty, Germany shall be bound to respond to any request for an explanation

tinguishing those who are immediately restored to full French citizenship, those who have to make formal applications therefor, and those for whom naturalization is open after three years.

The last named class includes German residents in Alsace-Lorraine, as distinguished from those who acquire the position of Alsace-Lorrainers as defined in the treaty.

All public property and all private property of German ex-sovereigns passes to France without payment or credit, France is substituted for Germany as regards ownership of the railroads and rights over concessions of tramways.

The Rhine bridges pass to France with the obligation for their upkeep.

For five years manufactured products of Alsace-Lorraine will be admitted to Germany free of duty to a total amount not exceeding in any year the average of the three years preceding the war, and textile materials may be imported from Germany to Alsace-Lorraine and re-exported free of duty. Contracts for electric power from the right bank must be continued for ten years.

For seven years, with possible extension to ten, the ports of Kehae and Strasbourg shall be administered as a single unit by a French administrator appointed and supervised by the Central Rhine commission.

Property rights will be safeguarded in both ports and equality of treatment as respects traffic assured the nationals, vessels, and goods of every country.

Contracts between Alsace-Lorrainers and Germans are maintained, except for France's right to annul on grounds of public interest judgments of courts held in certain classes of cases, while in others a judicial exequatur is first required.

Political condemnations during the war are null and void and the obligation to repay war fines is established as in other parts of allied territory.

Various clauses adjust the general provisions of the treaty to the special conditions of Alsace-Lorraine, certain matters of execution being left to conventions to be made between France and Germany.

### The Saar Valley Question

**The Saar**—In compensation for the destruction of coal mines for northern France and as payment on account of reparation, Germany cedes to France full ownership of the coal mines of the Saar basin with their subsidiaries, accessories, and facilities.

Their value will be estimated by the reparation commission and credited against that account. The French rights will be governed by German law in force at the armistice excepting war legislation, France replacing the present owners whom Germany undertakes to indemnify. France will continue to furnish the present proportion of coal for local needs and contribute in just proportion to local taxes.

The basin extends from the frontier of Lorraine as reannexed to France north as far as St. Wendel, including on the west the valley of the Saar as far as Saarkolzbach and on the east the town of Homburg.

In order to secure the rights and welfare of the population and to guarantee to France entire freedom in working the mines, the territory will be governed by a commission appointed by the league of nations, and consisting of five members, one French, one a native inhabitant of the Saar and three representing three different countries other than France and Germany.

The league will appoint a member of the commission as chairman to act as executive of the commission. The commission will have all powers of government formerly belonging to the German empire.

Prussia and Bavaria will administer the railroads and other public services and have full power to interpret the treaty clauses.

The local courts will continue, but subject to the commission. Existing German legislation will remain the basis of the law, but the commission may make modification after consulting a local representative assembly which it will organize. It will have the taxing power, but for local purposes only. New taxes must be approved by this assembly.

Labor legislation will consider the wishes of the local labor organizations and the labor program of the league. French and other labor may be freely utilized, the former being free to belong to French unions. All rights acquired as to pensions and social insurance will be maintained by Germany and the Saar commission.

There will be no military service, but only a local gendarmerie to preserve order.

The people will preserve their local assemblies, religious liberties, schools, and language, but may vote only for local assemblies. They will keep their present nationality except so far as individuals may change it. Those wishing to leave will have every facility with respect to their property.

The territory will form part of the French customs system, with no export tax on coal and metallurgical products going to Germany nor on German products entering the basin, and for five years no import duties on products of the basin going to Germany or German products coming into the basin for local consumption.

French money may circulate without restriction. After fifteen years a plebiscite will be held by communes to ascertain the desires of the population as to continuance of the existing regime under the league of nations, union with France, or union with Germany. The right to vote will belong to all inhabitants over 20 resident therein at the signature.

Taking into account the opinions thus expressed, the league will decide the ultimate sovereignty. In any portion restored to Germany the German government must buy out the French mines at an appraised valuation.

If the price is not paid within six months thereafter this portion passes finally to France. If Germany buys back the mines, the league will determine how much of the coal shall be annually sold to France.

### New Nations Recognized

SECTION IV

**German Austria.**—Germany recognizes the total independence of German-Austria in the boundaries traced.

**Czecho-Slovakia.**—Germany recognizes the entire independence of the Czecho-Slovak state, including the autonomous territory of the Ruthenians south of the Carpathians and accepts the frontiers of this state as to be determined, which in the case of the German frontier shall follow the frontier of Bohemia in 1914. The usual stipulations as to acquisition and change of nationality follow.

**Poland.**—Germany cedes to Poland the greater part of upper Silesia, Posen and the province of West Prussia on the left bank of the Vistula. A field boundary commission of seven—five representing the allied and associated powers and one each representing Poland and Germany—shall be constituted within fifteen days of the peace to delimit this boundary. Such special provisions as are necessary to protect racial, linguistic, or religious minority and to protect freedom of transit and equitable treatment of commerce of other nations shall be laid down in a subsequent treaty between the five allied and associated powers and Poland.

**East Prussia.**—The southern and eastern frontier of East Prussia as sucing (word obscure) Poland is to be fixed by plebiscite, the first in the regency of Allenstein between the southern frontier of East Prussia and the northern frontier of Regierungsbesirk Allenstein, from where it meets the boundary between East and West Prussia to its junction with the boundary between the circles of Oletsko and

Augersburg, thence the northern boundary of Oletsko to its junction with the present frontier, and the second in the area comprising the circles of Stuhm and Rosenburg and the parts of the circles of Marienburg and Marienwerder east of the Vistula.

In each case German troops and authorities will move out within fifteen days of the peace and the territories be placed under an international commission of five members appointed by the five allied and associated powers, with the particular duty of arranging for a free, fair, and secret vote. The commission will report the results of the plebiscites to the five powers with a recommendation for the boundary, and will terminate its work as soon as the boundary has been laid down and new authorities set up.

The five allied and associated powers will draw up regulations assuring East Prussia full and equitable access to and use of the Vistula. A subsequent convention, of which the terms will be fixed by the five allied and associated powers, will be entered into between Poland, Germany and Danzig, to assure suitable railroad communication across German territory on the right bank of the Vistula between Poland and Danzig while Poland shall grant free passage from East Prussia to Germany.

The northeastern corner of East Prussia, about Memel, is to be ceded by Germany to the associated powers, the former agreeing to accept the settlement made, especially as regards the nationality of the inhabitants.

### Danzig a Free City

**Danzig.**—Danzig and the District immediately about it is to be constituted into the "free city of Danzig," under the guarantee of the league of nations. A high commissioner, appointed by the league and president at Danzig shall draw up a constitution in agreement with the duly appointed representatives of the city, and shall deal in the first instance with all differences arising between the city and Poland.

The actual boundaries of the city shall be delimited by a commission appointed within six months from the peace and to include three representatives chosen by the allied and associated powers and one each by Germany and Poland.

A convention, the terms of which shall be fixed by the five allied and associated powers, shall be concluded between Poland and Danzig, which shall include Danzig within the Polish custom frontiers, though a free area in the port: insure to Poland the free use of all the city's waterways, docks, and other port facilities, the control and administration of the Vistula and the whole through railway systems within the city and postal, telegraphic, and telephonic communication between Poland and Danzig; provide against discrimination against Poles within the city and place its foreign relations and the diplomatic protection of its citizens abroad in charge of Poland.

**Denmark.**—The frontier between Germany and Denmark will be fixed by the self-determination of the population. Ten days from the peace German troops and authorities shall evacuate the region north of the line running from the mouth of the Schlei south of Kappel, Schleswig, and Friedrichstadt, along the Eider to the North sea, south of Tonning; the workmen and soldiers' councils shall be dissolved; and the territory administered by an international commission of five, of whom Norway and Sweden shall be invited to name two.

The commission shall insure a free and secret vote in three zones. That between the German-Danish frontier and line running south of the Island of Alsen, north of Flensburg and south of Tondern to the North sea, north of the Island of Sylt, will vote as a unit within three weeks after the evacuation. Within five weeks after this vote the second zone, whose southern boundary runs from the North sea south of the Island of Fehr to the Baltic, south of Sygum, will vote by communes.

Two weeks after that vote the third zone, running to the limit of evacuation, also will vote by communes. The international commission will then draw a new frontier on the basis of these plebiscites and with due regard for geographical and economic conditions. Germany will renounce all sovereignty over the territories north of this line in favor of the associate governments, who will hand them over to Denmark.

**Helgoland**—The fortifications, military establishments, and harbors of the islands of Helgoland and Dune are to be destroyed under the supervision of the allies by German labor and at Germany's expense. They may not be reconstructed or any similar fortification built in the future.

**Russia**—Germany agrees to respect as permanent and inalienable the independency of all territories which were part of the former Russian empire, to accept the abrogation of the Brest-Litovsk and other treaties entered into with the Maximalist government of Russia, to recognize the full force of all treaties entered into by the allied and associated powers with states which were a part of the former Russian empire, and to recognize the frontiers as determined thereon.

The allied and associated powers formally reserve the right of Russia to obtain restitution and reparation on the principles of the present treaty.

### Colonies and Overseas Possessions

SECTION V

Outside Europe, Germany renounces all rights, titles, and privileges as to her own or her allies' territories to all the allied and associated powers and undertakes to accept whatever measures are taken by the five allied powers in relation thereto.

**Colonies and overseas possessions**—Germany renounces in favor of the allied and associated powers her overseas possessions, with all rights and titles therein. All movable and immovable property belonging to the German empire or to any German state shall pass to the government exercising authority therein.

These governments may make whatever provisions seem suitable for the repatriation of German nationals and as to the conditions on which German subjects of European origin shall reside, hold property, or carry on business.

Germany undertakes to pay reparation for damage suffered by French nationals in the Cameroons or its frontier zone through the acts of German civil and military authorities and of individual Germans from Jan. 1, 1900, to Aug. 1, 1914.

Germany renounces all rights under the convention of Nov. 4, 1911, and Sept. 29, 1912, and undertakes to pay to France in accordance with an estimate presented and approved by the repatriation commission all deposits, credits, advances, etc., thereby secured.

Germany undertakes to accept and observe any provisions by the allied and associated powers as to the trade in arms and spirits in Africa, as well as to the general act of Berlin of 1885 and the general act of Brussels of 1890. Diplomatic protection to inhab-

itants of former German colonies is to be given by the governments exercising authority.

**China**—Germany renounces in favor of China all privileges and indemnities resulting from the Boxer protocol of 1901, and all buildings, wharves, barracks, forts, munitions of warships, wireless plants, and other public property except diplomatic or consular establishments in the German concessions of Tientsin and Hankow and in other Chinese territory except Kiau-Chau, and agrees to return to China, at its own expense, all the astronomical instruments seized in 1901.

China will, however, take no measures for disposal of German property in the legation quarter at Peking without the consent of the powers signatory to the Boxer protocol.

Germany accepts all abrogation of the concessions at Hankow and Tientsin, China agreeing to open them to international use.

Germany renounces all claims against China or any allied and associated government for the internment or repatriation of her citizens in China and for the seizure or liquidation of German interests there since Aug. 1917.

She renounces in favor of Great Britain her state property in the British concession at Canton and of France and China jointly of the property of the German school in the French concession at Shanghai.

**Siam**—Germany recognizes that all agreements between herself and Siam, including the right of extra-territoriality ceased July 22, 1917. All German public property except consular and diplomatic premises passes without compensation to Siam, German private property to be dealt with in accordance with the economic clauses. Germany waives all claims against Siam for the seizure and condemnation of her ships, liquidation of her property, or internment of her nationals.

**Liberia**—Germany renounces all rights under the international arrangements of 1911 and 1912 regarding Liberia, more particularly the right to nominate a receiver of the customs, and disinterests herself in any further negotiations for the rehabilitation of Liberia.

She regards as abrogated all commercial treaties and agreements between herself and Liberia, and recognizes Liberia's right to determine the status and condition of the re-establishment of Germans in Liberia.

**Morocco**—Germany renounces all her rights, titles and privileges under the act of Algeciras and the Franco-German agreements of 1909 and 1911, and under all treaties and arrangements with the Sherifian empire.

She undertakes not to intervene in any negotiations as to Morocco between France and other powers, accepts all the consequences of the French protectorate and renounces the capitulations. The Sherifian government shall have complete liberty of action in regard to German nationals, and all German protected persons shall be subject to the common law.

All movable and immovable German property, including mining rights, may be sold at public auction, the proceeds to be paid to the Sherifian government and deducted from the reparation account. Germany is also required to relinquish her interests in the state bank of Morocco. All Moroccan goods entering Germany shall have the same privilege as French goods.

**Egypt**—Germany recognizes the British protectorate over Egypt declared on Dec. 18, 1914, and renounces as from Aug. 4, 1914, the capitulation and all the treaties, agreements, etc., concluded by her with Egypt. She undertakes not to intervene in any negotiations about Egypt between Great Britain and other powers. There are provisions for jurisdiction over German nationals and property, and for German consent to any changes which may be made in relation to the commission of public debt.

Germany consents to the transfer to Great Britain of the powers given to the late sultan of Turkey for securing the free navigation of the Suez canal.

Arrangements for property belonging to German nationals in Egypt are made similar to those in the case of Morocco and other countries. Anglo-Egyptian goods entering Germany shall enjoy the same treatment as British goods.

**Turkey and Bulgaria**—Germany accepts all arrangements which the allied and associated powers make with Turkey and Bulgaria with reference to any right, privileges, or interests claimed in those countries by Germany or her nationals and not dealt with elsewhere.

**Shantung**—Germany cedes to Japan all rights, titles and privileges, notably as to Kiau-Chau and the railroads, mines and cables acquired by her treaty with China of March 6, 1897, and other agreements as to Shantung.

All German rights to the railroad from Tsingtao to Tsinaufu, including all facilities and mining rights and rights of exploitation, pass equally to Japan and the cables from Tsingtao to Shanghai and Chefoo, the cables free of all charges.

All German state property, movable or immovable, in Kiau-Chau is acquired by Japan free of all charges.

### Military and Naval Forces

### SECTION VI

In order to render possible the initiation of a general limitation of the armaments of all nations Germany undertakes directly to observe the military, naval, and air clauses which follow:

**Military forces**—The demobilization of the German army must take place within two months of the peace. Its strength may not exceed 100,000, including 4,000 officers, with not over seven divisions of infantry, and three of cavalry, to be devoted exclusively to maintenance of internal order and control of frontiers. Divisions may not be grouped under more than two army corps headquarters staffs.

The great German general staff is abolished. The army administrative service, consisting of civilian personnel not included in the number of effectives, is reduced to one-tenth the total in the 1913 budget.

Employes of the German states such as customs officers, first guards and coast guards may not exceed the number in 1913. Gendarmes and local police may be increased only in accordance with the growth of population. None of these may be assembled for military training.

**Armaments**—All establishments for the manufacturing, preparation, storage, or design of arms and munitions of war, except those specifically excepted, must be closed within three months of the peace and their personnel dismissed.

The exact amount of armament and munitions allowed Germany is laid down in detail tables, all in excess to be surrendered or rendered useless.

The manufacture or importation of asphyxiating, poisonous, or other gases and all analogous liquids is forbidden as well as the importation of arms, munitions, and war materials. Germany may not manufacture such materials for foreign governments.

**Conscription**—Conscription is abolished in Germany. The enlisted personnel must be maintained by voluntary enlistments for terms of twelve consecutive years, the number of discharges before the expiration of that term not in any years to exceed 5 per cent. of the total effectives.

Officers remaining in the service must agree to serve to the age of 45 years and newly appointed officers must agree to serve actively for twenty-five years.

No military schools, except those absolutely indispensable for the units allowed, shall exist in Germany two months after the peace. No associations, such as societies of discharged soldiers, shooting or touring clubs, educational establishments or universities, may occupy themselves with military matters. All measures of mobilization are forbidden.

**Fortresses**—All fortified works, fortresses, and field works situated in German territory within a zone fifty kilometers east of the Rhine will be dismantled within three months. The construction of any new fortifications there is forbidden. The fortified works on the southern and eastern frontiers, however, may remain.

**Control**—Interallied commissions of control will see to the execution of the provisions for which a time limit is set, the maximum named being three months. They may establish headquarters at the German seat of government and go to any part of Germany desired.

Germany must give them complete facilities, pay their expenses, and also the expenses of execution of the treaty, including the labor and material necessary in demolition, destruction, or surrender of war equipment.

**Naval**—The German navy must be demobilized within a period of two months after the peace. She will be allowed six small battleships, six light cruisers, twelve destroyers, twelve torpedo boats, and no submarines, either military or commercial, with a personnel of 15,000 men, including officers, and no reserve force of any character.

Conscription is abolished, only voluntary service being permitted, with a minimum period of twenty-five years' service for officers and twelve for men. No member of the German mercantile marine will be permitted any naval training.

All German vessels of war in foreign ports and the German high sea fleet interned at Scapa Flow, will be surrendered, the final disposition of these ships to be decided upon by the allied and associated powers. Germany must surrender forty-two modern destroyers, fifty modern torpedo boats and all submarines, with their salvage vessels and all war vessels under construction, including submarines, must be broken up.

War vessels not otherwise provided for are to be placed in reserve or used for commercial purposes. Replacement of ships, except those lost, can take place only at the end of twenty years for battleships and fifteen years for destroyers. The largest armored ship Germany will be permitted will be 10,000 tons.

Germany is required to sweep up the mines in the North sea and the Baltic sea, as decided upon by the allies. All German fortifications in the Baltic defending the passages through the Delts must be demolished. Other coast defenses are permitted, but the number and caliber of the guns must not be increased.

During a period of three months after the peace, German high power wireless stations at Nauen, Hanover, and Berlin will not be permitted to send any messages except for commercial purposes and under supervision of the allied and associated governments, nor may any more be constructed.

Germany will be allowed to repair German submarine cables which have been cut but are not being utilized by the allied powers, and also portions of cables which after having been cut have been removed or at any rate not being utilized by any one of the allied and associated powers. In such cases the cables or portions of cables removed or utilized remain the property of allied and associated powers, and accordingly fourteen cables or parts of cables are specified, which will not be restored to Germany.

**Air**—The armed forces of Germany must not include any military or naval air forces except for not over 100 unarmed seaplanes to be retained till Oct. 1 to search for submarine mines. No dirigible shall be kept.

The entire air personnel is to be demobilized within two months, except for 1,000 officers and men retained till October.

No aviation grounds or dirigible sheds are to be allowed within 150 kilometers of the Rhine or the eastern or southern frontiers, existing installations within these limits to be destroyed.

The manufacture of aircraft and parts of aircraft is forbidden for six months. All military and naval aeronautical material under a most exhaustive definition must be surrendered within three months, except for the 100 seaplanes already specified.

**Prisoners of War**—The repatriation of German prisoners and interned civilians is to be carried out without delay and at Germany's expense by a commission composed of representatives of the allies in Germany. Those under sentence for offenses against discipline are to be repatriated without regard to the completion of their sentence.

Until Germany has surrendered persons guilty of offenses against the laws and customs of war, the allies have the right to retain selected German officers.

The allies may deal at their own discretion with German nationals who do not desire to be repatriated, all repatriation being conditional on the immediate release of any allied subjects still in Germany.

Germany is to accord facilities to commission of inquiry in collecting information in regard to missing prisoners of war and of imposing penalties on German officials who have concealed allied nationals.

Germany is to restore all property belonging to allied prisoners. There is to be a reciprocal exchange of information as to dead prisoners and their graves.

**Graves**—Both parties will respect and maintain the graves of soldiers and sailors buried on their territories, agree to recognize and assist any commission charged by any allied or associated government with identifying, registering, maintaining, or erecting suitable monuments over the graves, and to afford to each other all facilities for the repatriation of the remains of their soldiers.

### Trial of Wilhelm

**Responsibilities**—The allied and associated powers publicly arraign William Second of Hohenzollern, formerly German emporer, not for an offense against criminal law, but for a supreme offense against international morality and the sanctity of treaties.

The ex-emperor's surrender is to be requested of Holland and a special tribunal set up composed of one judge from each of the five great powers. With full guarantees of the right of defense, it is to be guided by the highest of international policy with a view of vindicating the solemn obligations of international undertakings and the validity of international morality, and will fix the punishment it feels should be imposed.

Persons accused of having committed acts in violation of the laws and customs of war are to be tried and punished by military tribunals under military law. If the charges affect nationals of only one state they will be tried before the tribunal of that state; if they affect nationals of several states, they will be tried before joint tribunals of the states concerned.

Germany shall hand over to the associated governments, either jointly or severally, all persons so accused and all documents and information necessary to insure full knowledge of the incriminating acts, the discovery of the offenders, and the just appreciation of the responsibility.

The judge (probably error for accused) will be entitled to name his own counsel.

### Reparations

SECTION VII

**Reparations**—The allied and associated governments affirm, and Germany accepts, the responsibility of herself and her allies for causing all the loss and damage to which the allied and associated governments and their nationals have been subjected as a consequence of the war imposed upon them by the aggression of Germany and her allies.

While the allied and associated governments recognize that the resources of Germany are not adequate after taking into account permanent diminutions of such resources which will result from other treaty claims, to make complete reparation for all such loss and damage, they require her to make compensation for all damages caused to civilians under seven main categories:

**A**—Damages by personal injury to civilians caused by acts of war, directly or indirectly, including bombardments from the air.

**B**—Damages caused to civilians, including exposure at sea, resulting from acts of cruelty ordered by the enemy and to civilians in the occupied territories.

**C**—Damages caused by maltreatment of prisoners.

**D**—Damages to the allied peoples represented by pensions and separation allowances, capitalized at the signature of this treaty.

**E**—Damages to property other than naval or military materials.

**F**—Damages to civilians by being forced to labor.

**G**—Damages in the form of levies or fines imposed by the enemy.

Germany further binds herself to repay all sums borrowed by Belgium from her allies as a result of Germany's violation of the treaty of 1839 up to Nov. 11, 1918, and for this purpose will issue at once and hand over to the reparation commission 5 per cent gold bonds falling due in 1926.

The total obligation of Germany to pay as defined in the category of damages is to be determined and notified to her after a fair hearing and not later than May 1, 1921, by an interallied reparation commission.

At the same time a schedule of payments to discharge the obligation within thirty years shall be presented. These payments are subject to postponement in certain contingencies.

Germany irrevocably recognizes the full authority of this commission, agrees to supply it with all the necessary information and to pass legislation to effectuate its findings. She further agrees to restore to the allies cash and certain articles which can be identified.

As an immediate step toward restoration Germany shall pay within two years one thousand million pounds sterling ($5,000,000,000), in either gold, goods, ships, or other specific forms of payment, this sum being included in and not additional to first thousand million bond issue referred to below, with the understanding that certain expenses, such as those of the armies of occupation and payments for food and raw materials, may be deducted at the discretion of the allies.

In periodically estimating Germany's capacity to pay, the reparation commission shall examine the German system of taxation, to the end that the sums for reparation which Germany is required to pay shall become a charge upon all her revenues, prior to that for the service or discharge of any domestic loan, and secondly, so as to satisfy itself that, in general, the German scheme of taxation is fully as heavy proportionately as that of any of the powers represented on the commission.

The measures which the allied and associated powers shall have the right to take, in case of voluntary default by Germany and which Germany agrees not to regard as acts of war, may include economic and financial prohibitions and reprisals and in general such other measures as the respective governments may determine to be necessary in the circumstances.

The commission shall consist of one representative each of the United States, Great Britain, France, Italy and Belgium, a representative of Serbia or Japan taking the place of the Belgian representative when the interests of either country are particularly affected, with all other allied powers entitled when their claims are under consideration to the right of representation without voting power. It shall permit Germany to give evidence regarding her capacity to pay and shall assure a just opportunity to be heard.

It shall make its headquarters at Paris, establish its own procedure and personnel, have general control of the whole reparation problem, and become the exclusive agency of the allies for receiving, holding, selling, and distributing reparation payments.

Majority vote shall prevail except that unanimity is required on questions involving the sovereignty of any of the allies, the cancellation of all or part of Germany's obligations, the time and manner of selling, distributing, and negotiating bonds issued by Germany, any postponement between 1921 and 1926 of annual payments beyond 1930, and any postponement after 1926 for a period of more than three years of the application of a different method of measuring damage than in a similar form or case and the interpretation of provisions.

Withdrawal from representation on the commission

is permitted upon twelve months' notice. The commission may require Germany to give from time to time, by way of guarantee, issues of bonds or other obligations to cover such claims as are not otherwise satisfied.

In this connection and on account of the total amount of claims, bond issues are presently to be required of Germany in acknowledgment of its debt as follows:

One thousand million pounds sterling ($5,000,000,000) payable not later than May 1, 1921, without interest; $10,000,000,000, bearing 2½ per cent interest between 1921 and 1926, and thereafter 5 per cent, with a 1 per cent sinking fund payment beginning in 1926, and an undertaking to deliver bonds to an additional amount of $10,000,000,000, bearing interest at 5 per cent.

Under terms to be fixed by the commission, interest on Germany's debt will be 5 per cent, unless otherwise determined by the commission in the future, and payments that are not made in gold may be accepted by the commission in the form of properties, commodities, businesses, rights, concessions, etc.

Certificates of beneficial interest, representing either bonds or goods delivered by Germany may be issued by the commission to the interested powers As bonds are distributed and pass from the control of the commission an amount of Germany's debt equivalent to their par value is to be considered as liquidated.

**Shipping**—The German government recognizes the right of the allies to the replacement, ton for ton and class for class, of all merchant ships and fishing boats lost or damaged owing to the war, and agrees to cede to the allies all German merchant ships of 1,600 tons gross and upwards, one-half of her ships between 1,000 and 1,600 tons gross, and one-quarter of her steam trawlers and other fishing boats. These ships are to be delivered within two months to the reparation commission, together with documents of title evidencing the transfer of the ships free from incumbrance.

"As an additional part of reparation" the German government further agrees to build merchant ships for the account of the allies to the amount of not exceeding 200,000 tons gross annually during the next five years.

All ships used for inland navigation taken by Germany from the allies are to be restored within two months, the amount of loss not covered by such restitution to be made up by the cession of the German river fleet up to 20 per cent thereof.

### Devastated Areas

### SECTION VIII

**Devastated areas**—Germany undertakes to devote her economic resources directly to the physical restoration of the invaded areas. The reparation commission is authorized to require Germany to replace the destroyed articles by the delivery of animals, machinery, etc., existing in Germany and to manufacture materials required for reconstruction purposes, with due consideration for Germany's essential domestic requirements.

**Coal, etc.**—Germany is to deliver annually for ten years to France coal equivalent to the difference between annual pre-war output of Nord and Pas de Calais mines and annual production during above ten years. Germany further gives options over ten years for delivery of 7,000,000 tons of coal per year to France, in addition to the above; of 8,000,000 tons to Belgium, and of an amount rising from 4,500,000 tons in 1919 to 1920 to 8,500,000 tons in 1923 to 1924 to Italy at prices to be fixed as prescribed in the treaty. Coke may be taken in place of coal in ratio of three tons to four. Provision is also made for delivery to France over three years of benzol, coal tar, and sulphate of ammonia. The commission has powers to postpone or annul the above deliveries should they interfere unduly with industrial requirements of Germany.

**Dyestuffs**—Germany accords option to the commission on dyestuffs and chemical drugs, including quinine, up to 50 per cent of total stock in Germany at the time the treaty comes in force and similar options during each six months to end of 1924 up to 25 per cent of previous six months' output.

**Cables**—Germany renounces all title to specified cables, value of such as were privately owned being credited to her against reparation indebtedness.

**Special provisions**—As reparation for the destruction of the library of Louvain, Germany is to hand over manuscripts, early printed books, prints, etc., to be equivalent to those destroyed.

In addition to the above, Germany is to hand over to Belgium wings now at Berlin belonging to the altar piece of the "Adoration of the Lamb," by Hubert and Jan Van Eyck, the center of which is now in the church of St. Bavo at Ghent, and the wings now at Berlin and Munich, of the altar piece of "Last Supper," by Dirk Bouts, the center of which belongs to the church of St. Peter at Louvain.

Germany is to restore within six months the koran of the Caliph Ottman, formerly at Medina to the king of the Hedjaz, and the skull of the Sultan Mkwawa, formerly in German East Africa, to His Britannic Majesty's government.

### Pre-War Debts

### SECTION IX

**Finance**—Powers to which German territory is ceded will assume a certain portion of the German pre-war debt, the amount to be fixed by the reparations commission on the basis of the ratio between the revenue of the ceded territory and Germany's total revenues for the three years preceding the war.

In view, however, of the special circumstances under which Alsace-Lorraine was separated from France in 1871, when Germany refused to accept any part of the French public debt, France will not assume any part of Germany's pre-war debt there, nor will Poland share in certain German debts incurred for the oppression of Poland.

If the value of the German public property in ceded territory exceeds the amount of debt assumed, the states to which property is ceded give credit on reparation for the excess, with the exception of Alsace-Lorraine.

Mandatory powers will not assume any German debts or give any credit for German government property.

Germany renounces all right of representation on, or control of, state banks, commissions, or other similar international financial and economic organizations.

### Must Pay For Occupation

Germany is required to pay for the total cost of the armies of occupation from the date of the armistice as long as they are maintained in German territory, this cost to be the first charge on her resources. The cost of reparation is the next charge, after making such provisions for payments for imports as the allies may deem necessary.

Germany is to deliver to the allied and associated powers all sums deposited in Germany by Turkey and Austria-Hungary in connection with the financial support extended by her to them during the war, and to transfer to the allies all claims against Austria-Hungary, Bulgaria or Turkey in connection with agreements made during the war.

Germany confirms the renunciation of the treaties of Bucharest and Brest-Litovsk.

On the request of the reparations commission, Germany will expropriate any right, rights or interests of her nationals in public utilities in ceded territories or those administered by mandatories, and in Turkey, China, Russia, Austria-Hungary, and Bulgaria, and transfer them to the reparations commission, which will credit her with their value.

Germany guarantees to repay to Brazil the fund arising from the sale of Sao Paulo coffee which she refused to allow Brazil to withdraw from Germany.

### Economic Clauses

SECTION X

**Customs**—For a period of six months Germany shall impose no tariff duties higher than the lowest in force in 1914, and for certain agricultural products, wines, vegetables, oils, artificial silk, and washed or scoured wool this restriction obtains for two and a half years, or for five years unless further extended by the league of nations.

Germany must give most favored nation treatment to the allied and associated powers. She shall impose no customs tariff for five years on goods originating in Alsace-Lorraine and for three years on goods originating in former German territory ceded to Poland with the right of observation of a similar exception for Luxemburg.

**Shipping**—Ships of the allied and associated powers shall for five years, and thereafter under condition of reciprocity, unless the league of nations otherwise decides, enjoy the same rights in German ports as German vessels and have most favored nation treatment in fishing, coasting trade, and towage even in territorial waters. Ships of a country having no sea coast may be registered at some one place within its territory.

**Unfair competition**—Germany undertakes to give the trade of the allied and associated powers adequate safeguards against unfair competition and in particular to suppress the use of false wrappings and markings and on condition of reciprocity to respect the laws and judicial decisions of allied and associated states, in respect of regional appellations of wines and spirits.

**Treatment of Nationals**—Germany shall impose no exceptional taxes or restriction upon the nationals of the allied and associated states for a period of five years and unless the league of nations acts for an additional five years, German nationality shall not continue to attach to a person who has become a national of an allied or associated state.

**Conventions**—Some forty multilateral conventions are renewed between Germany and the allied and associated powers, but special conditions are attached to Germany's readmission to several.

As to postal and telegraphic conventions Germany must not refuse to make reciprocal agreements with the new states. She must agree as respects the radio-telegraphic convention to provisional rules to be communicated to it and adheres to the new convention when formulated.

In the North sea fisheries and North sea liquor traffic convention, rights of inspection and police over associated fishing boats shall be exercised for at least five years only by vessels of these powers. As to the international railway union Germany shall adhere to the new convention when formulated.

As to the Chinese customs tariff arrangement, the arrangements of 1905 regarding Whangpoo and the Boxer indemnity of 1901; France, Portugal, and Roumania, as to the Hague convention of 1903 relating to civil procedure; and Great Britain and the United States, as to article 3 of the Samoan treaty of 1899, are relieved of all obligation toward Germany.

Each allied and associated state may renew any treaty with Germany insofar as consistent with the peace treaty by giving notice within six months. Treaties entered into by Germany since Aug. 1, 1914, with other enemy states and before or since that date with Roumania, Russia, and governments representing parts of Russia are abrogated and any concession granted under pressure by Russia to German subjects annulled.

The allied and associated states are to enjoy most favored nation treatment under treaties entered into by Germany and other enemy states before Aug. 1, 1914, and under treaties entered into by Germany and neutral states during the war.

**Pre-War Debts**—A system of clearing houses is to be created within three months, one in Germany and one in each allied and associated state which adopts the plan for the payment of pre-war debts, including those arising from contracts suspended by the war, for the adjustment of the proceeds of the liquidation of enemy property and the settlement of other obligations.

Each participating state assumes responsibility for the payment of all debts owing by its nationals to nationals of the enemy states except in cases of pre-war insolvency of the debtor.

The proceeds of the sale of private enemy property in each participating state may be used to pay the debts owed to the nationals of that state, direct payment from debtor to creditor and all communications relating thereto being prohibited.

Disputes may be settled by arbitration by the courts of the debtor country or by the mixed arbitral tribunal. Any ally or associated power may, however, decline to participate in this system by giving Germany six months' notice.

**Enemy Property**—Germany shall restore or pay for all private enemy property seized or damaged by her, the amount of damages to be fixed by the mixed arbitral tribunal. The allied and associated states may liquidate German private property within their territories as compensation for property of their nationals not restored or paid for by Germany, for debts owed to their nationals by German nationals, and for other claims against Germany.

Germany is to compensate its nationals for such losses and to deliver within six months all documents relating to property held by its nationals in allied and associated states.

All war legislation as to enemy property rights and interests is confirmed and all claims by Germany against the allied or associated governments for acts under exceptional war measures abandoned.

**Contracts**—Pre-war contracts between allied and associated nationals, excepting the United States, Japan, and Brazil, and German nationals are cancelled, except for debts for accounts already per-

formed, agreements for the transfer of property where the property had already passed, leases of land and houses, contracts of mortgage, pledge of lien, mining concessions, contracts with governments, and insurance contracts.

Mixed arbitral tribunals shall be established, of three members, one chosen by Germany, one by the associated states, and the third by agreement, or, failing which, by the president of Switzerland. They shall have jurisdiction over all disputes as to contracts concluded before the present peace treaty.

Fire insurance contracts are not considered dissolved by the war, even if premiums have not been paid, but lapse at the date of the first annual premium falling due three months after the peace.

Life insurance contracts may be restored by payments of accumulated premiums with the interest, sums falling due on such contracts during the war to be recoverable with interest. Marine insurance contracts are dissolved by the outbreak of war, except where the risk insured against had already been incurred.

Where the risk had not attached, premiums paid are recoverable; otherwise, premiums due and sums due on losses are recoverable. Reinsurance treaties are abrogated unless invasion had made it impossible for the reinsured to find another reinsurer.

Any allied or associated power, however, may cancel all the contracts running between its nations and a German life insurance company, the latter being obligated to hand over the proportion of its assets attributable to such policies.

**Industrial Property**—Rights as to industrial, literary and artistic property are re-established, the special war measures of the allied and associated powers are ratified and the right reserved to impose conditions on the use of German patents and copyrights when in the public interest. Except as between the United States and Germany, pre-war licenses and rights to sue for infringements committed during the war are cancelled.

**Opium**—The contracting powers agree, whether or not they have signed and ratified the opium convention of Jan. 23, 1912, or signed the special protocol opened at the Hague in accordance with resolutions adopted by the third opium conference in 1914, to bring the said convention into force by enacting within twelve months of the peace the necessary legislation.

**Religious Missions**—The allied and associated powers agree that the properties of religious missions in territories belonging or ceded to them shall continue in their work under the control of the powers, Germany renouncing all claims in their behalf.

### Air Control

SECTION XI

**Aerial Navigation**—Aircraft of the allied and associated powers shall have full liberty of passage and landing over and in German territory, equal treatment with German planes as to use of German airdromes, and with most favored nation planes as to internal commercial traffic in Germany.

Germany agrees to accept allied certificates of nationality, airworthiness or competency or licenses and to apply the convention relative to aerial navigation concluded between the allied and associated powers to her own aircraft over her own territory. These rules apply until 1923 unless Germany has since been admitted to the league of nations or to the above convention.

**Freedom of transit**—Germany must grant freedom of transit through her territories by rail or water to persons, goods, ships, carriages, and mails from or to any of the allied or associated powers, without customs or transit duties, undue delays, restrictions, or discriminations based on nationality, means of transport, or place of entry or departure.

Goods in transit shall be assured all possible speed of journey, especially perishable goods.

Germany may not divert traffic from its normal course in favor of her own transport routes or maintain "control stations" in connection with transmigration traffic. She may not establish any tax discrimination against the ports of allied or associated powers; must grant the latter's seaports all factors and reduced tariffs granted her own or other nationals, and afford the allied and associated powers equal rights with those of her own nationals in her ports and waterways, save that she is free to open or close her maritime coasting trade.

**Free zones in ports**—Free zones existing in German ports on Aug. 1, 1914, must be maintained with due facilities as to warehouses and packing, without discrimination and without charges except for expenses of administration and use. Goods leaving the free zones for consumption in Germany and goods brought into the free zones from Germany shall be subject to the ordinary import and export taxes.

### German Rivers Open To All

SECTION XII

**International Rivers**—The Elbe from the junction of the Vltava, the Vltava from Prague, the Oder from Oppa, the Niemen from Grodno, and the Danube from Ulm are declared international together with their connections. The riparian states must ensure good conditions of navigation within their territories unless a special organization exists therefor. Otherwise appeal may be had to a special tribunal of the league of nations, which also may arrange for a general international waterways convention.

The Elbe and the Oder are to be placed under international commissions to meet within three months, that for the Elbe composed of four representatives of Germany, two from Czecho-Slovakia, and one each from Great Britain, France, Italy, and Belgium, and that for the Oder composed of one each from Poland, Russia, Czecho-Slovakia, Great Britain, France, Denmark and Sweden.

If any riparian state on the Niemen should so request of the league of nations a similar commission shall be established there. These commissions shall, upon request of any riparian state, meet within three months to revise existing international agreement.

**The Danube**—The European Danube commission reassumes its pre-war powers, for the time being, with representatives of only Great Britain, Italy and Roumania. The upper Danube is to be administered by a new international commission until a definitive state be drawn up at a conference of the powers nominated by the allied and associated governments within one year after the peace.

The enemy governments shall make full reparations for all war damages caused to the European commission; shall cede their river facilities in surrendered territory, and give Czecho-Slovakia, Serbia and Roumania any rights necessary on their shores for carrying out improvements in navigation.

**Rhine and Moselle**—The Rhine is placed under the central commission to meet at Strasbourg within six months after the peace and to be composed of four representatives of France, which shall in addition

select the president; four of Germany, and two each of Great Britain, Italy, Belgium, Switzerland and the Netherlands.

Germany must give France on the course of the Rhine included between the two extreme points of her frontiers all rights to take water to feed canals, while herself agreeing not to make canals on the right bank opposite France. She must also hand over to France all her drafts and designs for this part of the river.

Belgium is to be permitted to build a deep draft Rhine-Meuse canal if she so desires within twenty-five years, in which case Germany must construct the part within her territory on plans drawn by Belgium; similarly, the interested allied governments may construct a Rhine-Meuse canal, both, if constructed, to come under the competent international commission.

Germany may not object if the central Rhine commission desires to extend its jurisdiction over the lower Moselle, the upper Rhine, or lateral canals.

Germany must cede to the allied and associated governments certain tugs, vessels, and facilities for navigation on all these rivers, the specific details to be established by an arbiter named by the United States. Decision will be based on the legitimate needs of the parties concerned and on the shipping traffic during the five years before the war. The value will be included in the regular reparation account. In the case of the Rhine shares in the German navigation companies and property such as wharves and warehouses held by Germany in Rotterdam at the outbreak of war must be handed over.

**Railways**—Germany, in addition to most favored nation treatment on her railways, agrees to co-operate in the establishment of through ticket services for passengers and baggage; to ensure communication by rail between the allied, associated and other states; to allow the construction or improvement within twenty-five years of such lines as necessary, and to conform her rolling stock to enable its incorporation in trains of the allied or associated powers.

She also agrees to accept the denunciation of the St. Gothard convention if Switzerland and Italy so request, and temporarily to execute instructions as to the transport of troops and supplies and the establishment of postal and telegraphic service, as provided.

**Czecho-Slovakia**—To assure Czecho-Slovakia access to the sea, special rights are given her both north and south. Towards the Adriatic, she is permitted to run her own through trains to Fiume and Trieste. To the north, Germany is to lease her for ninety-nine years spaces in Hamburg and Stettin, the details to be worked out by a commission of three representing Czecho-Slovakia, Germany, and Great Britain.

**The Kiel canal**—The Kiel canal is to remain free and open to war and merchant ships of all nations at peace with Germany. Goods and ships of all states are to be treated on terms of absolute equality, and no taxes to be imposed beyond those necessary for upkeep and improvement for which Germany is responsible.

In case of violation of or disagreement as to these provisions, any state may appeal to the league of nations, and may demand the appointment of an international commission. For preliminary hearing of complaints Germany shall establish a local authority at Kiel.

### Aid for Labor

SECTION XIII

Members of the league of nations agree to establish a permanent organization to promote international adjustment of labor conditions, to consist of an annual international labor conference and an international labor office.

The former is composed of four representatives of each state, two from the government and one each from the employers and the employed; each of them may vote individually. It will be a deliberative, legislative body, its measures taking the form of draft conventions or recommendations for legislation, which, if passed by two-thirds vote, must be submitted to the law-making authority in every state participating.

Each government may either enact the terms into law; approve the principle, but modify them to local needs; leave the actual legislation, in case of a federal state, to local legislatures, or reject the convention altogether, without further obligation.

The international labor office is established at the seat of the league of nations, as part of its organization. It is to collect and distribute information on labor throughout the world and prepare agenda for the conference. It will publish a periodical in French and English, and possibly other languages.

Each state agrees to make to it, for presentation to the conference, an annual report of measures taken to execute accepted conventions; the governing body is its executive. It consists of twenty-four members, twelve representing the governments, six the employers, and six the employes, to serve for three years.

On complaint that any government has failed to carry out a convention to which it is a party, the governing body may make inquiries directly to that government, and, in case the reply is unsatisfactory, may publish the complaint with comment.

A complaint by one government against another may be referred by the governing body to a commission of inquiry nominated by the secretary general of the league.

If the commission report fails to bring satisfactory action, the matter may be taken to a permanent court of international justice for final decision. The chief reliance for securing enforcement of the law will be publicity, with a possibility of economic action in the background.

The first meeting of the conference will take place in October, 1919, at Washington, to discuss the eight hour day, or forty-eight hour week; prevention of unemployment; extension and application of the international conventions adopted at Berne in 1906, prohibiting night work for women and the use of white phosphorus in the manufacture of matches; and employment of women and children at night or in unhealthy work, of women before and after childbirth, including maternity benefit, and of children as regards minimum age.

Nine principles of labor conditions we recognize on the ground that "the well being, physical and moral, of the industrial wage earners is of supreme international importance." With exceptions necessitated by differences of climate, habits, and economic development, they include: The guiding principle that labor should not be regarded merely as a commodity or article of commerce; right of association of employers and employes; a wage adequate to maintain a reasonable standard of life; the eight hour day, or forty-eight hour week; a weekly rest of at

least twenty-four hours, which should include Sunday wherever practicable; abolition of child labor and assurance of the continuation of the education and proper physical development of children; equal pay for equal work as between men and women; equitable treatment of all workers lawfully resident therein, including foreigners, and a system of inspection in which women should take part.

**Safeguards and Guarantees**

SECTION XIV

**Guarantee**—Western Europe. As a guarantee for the execution of the treaty, German territory to the west of the Rhine, together with the bridgeheads, will be occupied by allied and associated troops for fifteen years.

If the conditions are faithfully carried out by Germany certain districts, including the bridgehead of Cologne, will be evacuated at the expiration of five years; certain other districts, including the bridgehead of Coblenz, and the territories nearest the Belgian frontier, will be evacuated after ten years, and the remainder, including the bridgehead of Mainz, will be evacuated after fifteen years.

In case the interallied reparation commission finds that Germany has failed to observe the whole or part of her obligation, either during the occupation or after the fifteen years have expired, the whole or part of the areas specified will be reoccupied immediately. If before the expiration of the fifteen years Germany complies with all the treaty undertakings, the occupying forces will be withdrawn immediately.

**Eastern Europe**—All German troops at present in territories to the east of the new frontier shall return as soon as the allied and associated governments deem wise. They are to abstain from all requisitions and are in no way to interfere with measures for national defense taken by the government concerned.

All questions regarding occupation not provided for by the treaty will be regulated by a subsequent convention or convention which will have similar force and effect.

**No Counter-Claims Allowed**

SECTION XV

**Miscellaneous**—Germany agrees to recognize the full validity of the treaties of peace and additional conventions to be concluded by the allied and associated powers with the powers allied with Germany; to agree to the decisions to be taken as to the territories of Austria-Hungary, Bulgaria, and Turkey, and to recognize the new states in the frontiers to be fixed for them.

Germany agrees not to put forward any pecuniary claims against any allied or associated power signing the present treaty based on events previous to the coming into force of the treaty.

Germany accepts all decrees as to German ships and goods made by any allied or associated prize court. The allies reserve the right to examine all decisions of German prize courts. The present treaty, of which the French and British texts are both authentic, shall be ratified and the depositions of ratifications made in Paris as soon as possible. The treaty is to become effective in all respects for each power on the date of deposition of its ratification.

# Peace Treaty Signed June 28, 1919

When the conditions of peace agreed upon by the Allies were handed to the German delegates at Versailles on May 7, 1919, the Germans were given fifteen days in which to signify their acceptance of the terms or submit counter-proposals. This period was extended by seven days, at their request, on the plea that the time was insufficient; and after consultation with the German government, its delegates, headed by Count von Brockdorff-Rantzau, then declared the terms impossible of acceptance and submitted a series of counter-proposals for consideration by the Peace Conference.

After mature deliberation, the "Council of Four," representing the Great Powers allied against Germany, decided to reject the counter-proposals of the enemy, who in the meantime had been endeavoring by every possible means to create dissensions among the allied and associated nations. A few minor changes in the terms of the treaty were decided upon, but the original contentions of the victors were virtually maintained intact. On June 16, 1919, the formal reply of the Peace Conference to Germany's counter-proposals, with a revised copy of the treaty, were handed to Brockdorff-Rantzau, who left immediately for Weimar, to present to the German national assembly the final dictum of the Allies.

Five days was the period allotted to the Germans to accept or reject the treaty as amended. But two days additional were granted because of the renewed insistence of the German delegates that the time was insufficient for proper consideration of the revised terms. This extended the time limit to 7 p. m. (Paris time) of Monday, June 23. Active preparations were made for an immediate advance by the Allied

armies into Germany, if the treaty was not accepted by the Germans at that time. Further delays, it was decided, could not be tolerated.

### Final Changes In the Peace Treaty

The changes in the treaty of peace agreed upon by the Allies and promulgated June 16, 1919, when the revised treaty was handed to the Germans, included the following:

1. A plebiscite for Upper Silesia, with guarantees of coal from that territory.

2. Frontier rectification in West Prussia.

3. Omission of the third zone in the Schleswig plebiscite.

4. Temporary increase of the German army from 100,000 to 200,000 men.

5. Declaration of the intention to submit within a month of signature a list of those accused of violation of the laws and customs of war.

6. Offer to co-operate with a German commission on reparations, and to receive suggestions for discharging the obligation.

7. Certain detailed modifications in the finance, economic, and ports and waterways clauses, including abolition of the proposed Kiel Canal commission.

8. Assurance of membership in the League of Nations in the early future, if Germany fulfills her obligations.

### Germany Decides to Sign

On Sunday, June 22, the day before the time limit expired, the German national assembly at Weimar, after the Scheidemann government had resigned, authorized a new cabinet, headed by Herr Gustav Bauer, to sign the treaty of peace unconditionally, as demanded by the Allies. As a final protest, the Bauer government appealed for cancellation of the clause declaring the responsibility of Germany for the war, and also for the exemption of the former kaiser from surrender and trial for his high crimes against humanity. But to these pleas the "Council of Four" turned a deaf ear, requiring only an immediate and unconditional acceptance of the treaty. On the following day, therefore, Monday, June 23, 1919, a telegram from Berlin to Versailles signified the complete acceptance by Germany of the Allies' terms of peace.

The question then was, who would sign the treaty on behalf of the German government? Von Brockdorff-Rantzau had eliminated himself from the proceedings, and responsible signatories became conspicuous by their absence. The interned fleet of Germany, lying with skeleton German crews in Scapa Flow in the Orkney Islands under the terms of the Armistice, was scuttled by those crews, acting under the orders of their officers, on Friday night, June 20; a day or two later French battle flags of the war of 1870-71, that were to have been returned to France under the terms of the treaty, were publicly burned by German officers in Berlin, and there were other contemporary evidences of the total lack of German national honor and reliability, so that the indignation and exasperation of the Allies were aroused to a high pitch. An ultimatum was about to be presented, demanding immediate naming of responsible signatories of the treaty by Germany, when on June 26 the Bauer cabinet designated its representatives to sign, and announced that they would leave Berlin for Versailles forthwith. The Germans named were: Dr. Herman Mueller, foreign minister, and Dr. Johannes Bell, minister of colonies.

The signing of the treaty of peace was thereupon arranged for Saturday, June 28, 1919, and accordingly at 3:13 o'clock of that day peace was formally concluded by the ceremonial affixture of the signatures of the plenipotentiaries of the belligerent powers to the treaty, in the presence of a thousand witnesses, representing all the nations interested in the historic event.

Thus came Peace to a war-torn world, after nearly five years of battle and blockade—a veritable nightmare of horror, against which civilization rebelled in vain, but from which the world awoke with a firm determination that never again shall it be possible for any one man or set of men to bring about a like catastrophe.

$5.00